

A N
A P P E A L
T O

R E A S O N.

—————If you think it fair
Amongst known cheats to play upon the square,
You'll be undone.—————
Nor can weak Truth your reputation save;
The knaves will all agree to call you knave.
Wrong'd shall be live, insulted o'er, oppress'd,
Who dares be less a villain than the rest.

The SECOND EDITION, with considerable Additions.

Printed at the expense of a Private gentleman, and
sold by all the Booksellers in the Kingdom.

The whole Proceeds (without any Deduction)
To be given to the
Orphan Hospital at Edinburgh.

M. DCC. LXXVIII.



A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

TO the particular attention of every nobleman, knight-baronet, and gentleman in the kingdom,—this is candidly recommended by one whose good-will towards all mankind, is as inseparable from him as is his existence.

Would we investigate truths moral or physical, one experimental fact will carry us farther in this way, than all the sophistry of all the lawyers, divines, and physicians upon earth, with Aristotle at their head.—Truth, like all which originates from the same fountain, is simple, and palpable to the eye of reason, unwarped by prejudice, by sophism, or by want of attention, that is, want of integrity in the investigation; for, where conscience is awake, want of attention never can have place.

Law, divinity, physic, which have often subverted every principle of rectitude amongst men, and made dreadful devastations in human society, are, amongst us, much less sciences than trades. Heaven knows what sort of trades!—There never was a man on earth, guided by reason and conscience, who could not, if he pleased, distinguish right from wrong in any case.—So Heaven has made man.—Do you except those who make a traffic of this business, perhaps you are in the right.

The same may be said of divinity, and in the strictest sense.—For, whether we say, with Tertullian, Origen, Ireneus, Justin, and the rest of the Christian fathers, that the human soul is material, or, with later divines, that it is immaterial, matters not a straw. As we know nothing of what matter is, or what spirit is; all that has been said, or ever can be said, must be nonsense, or tantamount, on either side of the question. But not a disputant upon either side ever questioned, that it is possible with God to call him into existence,—and to perpetuate him also,—whether extracted from dust or from the flame of a
A farthing

farthing candle, or created.—On the other hand, man's capacity of distinguishing right from wrong, and his power of election, are both self-evident; his accountability, then, follows clearly and justly.—Thus, whether we suppose man to be a fallen angel, placed here upon a new probation, or of a later creation, placed here for the same purpose, the moral system is equally impregnable, admits of no dubiety, is sufficient for us to know; and therefore no more is given us to know.

As to physic, all that is known, or ever will be known, (for the laws of nature are invariable) is, that it depends upon man himself, by temperance and exercise, to antidote distempers; that when nature has been violated by neglect of these, the application of the antidote is still the chief remedy; and that when the violence done proves too great for this, then there is no remedy.—There is not one of those, who, to prey upon the purses, sport with the lives of their fellow-creatures, does not know this: And many of them, after having made their fortunes, have been honest enough to drop the mask, and tell us so.

No apology is offered for the form in which the following history is exhibited;—it is a simple narration of facts, with their vouchers, exactly copied from the diary kept by the gentleman himself, at a time when he was mostly confined to his apartment, or to his bed, lame, and, to all appearance, dying fast; and, with that intention, oppressed by those about him, whose duty it was to have acted quite a contrary part, and to have made his last moments as easy and comfortable to him as possible; betrayed, at same time, by those whom he liberally hired to defend him, and abandoned by almost all, Heaven only excepted. In that situation, all that he was able to do, was, from time to time, to fill up the journal, and preserve the vouchers.

Instances of this manner of ass-ss-n-n are more frequent in private life than the world is generally apprised of. Physicians have opportunities of seeing it, as in this case; when, at one period, had not the physicians lent their aid, to remove the gentleman out of the reach of the ass-ss-n, their patient must have perished, and instantly.

Man

Man does not act without a motive : Nor is it consistent with that candour and integrity which becomes an honest man, to conceal his motives, when an explanation is necessary to justify the injured. This gentleman suffered such atrocious abuse, as there are few instances of to be found in the history of mankind.—A plot was hatched in his own family against his life and fortune ; his fortune was actually lost in consequence of it ; his life was saved by miracle ; and after that, as well as before, his character was attacked, in the most unheard-of manner, by the conspirators, and their accomplices, in order to palliate or disguise their own wickedness, in the eyes of society. He repeatedly requested an explanation from some people upon some heads ; which, if granted, would, in a great measure, have broken the force, and stopped the current of so much malice. This also was cruelly refused.—He was therefore ultimately constrained, in justice to himself, to lay every circumstance which he has been able to collate, before the impartial world.—Luckily for him, in such a situation, the imprudence of the conspirators themselves, and their accomplices, let in such light, from time to time, as is sufficient : The marks which guide through the labyrinth are so indelibly impressed, that no impartial person can mistake the truth.

What is also interesting to society in this history, is, to observe how easily so many men of one profession seem to have been induced, by the industry and artifice of one designing sh-rp-r, and in contempt of a solemn oath which they all take at their admission, not only to betray the interest which they were hired to defend, but some of them avowedly to act upon the opposite side.

The world is uncharitable, 'tis true ; and who will attempt to mend it? Yet one truth may be spoken, and which will always be found to be experimentally just, An honest man will always choose to follow an honest profession ; and vice versa.

When a young man, having no fortune of his own, and bred to business for a livelihood, turns his back upon his trade, and gives himself up entirely to dissipa-

tion and pleasure, he soon finds himself in no capacity to subsist, without having recourse to depredations upon others : Of this number was he who planned and directed all the movements of this projected r-bb-ry and aff-ff-n-t-n.

He had had address enough to spend a great deal of money in idleness and dissipation, under the pretended character of a merchant, underwent two bankruptcies, and drew in a good-natured b-t-r to relieve him in both. One anecdote relating to his last bankruptcy, merits to be recorded, for the honour of an honest man.—So soon as his b-t-r heard of that bankruptcy, which was for very considerable sums, he flew to his relief. When the question came to be about paying the debts, he contended strenuously with his b-t-r against paying the whole ; urging, that if he would leave it to him, he would easily obtain a composition, at, or even under ten shillings in the pound. No, said the b-t-r who was to pay it, let me hear no more of this ; the people shall be honestly paid, be the consequence to me afterwards what will :—And he did so. After which, the prodigal, not having courage enough for the highway, or for a forgery, the usual last resources of gentlemen of his complexion, retired to his good-natured b-t-r's half loaf, where he soon chalked out a line for himself, infinitely more criminal indeed, but attended with less immediate danger. Availing himself of his b-t-r's generosity and facility, he prevailed upon him once more to furnish him with some sort of establishment, persuading him, that he would then fall upon means to recover all their losses. His b-t-r too easily yielded to his request ; and, thus equipped, he boldly planned three different projects, almost all at once. One was, the aff-ff-n-t-n and r-b-ry of his f-t-r-in-law, by which he was certain to get the plundering of his f-t-r, in the same way in which he had exhausted his b-t-r before. Another was, the ruin of another gentleman's family, in the way of a marriage. The detection of the first of these plots, produced also the abortion of the second, and both at the critical time when he thought he had actually accomplished

complished his ends, and was secure in the possession of the spoils, viz. when he had shut his f-t--r's own house against him, and, at same time, got his proposed bride into it, along with himself and his f-t-r only, who was his faithful accomplice in all. The third was, the thrusting another gentleman out of an office, and getting in himself to the fingering of public money; but a great majority of the gentlemen, upon whose interest this depended, could not be worked to this project, notwithstanding that he was strongly aided in it, by another equal to himself in every species of v-l--ny and cunning.

No man can, with truth, pretend to have been, at all times, without his unguarded moments (the man Jesus only excepted); much less is it to be supposed, that a man of such constitutional susceptibility as this injured man, could avoid, upon occasions, giving in with his companions to little frolics and imprudencies. But moral philosophy being early, and from preference his favourite study, he had, at bottom, the most rigid principles in regard to the moral and social duties, to which he always recurred, and which governed him inflexibly, in every point which called for serious attention: and it is averred, that few who have been as much in the world, have less to reproach themselves with. Young, and unequally as he was married, he freely appeals to all who ever knew him in any part of the world, how far he has ever, from that time to this, taken any share in the fashionable pursuits, or fashionable vices, so common amongst mankind; if there is one person upon earth to be found, who can say, that, from the date of his marriage to this hour, he ever once entered the threshold of a house of bad fame, or ever attempted the chastity of a chambermaid, or, though attracted by that amenity which is characteristic with the sex, he, at all times, avowedly preferred the company of ladies to that of gentlemen. Is there a man on earth who can say, he ever sought to invade his property, by assailing the virtue of his wife, or that he ever, three times in his whole life, drank to beastly intoxication; that ever his purse was shut to the indigent,

or

or his heart callous to the distress of others ; that he set limits to the expences of his wife, or neglected the education of his child, or ever preferred his own interest or pleasures, in one instance, to their necessities ? Let any who knows him, speak ; if such a one is to be found, he will for ever renounce the name of a gentleman, and acknowledge that he deserved that m--d--r from which he so narrowly escaped. Attached, from his youth, to the study of moral philosophy, and, for twenty years back, almost totally absorbed in the investigation of the various systems of religion and natural philosophy ;—who are the persons on earth who can say, with truth, that he has injured them, or refused his assistance, when asked, wherein he could serve them ? Such is the man known to be, who has, of late, been roused from his lethargy by ass--s-n-t--n and r-b--ry, and to whom fraud, and every species of vice, has been calumniously imputed by many who have no acquaintance of him, and who now boldly appeals to those who know him best, for the truth of what is here asserted ; and as freely, and with no less confidence, submits to the candour of the impartial world, the following attested history of the fraud laid to his charge, and from which his innocence cannot fail to appear clearly to all, those only excepted, who, from prejudice or malice, suffered themselves to be prevailed upon to betray and defraud him, and ruin his family.

HISTORY

HISTORY OF THE ENTAIL
OF THE
LANDS OF R-T--LL-T,
IN THE COUNTY OF F-FE;
BETWIXT
H-L-N-S H--K--S--N of that Ilk,
AND
J--N S--TE of Pl--f--tf--ld,
IN THE COUNTY of C--K, I--l-nd.

LANDS OF R-T-11-1

ИЛИ ТО УТВЕРДИЛИ

10-11-12-13-14-15-16-17-18-19-20-21-22-23-24-25-26-27-28-29-30-31-32-33-34-35-36-37-38-39-40-41-42-43-44-45-46-47-48-49-50-51-52-53-54-55-56-57-58-59-60-61-62-63-64-65-66-67-68-69-70-71-72-73-74-75-76-77-78-79-80-81-82-83-84-85-86-87-88-89-90-91-92-93-94-95-96-97-98-99-100-101-102-103-104-105-106-107-108-109-110-111-112-113-114-115-116-117-118-119-120-121-122-123-124-125-126-127-128-129-130-131-132-133-134-135-136-137-138-139-140-141-142-143-144-145-146-147-148-149-150-151-152-153-154-155-156-157-158-159-160-161-162-163-164-165-166-167-168-169-170-171-172-173-174-175-176-177-178-179-180-181-182-183-184-185-186-187-188-189-190-191-192-193-194-195-196-197-198-199-200-201-202-203-204-205-206-207-208-209-210-211-212-213-214-215-216-217-218-219-220-221-222-223-224-225-226-227-228-229-230-231-232-233-234-235-236-237-238-239-240-241-242-243-244-245-246-247-248-249-250-251-252-253-254-255-256-257-258-259-260-261-262-263-264-265-266-267-268-269-270-271-272-273-274-275-276-277-278-279-280-281-282-283-284-285-286-287-288-289-290-291-292-293-294-295-296-297-298-299-300-301-302-303-304-305-306-307-308-309-310-311-312-313-314-315-316-317-318-319-320-321-322-323-324-325-326-327-328-329-330-331-332-333-334-335-336-337-338-339-340-341-342-343-344-345-346-347-348-349-350-351-352-353-354-355-356-357-358-359-360-361-362-363-364-365-366-367-368-369-370-371-372-373-374-375-376-377-378-379-380-381-382-383-384-385-386-387-388-389-390-391-392-393-394-395-396-397-398-399-400-401-402-403-404-405-406-407-408-409-410-411-412-413-414-415-416-417-418-419-420-421-422-423-424-425-426-427-428-429-430-431-432-433-434-435-436-437-438-439-440-441-442-443-444-445-446-447-448-449-450-451-452-453-454-455-456-457-458-459-460-461-462-463-464-465-466-467-468-469-470-471-472-473-474-475-476-477-478-479-480-481-482-483-484-485-486-487-488-489-490-491-492-493-494-495-496-497-498-499-500-501-502-503-504-505-506-507-508-509-510-511-512-513-514-515-516-517-518-519-520-521-522-523-524-525-526-527-528-529-530-531-532-533-534-535-536-537-538-539-540-541-542-543-544-545-546-547-548-549-550-551-552-553-554-555-556-557-558-559-560-561-562-563-564-565-566-567-568-569-570-571-572-573-574-575-576-577-578-579-580-581-582-583-584-585-586-587-588-589-590-591-592-593-594-595-596-597-598-599-600-601-602-603-604-605-606-607-608-609-610-611-612-613-614-615-616-617-618-619-620-621-622-623-624-625-626-627-628-629-630-631-632-633-634-635-636-637-638-639-640-641-642-643-644-645-646-647-648-649-650-651-652-653-654-655-656-657-658-659-660-661-662-663-664-665-666-667-668-669-670-671-672-673-674-675-676-677-678-679-680-681-682-683-684-685-686-687-688-689-690-691-692-693-694-695-696-697-698-699-700-701-702-703-704-705-706-707-708-709-710-711-712-713-714-715-716-717-718-719-720-721-722-723-724-725-726-727-728-729-730-731-732-733-734-735-736-737-738-739-740-741-742-743-744-745-746-747-748-749-750-751-752-753-754-755-756-757-758-759-760-761-762-763-764-765-766-767-768-769-770-771-772-773-774-775-776-777-778-779-780-781-782-783-784-785-786-787-788-789-790-791-792-793-794-795-796-797-798-799-800-801-802-803-804-805-806-807-808-809-810-811-812-813-814-815-816-817-818-819-820-821-822-823-824-825-826-827-828-829-830-831-832-833-834-835-836-837-838-839-840-841-842-843-844-845-846-847-848-849-850-851-852-853-854-855-856-857-858-859-860-861-862-863-864-865-866-867-868-869-870-871-872-873-874-875-876-877-878-879-880-881-882-883-884-885-886-887-888-889-890-891-892-893-894-895-896-897-898-899-900-901-902-903-904-905-906-907-908-909-910-911-912-913-914-915-916-917-918-919-920-921-922-923-924-925-926-927-928-929-930-931-932-933-934-935-936-937-938-939-940-941-942-943-944-945-946-947-948-949-950-951-952-953-954-955-956-957-958-959-960-961-962-963-964-965-966-967-968-969-970-971-972-973-974-975-976-977-978-979-980-981-982-983-984-985-986-987-988-989-990-991-992-993-994-995-996-997-998-999-1000-1001-1002-1003-1004-1005-1006-1007-1008-1009-1010-1011-1012-1013-1014-1015-1016-1017-1018-1019-1020-1021-1022-1023-1024-1025-1026-1027-1028-1029-1030-1031-1032-1033-1034-1035-1036-1037-1038-1039-1040-1041-1042-1043-1044

CE 72 2

T O

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

H---Y D--D-S of M--v---E;

A-v-c--e-G-n-r-l for S---L--D,

A N D

THE HONOURABLE

R-B--T M'Q---N of B---F---D;

One of the S-n-t--s of the C--l--e of J--t--e:

MY L—S,

SINCE, in compliance with the mode, almost every thing which is printed, must also have a Dedication; to whom can this book be so properly dedicated, as to your L—f—s, to whom I am indebted for a considerable part of the subject which it contains? I persuade myself, at same time, that, upon a revival of this process, the ingenuity and candour for which your L—f—s are both so much and so justly distinguished in society, will lead your L—f—s to perceive, that no less attention was exerted, no less artifice was used, to DECEIVE your L—f—s, than to INJURE me, who have seen myself stripped of my paternal inheritance,

B

and

and the axe laid to the root of an ancient family by these manœuvres. I flatter myself also, that you will at last do me the justice to believe, that a man, who sets no value upon money, and who could give up his life sooner than give his assent to an unjust transaction, is incapable of projecting a fraud.---I have the honour to be, with unfeigned esteem, and great respect,

MY L---S,

Your L---s---s

most obedient,

and

most humble servant,

H. H--K--S--N.

A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

The following Letters from Mr. S--T^E and his family, are copied exactly from the originals.

The scrolls of letters from Mr. H--K--S--N to them, may perhaps differ a little in words from the letters sent, but by no means in sentiment.

CORRESPONDENCE

BETWIXT

Mr. H--K--S--N and Mr. S--TE, &c.

So far as it happened to be preserved by Mr. H--k--f--n.

Copy LETTER, J--n S--te to Mr. H--k--f--n.

DEAR SIR,

C--k, 18th March 1771.

I Hope you'll excuse the freedom I take, in addressing a gentleman I have not the honour of being acquainted with. The many disinterested friendships * you have shown Mrs. S--te, somewhat emboldens

* The friendships here alluded to, were as follows: Mrs. S--te, a woman far advanced on the decline of life, after bearing fourteen or fifteen children, and having had sundry abortions, became dropical. In this condition her husband carried her to B--th for advice of the physicians there; and he being obliged to return to Ir--l--d, upon business of importance, she and her family took lodgings (in spring 1770) in the same house where Mr. H--k--f--n lodged. Mrs. S--te who was much swelled, and very infirm, mostly kept her own apartment, and was little seen to Mr. H--k--f--n, or any of the other lodgers, till one day that her physician, who began to despair of her, told her

ens me to this liberty; and has laid us under such grateful obligations, as will never be in our power to repay: But, as they were done from a generous and benign motive, the only return in our power to make you, is, that you have our most grateful thanks, and sincere wishes for a restoration of your health. Your kind letter

her case to Mr. H--k--f--n, and asked his opinion upon it. Mr. H--k--f--n then, at the request of the physician, went along with him to Mrs. S--te's apartment, and saw her. Her legs were, at that time, like to burst; and the swelling was advancing fast. Mr. H--k--f--n then fortunately suggested something to the physician, which proved of service in the case; and in about two or three weeks after, her physician ordered her to set out for the continent, and travel the whole summer, without ceasing. Mr. H--k--f--n was at this time also going to L--d-n; and he was again asked the favour to go in company with Mrs. S--te and her family; which he not only complied with, but afterwards, when at L--d-n, finding a family of his acquaintance preparing to set out for Spa, he introduced the two families to one another, and procured that they agreed to associate and travel together. Mr. H--k--f--n, who was at this time so grievously afflicted with what the physicians called an unformed gout, that he was seldom able to be out of bed, passed the summer at L--d-n, vainly using various prescriptions from Sir W--ll--m D--c--n, Sir J--n P--gle, Doctor F--dyce, &c. &c.; and about the middle of August, he and another gentleman (a physician) set out together to go to the south of Fr--ce. When they arrived at Paris, they learned by accident, that the two families, who had kept together, had gone to Spa, and jaunted about through Fl--ders, &c. the whole summer, were now arrived in Paris: They went and called for them, and got lodgings in the same hotel, where they remained all together about two weeks; and found Mrs. S--te so much recovered, that both Mr. H--k--f--n and the other physician, who was an old acquaintance of Mr. and Mrs. S--te, gave it as their opinion, when she asked them, that she might safely venture to return to L--nd-n, where she had a desire to go, where her son was at school, and where her husband proposed to meet her. She accordingly did set out for L--nd-n, and passed the winter there with her husband and family, from whence they went to Ir--l--d in the following spring. Nothing could be farther from Mr. H--k--f--n's thoughts, than the idea, that ever he could again see or hear more of any of these people; when, towards the end of winter, he received a letter from Mrs. S--te, directed for him at M--f--lles, where he then was, requesting, in her own and her husband's

ter to Mrs. S--te, has given us vast pleasure ; as, by it, we find you are much better in your health ; which, we hope, will increase and continue. We return you thanks for your kind information and advice, as to a plan for R-ch—d's education, as there are schools, and no danger to be apprehended from the masters, in regard to his r——n. I intend (God willing) to carry him with us ; and, as we look upon you in a particular manner, I shall take the liberty of informing, and taking your advice, as to the plan we intend (with the blessing of God) to put in execution. R-ch—d I intend having over in July or August ; and we intend going to B—rd—x : It is but three or four days sail. We have a fine new vessel, 150 tons, on the trade, with charming accommodations. We intend taking our carriage. By your letter, we observe, you are not fixed as to your coming home this summer. If you should alter, we hope and request you wou'd take this in your way. You could have a seat in our carriage. This invitation, I can't help saying but is selfish, as it will add greatly to our satisfaction, if you can conveniently comply. I hope you believe you will meet with a most sincere welcome. My home, horses and carriages, shall be at your service. We shall wait for your reply, as we intend going to K—lar—y, a place well worth seeing, and would be glad to have you with us.

We had from Br--st--l a most agreeable passage of 32 hours, the weather very fine, which still continues ;
and

band's name, to be informed about many things relating to F--ce, where, it seems Mr. S--te proposed to carry his family, to reside for a number of years ; and particularly soliciting Mr. H--k--f--n's advice in a plan for the education of their son, whom they proposed to carry along with them. Mr. H--k--f--n answered all their queries in two long letters, which he wrote to Mrs. S--te, in return to hers. These letters did not get to L--d-n till after Mr. S--te and his family had set out for C--k ; but the letter being sent after them, and received by Mr. S--te, he then wrote this letter to Mr. H--k--f--n. And thus began a correspondence, which ended, at last, in the loss of Mr. H--k--f--n's estate, and the ruin of his family.

and no doubt but we shall have a fine summer, as we had a great deal of frost last winter. Your G-p-y returns you thanks for your not forgetting her: She has a whitlow.—We hope Mr. B-l-e will be the bearer, as he gave us some hopes of his paying us a visit this summer. Mrs. S-te does not get her health so well as I could wish: Every day she is able, she takes the air. Poor G-y lost her nail by her whitlow.—Mrs. S-te and G-y join me in best respects and regards to you. And believe me to be, dear Sir, your obliged, and most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

P. S. By your not mentioning Doctor M-b-n, I suppose he is elsewhere: If you should see him, please to present our most grateful thanks. C—rl-s is well: We intend carrying him to see his country.

LETTER, Mr. S-te to Mr. H-k-f-n.

DEAR SIR,

C—ke, 13th April 1771.

We had the pleasure of receiving your letters, and answering them; and now have the pleasure of replying to your kind favour of the 16th of March, which gives us the most agreeable hopes of seeing you here in June next. Our departure from hence we can't fix, as that must depend on the vessel's sailing in which we would choose to go, which is the B—rd—x yacht, Captain B-b-e; nor would we choose to go until 7ber. Your coming over, would add more to the many obligations, than your meeting us at B—rd—x: This must be left to you, as being the proper judge; and hope to hear from you on this head. I have wrote for R-ch—d, and, please God, expect him in June, as I intend carrying

ing him with us, and to fix him at a Latin school, by which he must learn French. We are extremely thankful to you for your kind advice, in regard to R-ch--d's education: We shall do our endeavours to make him a good man. The weather has been so fine here, that Mrs. S—te (thank God) gets her health pretty well: And, at present, we are in great distress for rain. I doubt not but we shall have a warm summer, as we had much frost. It gives us infinite pleasure, to find, by your letter, that your health is increasing; and doubt not but our air would add to it. Mrs. S—te and all joins me in affectionate regards to you. And am, dear Sir, your most affectionate, humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

LETTER, Mr. S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

C—k, 12th June, 1771.

Your kind letter gave us the pleasure of hearing that you were safe got to D—bl—n, and that you escaped the inconvenience that attend travellers drove by a drunken chaiseman. It was lucky your meeting with Mr. and Mrs. M—n—l; no doubt but they added some satisfaction to you, as you were unacquainted with the road; I wish my affairs had permitted our going with you.

We are likewise much obliged for your thinking so much about R-ch—d's education, the management of which we shall leave entirely to you, as you have been so friendly as to undertake it.

As to Mrs. S—te, no doubt, if she does not keep her own, but that she must go to E—l—d without me; for it is out of my power to accompany her until August, and where we hope to meet you: If it was not for this pleasing prospect, I should imagine B—d—x

C

(as

(as we intended) the better way. I wish the climate of your own country may agree with you, though it deprives us of the pleasure of your company: It is certain we shall be at a loss where to fix; and if you should not go, we shall be thankful for your advice.

A few days after you left us, I received a packet from B—d—x, directed for you, which I forwarded, under cover, to Mr. S—g—r, and under a frank.

Your uncertainty of going to F—ce, gives Mrs. S—te and I great uneasiness; for, if I can't accompany her, she will not go with strangers, nor would she have a strange physician. Mrs. S—te still continues the drops, which brings out many yellow spots, and was unwell for some time after you left us; but, on taking them, grew better. Inclosed is a letter for our dear R—ch—d, which you will please to deliver him with your good advice. I have mentioned to R—ch—d, that his learning would be expensive; therefore, he must mind his book, as it will take off from that little I am able to give him; for by no means would I have him think I had a large fortune to give him. I hope by this he has got safe to you. Mrs. S—te and your G—f—y join me in compliments to you, ~~My~~ G—bf—n, and Miss H—k—f—n: And believe me to be, with great truth, dear Sir, your obliged and most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

L E T T E R, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

C—k, July 5th, 1771.

I have your esteemed letter of the 16th past, which gives us the pleasing account of your being safe arrived
at

at Ed--b---h, and likewise of your receiving R-ch—d in such health, and his giving the preference of being educated in S—tl—d; all these, I assure you, add not a little to our felicity. It gave us concern that you should wait so long for him: This is adding favours; how shall we return them? You'll get nothing by the acquaintance; we are sure of profiting. The management of R-ch—d I shall leave entirely to yourself; and hope you met your lady and daughter in good health. We are concerned to hear that your native air does not agree with you; yet we are selfish; for, by this account, we are in hopes you will go to F—ce. My lawyer has acquainted me, that I must remain, or stop my proceedings. I shall soon go with Mrs. S—te as far as L—d—n, so as to be there the middle of next month. Our weather has been so excessive hot, that she gets her health much better. We hope you have not got a bad idea of our climate, such as to prevent you from visiting us again: When you, your lady and daughter, do us that honour, I shall be more at liberty to show you the country. Mrs. S—te joins me in best respects to you, Lady G—b—n, and daughter. And am, dear Sir, your obliged, and must humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE,

Please to remember our love to R-ch—d.

LETTER, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

C—k, 16th July, 1771.

Your kind letter of the 4th I received with great pleasure, giving an account of the disposal of R-ch—d, which we are well pleased with, and return you our most grateful thanks. If Lady G—b—n will be so

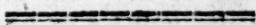
good as to give directions about R-ch—d's cloathing, it will be quite agreeable to us the way her ladyship fixes on; and we are of opinion, that plain cloaths are the most proper. I have read over Mr. B——n's proposals, which I think very high; yet as he thinks he will fit him for the college October 1774, we are content. As to R-ch—d's change of linen, we think three shirts per week; and as to his allowance for pocket-money, 6d. per week; he generally lays out his money on fruit, which disagrees with him; but Lady G—b—n may enlarge it, if it is proper, and that he behaves well. We are very happy in the way that you have placed him, and the more so, that Lady G—b—n is so kind as to have an eye over him: This is what we could not expect; it is heaping favours when it is not in our power to return, except hearts full of gratitude and thanks; and we hope R-ch—d's behaviour will merit the continuance of your parental care of him. We observe by your letter, that you do not intend staying much longer at home; but do not mention your intention of going to F——ce. Mrs. S—te will set out to L—d—n the beginning of next month. We have not had any rain here these five weeks, the weather very warm, which agrees very well with her. She continues Norton's drops, which have been of great service to her. I am concerned to acquaint you, it is now out of my power to go even as far as L—d—n with her, on account of a law-suit with a very bad man, that will neither pay interest or rent. I am to have a trial at the assizes of L—er—ck, which is the 1st of September, and then I must go to D—b—n to the term: This has distressed me a good deal, but at present can't be avoided. I should think, fixing a friend to draw on Mr. B—l—e, would do, and would give him directions who to apply to for the money in L—d—n, or any other way you think most proper. If R-ch—d behaves well, and minds his book, (which I hope he will) I think it would not be amiss to give him some little premium, as an encouragement. Mrs. S—te and my daughter joins in
compliments

compliments to you, Lady G—b—n, and the young lady your daughter; and our blessing to R—ch—d. I am, with great esteem and regard, dear Sir, your affectionate and most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

A—y joins her love to her brother.

For any advance, and the quarter's advance that you have paid Mr. B——n, please to draw on Mr. R. B——e, and I shall acquaint him who to apply to for money: I should be better pleased Mr. B——n would apply for his money half-yearly; paying quarterly is pitiful, and looks as if he had met with Irish bites; it gives my friend in L—d—n double trouble, and was neither practised here or in E—l—d, except for servants. I assure you, I wrote to you twice since I had an account of your arrival at Ed—b—h; if I had not, I should look upon myself to be very absent and ungrateful.



L E T T E R, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

C—k, 2d August, 1771.

I have both yours of the 11th and 18th past, with R—ch—d's. The account you give of him, and what Mr. B——n, his master, says, are very agreeable to us, and doubt not but he will answer our hopes; nothing shall be wanting on my side; though you condemn me, I think the mother ought to have a part. I have mentioned in my letters (which I find you have not received) that I left the entire management of R—ch—d to you and your lady, as you are both so kind to take the trouble on you. As to the expence, I am very well pleased with; but as to your producing receipts,

receipts, I am not: There will be a credit at Messrs. S—t and B—l—r's in L—d—n, to receive what Mr. B—l—e may ask for, or any one else you think proper, I am concerned to find by your letter, that you are obliged to go to F—ce again, on account of your health: Please God, I hope this trip will establish your health in such a manner, as that you will be able to winter at home, or with me; the last would make us happy, provided your family would do so. You are not to despise our climate from what you have seen of it: I allow you, it was very indifferent whilst you were here: Since, very warm, and in great distress for want of rain.

Please God, Mrs. S—te will meet you in L—d—n, the middle of this month. I have wrote to you my reasons, why it is not in my power to accompany her: It is on account of my law-suit; and must be at L—r—ck assizes, which begins the latter end of this month; and then I must go to D—b—n, to attend the terms. This has given me a good deal of uneasiness: But, as you are going to F—ce, it is somewhat a consolation to me, that she will be in your company, which I hope you will permit, and take a further charge of more of the family. How shall I apologize! Gratitude I have; and be assured, it shall never be wanting to you, or any you are pleased to recommend. Your advance, and what may be the expences of R—ch—d, you can receive in L—d—n, as it will answer your purpose. Mrs. S—te, and your G—ff—y, joins me in best respects, and sincere wishes for your health. And am, dear Sir, your obliged humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

LETTER

LETTER, J—n S—te to Mrs. W—l—ms. *.

DEAR MADAM,

C—k, 12th Aug. 1771.

I had the pleasure of writing to you a few posts past, letting you know, that Mrs. S—te would be (God willing) in L—d--n about the middle of this month. The vessel she intended going in, was obliged to unload part of her cargo, which would not be permitted to be landed in E—l—d, and retards Mrs. S—te about eight days longer. Please God, she will be with you the latter end of this month; of which, you will please to acquaint our good friend Mr. H—k—f—n of, with our best compliments to him: And we both hope and entreat the favour of his taking Mrs. S—te under his protection; which will be gratefully acknowledged, with all other favours conferred on us; and we request the favour of your kind interposition with him. Though Mrs. S—te is pretty well, yet the change of the weather affects her; therefore, wou'd not let her winter here, though it is out of my power to accompany her. Having a law-suit with one of the greatest rogues in the

* This Lady, who was then living in L—d--n, had formerly been in intimacy with Mr. and Mrs. S—te, in I--l—d; and she being also cousin-german to Mr. H—k—f—n, was the reason of S—te making this application to her. The sole view which Mr. and Mrs. S—te had in all this, was, to save the expence of hiring a physician to travel with Mrs. S—te, she being, at that time, so very bad, that she could not go without one; and they being both miserably stingy, and having also taken into their heads, that Mr. H—k—f—n (who had casually, sometimes, amused himself in making physiological and psychological enquiries, which enabled him to converse a little with gentlemen of the faculty, on these subjects) was sufficiently qualified to save them this expence;—and, in fact, it is acknowledged, that Mrs. S—te and Miss S—te both owed their lives, in this way, afterwards, to him.—(See, forwards, how Mr. H—k—f—n was inveigled, by all these solicitations, so that he never could get loose from these people, till they ruined him.)

the kingdom, am obliged to attend L—r-ck affizes; and then the terms in D--l-n. What I am contending for, is above ten thousand pounds; and Mrs. S—te wou'd not suffer me to stop; therefore, my friends are not to blame me for not going. Though I wrote so often to Mr. S—th, he never thought 'em worth answering. I sent a messenger. Miss A—f—g replied, That her brother would take advice. The answer Mrs. S—te will carry you; who, with A--y and G—y, join me in best respects to you, and all the good family. And am, dear Madam, your affectionate and most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

LETTER, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

L—d—n, 16th June, 1772.

I got safe here on Monday, after a very agreeable journey; but, what followed, was not so. The confusion of all ranks was such, that it is impossible to describe it. The South Sea year was nothing; and every banker in the nation was expected to stop; so great was the run. And if Sir G. C--b—k had not been supported, he would have shared the fate of others. Had this happened, all must have gone; and God only knows what would have been the consequence. This gentleman is computed to be worth eight hundred thousand pounds Sterling. If such overgrown fortunes are in danger, what must others be?

I shall use my utmost endeavours, in raising money as expeditious as possible; and am afraid it will take some time, as there is so great a scarcity of cash in I--l--d. I have wrote to Mr. T--v--rs to D--l--n, to procure it. This transaction gives me a great deal of uneasiness,
more

more on your account than my own: For, from the generous motive you did it, you ought to have been made free from any trouble. There is no doubt but you may get many that wou'd give you more than I am; and I think it would be right to try, as it is attended with so much uneasiness and disappointments. * Mr. B--l--r, I assure you, has acted the part of the fastest friend; employed notaries, attornies, and himself; and offered to join me as security. At present, the best security in the kingdom could not get money on it. I have wrote to Mrs. S—te, that I think it would be better for her to come home. We have pursued a strange plan; a life I can't well bear up against; and would much rather be at ease, than an inhabitant of this fluctuating world; for an unsettled life is death to me. Mr. B--l--r will take up my bill, and I must remit him as fast as I can. If I do not get the money immediately, how shall I fulfil my engagements? How shall I remit you? You cannot want; therefore, you must take what money the steward has in his hands. I really am at a loss how to act, or what to do. From peace and quietness, I am reduced to an uneasy mind: God grant it may be soon settled, so as to please all. My compliments to all friends. I am, dear Sir, your affectionate and most humble servant, (Signed) J—N S—TE.

* This language, from the man who had a few weeks before pushed the entail with great keenness, and by which he got possession of Mr. H—k—f—n's estate, was not a little astonishing: But it was not long before the v— explained the enigma, by unmasking altogether. All this was recent invention, and to pave the way for what followed. It may be asked at Major M—v—l, Major B—l—e, Major N—n, Mr. S—g—r of B—kh—l, Sir J—n W—d—b—n, &c. &c. &c. what he said to them upon various occasions, a few weeks before this, and when Mr. H—k—f—n was not present. (See forward for many more instances of this sort of d-pl-c-ty). In short, he had, it seems, resolved to say or do any thing, rather than pay the money, or not take the estate to himself, and from his son: *And, for the future instruction of all honest men, let it never be forgotten, how he succeeded at last in his aim, even beyond what he ever could have projected, as in the circumstance of being made heir to Miss H—.*

D

I shall

I shall set out, next Monday, to B—st—l, as there is a vessel ready to sail; and shall write to you (God willing) of my success.

MY DEAR SIR,

C—k, 27th July 1772.

I had the pleasure of writing to you a few lines the 24th instant, which I inclosed, under a frank, to Lady G—f—n, and a letter to our good friend Mr. G—t, with bills, to the amount of and this day, have remitted D. S—g—r, for to be accepted and forwarded to Mr. G—t, four bills, amount, 565 l. 8 s. 11 d.; and next post, if I can get bills, shall remit 7 or 8 hundred more next post. They are very scarce here; and, if it was not for Lisbon, or foreign bills, I should be much at a loss. When you get my letter, I hope it will restore both your peace and health; which I pray God may long continue. Yours of the 13th has affected me much, that you should be obliged to apply, and be refused. By it, you learn, who wou'd assist you in your necessities. Surely, they wou'd not imagine that you had parted with your estate to a man of straw, or a rascal that wou'd not keep his word: Therefore, yours surprises me much. You need not want money now, nor never shall again. What you want, for your present use, Mr. G—t will give you; and so I have wrote to him to this purport, and to supply Mrs. S—te with what she may have occasion for. I should be glad you cou'd prevail on some of the least necessitous of your creditors to wait a few days, as I have received a letter from Mr. F—zg—b—s, advising me, that he had 2200 l. ready to pay me in: And, if I get this, it will prevent my borrowing, which is very difficult here. I am surpris'd Mrs. S—te should be so much affected: Surely, she knows there is a plentiful fortune at her commands; and I request you will both
rouse

rouse her and yourself; and that you will desire she may come home. My hermit's life is very disagreeable to me. I hope D—v—d S—g—r is in L—d—n; if not, he must write to a friend, to open the C—k letter, and get the bills accepted, and forwarded to Mr. G—t at E—b—h. I write to Mr. B—n by this post, and shall remit him in a few posts; or, you may pay him a part, until I can breathe a few posts. He may depend, he never will meet with another disappointment from me again. Every thing contributed, and seemingly combined, to make us uneasy. My love to both our families, and best respects to all friends. It will give some pleasure to hear of these disappointments; but, thank God, they are over, and we will laugh. If you are, or are not fit to encounter one of my big bottles, I think you would do right to come and winter with us. I am, my dear Sir, your affectionate and most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

L E T T E R, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

C—k, 7th Aug. 1772.

I wrote to you the 31st past; to which I refer. I have now before me yours of the 24th, mentioning of your distresses. You ought not to have made yourselves so uneasy. The indorsers of the bill I should not be surpris'd at; for, they were not so well acquainted with me: But you, who was, and must know, that I would not suffer it to go back; and that I would remit, as soon as possible, the remainder of the money: Nor did ye give yourselves time to think, that it was not in my power to remit sooner; nor wou'd ye well expect to hear from me sooner. I arriv'd the 12th

D 2

July;

July; the day after, remitted Mr. B—l—r 834 l. to take up the bill that gave ye all this vast uneasiness, with directions to draw on me for the remainder, if it was not convenient to wait a post or two, as bills are scarce. The 24th, I remitted him 382 l.; and, the same date, remitted Mr. G—t, for you, 404 l. 9 s. 1 d.; the 28th, remitted you 565 l. 8 s. 11 d.; the 31st ditto 607 l. 11 s. 7 d. How was it possible I could remit faster? I think I did feats. This money was to get on my arrival. I wrote to D—bl—n, L—r—k, and applied in C—k, where I got it; and shall, as soon as possible, remit the remainder. No doubt but all your fears are over. I now wish you joy and health. You will never want to ask another favour. I hope you are all prepared to receive my frightful returned bill: The letter that covered it, with the protest, happened to be directed to C—k. I hope our friend I—c, and the rest of our friends, will alter their opinion, as the fears are at an end, and not hold me in the light of an Irish bite. I left all my family as hostages, &c.

I observe you intend taking a house at E—b—h. You need not remain in Britain for the want of money; and believe, my dear Sir, you shall never want it, while I am worth a shilling. If you will not go to France, let me recommend your wintering with us: * It may be more moist, but it will be more mild. Your air has had a good effect on Mrs. S—te: I trust in God, she will do well. The sooner she comes home, the better. If you do not come here with her, she had better take the stage at E—b—h, and come to London. Mrs. W—l—ms will come over with her. I never travelled easier, nor more comfortable: We changed horses every fourteen or sixteen miles; and got into the coach
between

* This from the man who had seen and read the opinion of Mr. H—k—f—n's physicians but a few weeks before, declaring, that his life depended upon his getting into a foreign climate before winter, and who had then solemnly promised to settle a credit instantly for his annuity at London, so that he might go abroad immediately.

between four and five, and stopt between seven and eight. I am surpris'd Mrs. S—te would distress herself for the want of money: She might have drawn on S—t and B—l-r, given her bill, and not take the money, until there was an account of its being accepted: I hope she knows what it is to want money; and that this will make her an œconomist. You will please to remember me to all friends. And am, dear Sir, your affectionate and most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

Inclosed is C—rn. V—d—h—n, on D—l—d and W—f—r, dated, R—t—d—m, 24th July, at 2½ months date, for 207 l. 4 s. 10 d.; I have made it payable to Mr. G—t. In a few posts more, I hope to remit you the balance; and I think you had better pay Mr. B—n. F—ch has promised to pay this week; if he does, I shall write, and remit him.

LETTER, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

C—k, 4th August, 1772.

I had the pleasure of writing to you the 7th instant, when I inclosed C—rn. V—d—r—h—n, on C—l—d and M—s, for 207 l. 4 s. 10 d.; and inclosed is T. M—kh—m on the principal officers of his Majesty's ordnance, dated, K—f—e, 12th August, at 21 days after sight, for 200 l. and indorsed by me to you. You will please to give my compliments to Mr. B—n; and please to pay him: He may be assured he shall never meet with another disappointment from me. Mr. F—ch but trifles; he has promised often, but never performed. I shall try him once more; and, if he does not pay, I think the best way wou'd be, to put it into
attornies

attornies hands, who will soon compel him. I wrote to Mrs. S—te last post, requesting she would set out immediately, before the days are short, and the weather breaks. She gave me an account of the great prospect of the harvest. We have a fine one here, and a great deal saved. I hope L—l-y will manage right, and follow your directions, for the winter's operation; and I think, if he could have some of the bounds run so, as to put out some of the quicks, it would be right: If he has not time, I shall do it. I suppose Mrs. S—te will want money; you will please to supply her. If she comes D-bl-n's way, I will meet you at K—k—ny. L—l-y, I hope, will take care of the young horses, and not to overwork them. Please to give my compliments to Mrs. B—ce and family, and to our friend I—c, and all my acquaintance. And am, dear Sir, your affectionate and most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

P. S. As soon as possible, I will remit you more. I had a letter from D—v—d, acknowledging the receipt of the bills, which he will forward to Mr. G—t, accepted. He mentions the death of his father. It is a debt we must all pay: And, in the state he was, it was grievous to his friends.

=====

L E T T E R, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

Pl—f—tf—d, 2d October 1772.

I would have answered yours of the 8th, but that you mentioned, you would set off immediately. Yours of the 14th *ult.* gives me vast pleasure, by which I find you are all happy, which I hope may continue. As to my going over this year, it is out of the question; for I must

must be (God willing) at L—m—r—k in December, March, and the latter end of April, in order to let the lands that belonged to N—p—r. I observe what you say in regard to the farm. I have not the least doubt but it is a very valuable one; and I hope, the one you placed your affections on, may have a heart full of gratitude, to acknowledge and deserve it. I am vastly thankful for your giving orders about running the marches, and putting out the thorns. The trees, I believe, would be better put at twenty feet asunder, at the back of the hedges. It would give me pleasure you would give your directions, as heretofore; for, in that light, I would have you look on R—th—l—t, and wish you may take more pleasure in it than ever, and make use of it in the same way you ever did.

I wrote to you the 7th of August, and then inclosed you C—rn. V—d—h—v—n on P—l—d and M—f—s, for, and indorsed to H. G—t, - - - L. 207 4 10
14th 7ber, I remitted you T. M—kh—m,
on the principal officers of the ordnance,
payable to yourself, - - - 200 0 0

I mention this, for fear they miscarried. I shall soon get my rents in, and then make you more remittances. We have had a very fine harvest here, and the weather is very fine.—Please to remember me to all friends: And am, dear Sir, your most affectionate humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

L E T T E R, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

C—k, 29th May 1773.

It is certain, Sir, that, after receiving some of your former letters, and my replying, would put an end to
any

any further correspondence : But, as yours of the 15th instant is on a different subject, I shall endeavour to acquit myself with that honesty and integrity I always preserved, and ever pursued. I received a letter from Mr. G—t, letting me know, that my presence would be absolutely necessary at R—th—l—t, and that I would do well to remit you the remainder of what may be due. My reply was, that I would remit with pleasure, if it was in my power ; and that my income was not more than 800 l. *per annum* ; that I had four law-suits, which I must attend, and that I could not get my money or rents in, thus circumstanced : Nay, my health would not admit me taking such a journey. When my affairs are settled, which will be as expeditious as the law will admit, I shall be enabled to fulfil my engagement with you ; which has been an unhappy and distressing affair to me ; for it has run me in debt above 4000 l. A circumstance no one dislikes more than I do, nor shall I be happy while I am thus situated. I assure you, Sir, you have neither dealt with a bankrupt, or a deceiver ; but with a man of as strict honour and probity as ever you were acquainted with : But, if I am not paid, it is impossible I can pay. I am using my utmost, to compel those who are in my debt, to pay. I could not represent my fortune to be 2600 l. *per annum* ; for I never was possessed of half : If I had taken the advantage the law gave me, I would ; but that never was my principle. I believe, I mentioned to you, that N—p—r forfeited his land, which was worth 1400 l. *per annum* : But when I came to receive the rents, it made but a trifle more than 400 l. *per annum* ; on account of his taking fines, and letting long leases. My engagements with you, prevented my dealing with Mr. B—m—n ; and am now obliged to bring an ejectment : Such men have I to deal with. I assure you, Sir, my distress is great, and my health greatly impaired ; and my not being able to be punctual with you, is no small addition. Mrs. S—te wrote to you, by my desire, and requested you'd get money from the steward, which I now repeat : No doubt but he

he ought to have a good deal more in his hands than the farm will require, as the produce was so large last year. I know of no other way of extricating me and my family, and enabling me to pay you, but letting a part, or the whole farm, for two or three years, until my affairs are settled here. You say, no one can let, nor no one would dare take it. Who is to call us to an account, but R—ch—d? Which, I am sure, he never would attempt. By this, I would not have you think that I did not intend the improvements should be carried on, when in my power. As to my son's enjoying your estate, without being paid for, is impossible, (in case I did not pay,) as he will have a large fortune liable, and exclusive of yours. How could you imagine I could even think, much more expect you to be steward to R—th—l—t, knowing that your health would not permit you to act for yourself? "If it had not been for Mrs. S—te's perswasion, it is certain I should have had no concern with your estate; for I often said, I did not understand farming, and that I choose to purchase nigher home: and this is the blame I charge Mrs. S—te with." But, as to our having any design on you, or any one else, it never was our turn.—Is it consistent with our characters? From what Mrs. S—te informed me, relative to Mr. B——n's behaviour to R—ch—d, I should think him a very improper person to have the tuition of him, likewise the expence too high for me at present. I must once more request, you'll get what money you may have occasion for, from the steward, as it will not be in my power to remit you for some time; nor will it be in my power to educate R—ch—d as I would choose, or pay you, except by the assistance of R—th—l—t: * I know of no other scheme that can extricate me. Just now, received yours of the 22d, advising of your drawing on me: You don't say

* This is another recent invention, which never was heard of till now: All this from a man who, besides his own large fortune, was possessed of 40,000 l. entailed upon his son, and of which he has the liferent.

the amount, fight, or date of your bill. I shall endeavour to pay it, though it distresses me. Mrs. S—te is unhappy in not having A—y: If she could be in D—bl—n by the 28th of next month, Mr. T—v—rs would bring her down; and in case she can't, she can have a bed at the late Mr. E—th—w's, with Mr. H—f—d in D—m—k street; and, if you would come with her here, I would lay the state of my affairs before you, and convince you, that it is necessity, and not inclination, that makes me choose to have the land let, and the hedging and planting may be carried on. Mrs. S—te desires, that A—y may bring over all her things, except her big linen and gowns. As soon as Mrs. S—te is able, she will answer Miss H—xt—n's kind letter. Mrs. S—te joins me in compliments to Lady G—f—n, Miss H—xt—n, and love to the children: And am, Sir, your most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

LETTER, J—n S—te to Mr. H—k—f—n.

SIR,

C—k, 28th June 1773.

Yours of the 13th instant is before me.—When you dealt with me, I never expected to have had such letters pass between us: I thought we should be on a friendly footing, and be one family. You know I had law-suits; that it was inconvenient my going out of the kingdom last year. It never was my principle, to take any one's fortune, without paying for it. My saying that R—ch—d would have a good fortune, was in answer to that part of your letter, where you said, that it gave you pleasure that he had an independent one. Mrs. S—te and I return you thanks for taking him home. Mr. B—n wrote to me a long letter, which I shall answer.

swer. Your letter has made Mrs. S—te and I very uneasy: You may depend, I shall do all that is in my power to give you content. When my money comes in, I shall remit you—I can't do more. You have the land, stock and produce. You know what a deal I am out of pocket, without benefiting a shilling. It is in your power to make Mrs. S—te and I happy, what I have been a stranger to since I saw you. As you are on the spot, if you will be kind enough to let the farm, during R—ch—d's minority, for the most it will bring, it will enable me to pay you your annuity: If there should be any deficiency, I would make it up; otherwise, I assure you, it will not be in my power to remit you punctually, as I would choose; and this is occasioned by my not having affairs settled. This I beg as a favour, for the advantage and ease of our families: It is impossible for me to do more. If I was to send a person to let the land, I cannot suppose he would do it so well as you. This affair has been the greatest affliction I ever met with; and I hope, Sir, you will contribute so far as to grant this request. From the produce of the land last year, I should imagine, the steward ought to have a good deal of money in his hands, which I beg you'll take; and we both request the favour of your sending A—y and R—ch—d, in our chair and young horses; and, if you think the tutor capable to instruct R—ch—d, I request he may come, and you will please to agree with him. He can ride one of my old horses, and the other, the boy that drives may lead: It will be a relief for the young cattle, as they may be changed; and he must not forget the drag-chain. Mrs. H—fi—d is in D—bl—n, in D—m—k—street, at the late Mr. E—sh—w's, near the R—m—inn, in A—g—l—street, where they'll put up. You will please to let me know when they'll set out, and what time you think they may be in D—bl—n, as I will meet them in K—k—y; and the man that drives them can return from thence, who I shall take proper care of: They need not bring any baggage. Mrs. S—te's trunks you will please to have sent to Messrs.

W--l--m C--n--h--m and Company at G--g--w, who has directions to forward them, *per* first vessel, to C--k: Twenty or thirty guineas will be sufficient, I believe. If the steward can't spare it, Mr. G--t will give it, and I will remit him. In my last, I mentioned, we should be glad if you would come—So I do now; You may depend on a sincere and friendly reception. I am sorry Major M--v--l and Mr. S--g--r would not attend: It is hard, to ask you to act; but, Sir, as I have no other friend there, I must beg that favour, until I can have it settled. If my affairs would permit my going, I do assure you my health would not. If you think it is necessary to have more than the tutor, let the steward come, in case you can't come. I write by this post, for Mrs. S--te, to Miss H--k--f--n, and A--y, as she is not able to write: And am, Sir, your most humble servant,

(Signed) J--N S--TE.

Mrs. S--te and I request you'll make use of R-t-l-t house, &c. as formerly.

LETTER, Mr. S--te to Mr. R-b--f--n,

SIR,

C--k, 25th January, 1774.

Your favour of the 4th instant, came to hand the 23d instant. As there were many packets due, I have already wrote to Mr. G--t, to acquaint Mr. H--k--f--n, that I was endeavouring to get money: I have got some, which I would have sent last post, but could not get a bill; shall send it next. I have wrote to D--bl-n in order to get some; for, at present, it is not to be had here. I only want a little time to settle with him; and give you my honour, I am endeavouring all I can; I ask no more

E.
e of
74.
d the
have
f—n
e go
ld no
l-n i
here
d giv
ask n
mor

LETTER, Mr. S—te to Mr. R-b—f-n.

I am to reply to yours of the 8th instant. Mr. H—k—f—n may very well forget and forgive what is past : I wish I could forget it. The sending of my nephew was, and is with an intent to carry on the improvements in the best manner he is able, for the good of my son ; and for whom, Mr. H—k—f—n would fain make every one believe, he has a greater regard for, than I have. This, Sir, is very extraordinary language ; and you that do not know me, must look upon me as a monster. He has done that child, and my family, more hurt, than is in his power to make amends. The entailing that farm in his family, after my son and daughter, and their issue being extinct, was an offer of my own, with some others, which ought not to be forgot. When I was persuaded to deal with Mr. H—k—f—n, I was to advance, that year, no more than 1200 l. ; that in a few days, I remitted above 3000 l. The scarcity of money here, and the many disappointments I have met with, prevented my taking up my bond. The 28th past, I remitted to Mr. G—t in four bills to give Mr. H—k—f—n

L. 400 0 0

$$\begin{array}{r} \text{L. } 400 \text{ } 0 \text{ } 0 \\ 400 \text{ } 0 \text{ } 0 \\ \hline \text{L. } 800 \text{ } 0 \text{ } 0 \end{array}$$

L. 800 o o
The

The 13th instant, these bills are indorsed, and payable to Mr. H—k—f—n; and Mr. H—k—f—n will find in L—y's account, about 100l. charged me, which must be to his account; and which he'll find in that account. I want to have nothing allowed me, but what I have a full right to; nor do I want to have any law-suit, though he was pleased to give me a different character. I have often wrote to Mr. G—t and Mr. H—k—f—n, that it would not be in my power to pay the annuity, but at October and April; as my rents then became due. My giving security for the payment, is a demand that no way surprisef me. Hitherto, he has been more punctually paid, than any landlord I know. This affair has cost me more vexation than any transaction of my life; and above 5000l. And what title I have to the land, I know not, as I never saw any of the papers, nor were they given up to me. From the reports in our city, which were sent from your country; which is, That Mr. H—k—f—n had no dominion over that land, and that, when he dies, it will be contested: Though I don't believe a word of this, yet it is fit I should have the papers relative to that land, and Mr. H—k—f—n's title; as I have paid so much money, without benefiting a shilling. I shall write to my nephew, to demand all the papers from the person with whom they are lodged, as he has my letter of attorney to act for me. As my money comes in, I shall remit to my nephew, in order to discharge my bond; and let him know who it will be paid to, in Mr. H—k—f—n's absence. I shall examine the account of the payments; and if any objection, I shall acquaint my nephew of it. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

C—ke, Feb. 20. 1774.

LETTER,

L E T T E R, Mr. S—te to Mr. R-b—f-n.

S I R,

My being from home a few days, prevented my replying to yours of the 28th past: By which I observe, that you had, prior to your last, wrote, and sent me, the state of my account with Mr. H—k—f—n; which, I assure you, I never received. If I had, I would have answered it in the following manner: That, until my son is given up, and until a clear title is made out to me, (for at present, I have not a single paper to show my right) and a proper compensation made for near 100 l. *per annum**, which that land pays the college; and which, I assure you, I never knew, or heard of, until the return of my nephew; and the different sums paid, which were never allowed me. I want no more than common justice, for I have been ill treated for my confidence. My nephew returns in a few days, and has full power to settle, which I am as desirous of as your employer; who, my family and I ought to be very thankful to, for his gift, as he called it. I don't suppose you are a stranger to the manner of his taking my son from school, or his carrying him to F—ce, contrary to my orders; † his deceiving my nephew by his letters. Is this justifiable? Is this consistent with a man of honour, or humanity? This treatment, I assure you, Sir, has almost brought his mother to her grave. He was very kind, for he wrote one letter to her, without date, or place, nor did he mention our son; this is but a part of his treatment. I hope to have my affairs in this country

* The whole public burdens upon the estate, amount, *com. ann.* to about a thousand merks Scots.

† See his letter of 29th of May, desiring Mr. H—k—f—n to do this; and his letter of 28th of June, thanking him for having done it.—*What a man!*

try settled in a few months: I then shall go over (God willing) and do the same in yours. I am, Sir, your most humble servant,

(Signed) J—N S—TE.

C—ke, 22d July, 1774.

LETTER, J—n S—te to Mr. H--k--f--n.

SIR,

C—k, 10th November 1774.

Relying upon your word of honour, as to your having a clear and indisputable title to an estate in S—tl--d; I was (at your request) induced to agree to give you an annuity for your life, for the purchase of that estate, without making any enquiry into your title; which, I have been since informed, is, at best, very precarious. Until I received this information, I was punctual in paying the annuity. I have since made many ineffectual applications to you, to make out a clear title. I mentioned to you before, and I now repeat it, That I am willing to settle accounts with you, and to pay what may appear to be justly due, upon your making out a title: if you do not, I shall not remit; so that your receiving, or not receiving the annuity, depends on your own conduct. You know in your conscience, that at the time I first entered into this agreement with you, there was not any mention made, that you should have either the custody of the person, or the direction of the education of my only son, whom you are pleased to style your adopted son. When I went to S—tl--d, I continued to entertain the highest opinion of your honour, as a gentleman, and was pleased with an opportunity of placing my son in a college near you, as I doubted not but that you wou'd have seen, that justice shou'd be done him in S--tl--d. The only deed relative to this agreement, was
executed

executed between us; but, I do not recollect, that the express condition of that deed was, that you shou'd have the custody of the person, and the direction of the education of my son. If it was so, it was not my intention: Nor can it be supposed, that a reasonable man, possessed of a good fortune, wou'd part with his only son, in whom his future hopes of comfort were built, for any pecuniary reward: And I do say, and insist upon it, that your withholding from me my son, is a crime of a blacker dye than I choose to mention. M--d-r, or an intentional design of depriving a fellow-creature, by any means, of life, never entered my thoughts; nor cou'd I have supposed you guilty of such a crime: But, I have often heard, the worse a man's heart is, the more apt is he to suspect others. All your oratory, rhetoric, and flourishes, will never prevail on the world to think, that you can possibly have a higher, nay, not even so high, an affection for my son as I have: But, I must confess, you appear exceedingly condescending, when you promise to send him home to me, on my remitting to you the pretended arrears of your annuity; the plain construction of which is this,----I have agreed with Mr. S--te, to sell him an estate in S---l--d, to which I cannot make out a title. He has called upon me so to do; and refuses paying the purchase-money, until I comply. I have his only, and his darling son, in my custody; and am determined to detain him, until I thereby compel Mr. S--te to satisfy my demands. I hope you'll consider this letter in such a light as it is really intended, namely, to induce you to do me justice, with respect to my son, and your agreement for the sale of the estate. As to my son, you cannot have the smallest pretence to withhold him; and as to your title, if you have a good one, you can obviate any future inconveniencies to you or me on -----

I hope that you will, on reflection, be convinced, you have, in your last letter, treated me very injuriously. If I receive any such hereafter, I shall not give an answer,

F

fwer,

swer, as repentance is the sure road to mercy. I sincerely recommend you to that of Heaven. I remain,

(Signed) J---N S---TE.

LETTER, J--n S--te to Mr. R-b-rt--n.

SIR,

C--k, 15th October 1774.

Since my last to you, I have received a letter from Mr. H--k--f--n, which he dated at N-v--n--s, which is a province in F--ce; and gave no directions in his, where to direct to him, though an answer is requisite. It is his own fault, if every thing is not put on a proper footing. The inclosed letter I request you'll forward to him. And am, Sir, your most humble servant,

(Signed) J--N S--TE.

What is contained in this and the twenty-nine preceding pages, is a true, full, and exact copy of the original letters by J--n S--te, Esq; of P--f--d, in the fourth liberties of the city of C--k, in the kingdom of I--l--d, addressed to H-l-n-s H--k--f--n, Esq; of that ilk, and others, of the several dates, tenor, and contents above-written, without any addition or alteration whatever, being duly compared by us, notaries-public, at E--b--gh, this 4th day of November 1775 years, before these witnesses, T--m-s V--t and G---e C--p--t--n, both writers in E--b--gh.

Premissa attestor,

(Signed) W-L--M L--D--N, N. P.
E--w--D B---E, N. P.

(Signed) T--m-s V--t, witness.
G--. C--p--t--n, witness.

LETTERS

LETTERS from Mr. H--K--S--N to
Mr. S--TE and others.

To Mrs. S--te.

DEAR MADAM,

N--es, March 16. 1771.

By favour of G--cy's of the 12th of February, I am this moment made happy with the account of your safe arrival at home, in good health and good spirits. It hurts me, however, to see, by it, that you had not then received my two last letters; the first of which, directed to G--cy, at your lodgings in L--d-n, certainly would arrive there a very few days after you left that place.—The second, directed for you, to the care of D--v--d, who, I am sure, would not neglect it, I flatter myself you have, by this time, received. Those letters were in answer to what G--cy wrote from Mr. S--te, on the subject of R-c--d's health and education.—If those letters have miscarried, appearances must be greatly against me in Mr. S--te's eyes; but, I persuade myself, you know me well enough, not to believe me capable of negligence, in a matter so interesting.

I note, with particular attention, the contents of this, which lies before me; and being just now upon a tour through L--g--d--c, (as I have formerly been through P--v--e) I shall, by and by, be able to give you the information you desire: Nay, more, should I go home this season, I shall take my rout from this by T--l--se, B--d--x, and C--k, as Mr. S--te desired; in which event, you may expect the information you desire, about

the beginning of June. Should I not go home, will probably pass the summer season somewhere about the foot of the P-r-n-s; shall write you fully, in answer to your queries, about a month hence, from T-l-se; and shall meet you at B-d-x in August. By this, I flatter myself, that, however much appearances have been against me, Mr. S-te will be induced to do me the justice to believe, that I do not allow myself to trifle, when the health or happiness of my friends are in question. Believe me, I am too sensible of what importance the plan now to be fixed upon must be, particularly to my friend R-c-d, in his future life, not to enter very deeply into it. I beg to present my best respects to your fire-side.

LETTER, Mr. H-k-f-n to Mr. S-te.

August, 1771.

Your favour, of the 16th of July I received, just as I was setting out from my own house for L-d-n; and, in consequence of what I wrote you but a little before that, being not altogether without hope of meeting you at L-d-n, I delayed writing till now. I am sorry now to find, as Mr. S-g-r informs me, that Mrs. S-te is in town without you; and doubly so, as he tells me she is in a bad state of health, and expecting that I should take the charge of her.—Nothing could distress me equal to this.—I wrote you fully on this head in my last; and my reasons against it are insurmountable. I tremble at the thoughts of seeing her.—What can I do? what shall I say? Praise be to God, I have no property in I-l-d. From what you have told me of your laws, &c. I would not take a present of an estate in that country.—Wish to God you would go and lay out your
money

money in S—l—d, where I will engage to find you better land, fuller possession, and a decision of any common cause in law for twenty shillings, before an inferior court, or for 20 l. in the highest court in the kingdom, all expences included.

I am sorry you think R-c---d's board and education too high:---I assure you, I bargained for it below the ordinary here. There are but two other professors in the college who take boarders besides Mr. B—n, viz. professor W--f-n, whose board is 100 l. *per annum*; and he only superintends the education of his boarders, who are taught by other masters; and professor W—k-e, who takes young gentlemen with governors, 150 l. *Sterling per annum*.---You see, this is more than double R-c---d's expence.---I note what you say of the board. It seems it is the custom there to pay *per advance*: I know not, however, but it might have been something in the way of bite (as you say) that introduced the fashion. I remember a Mr. F—ch from C—k, several years ago, at St. A—d—s, whose board is still resting to a widow lady, who is not worth as much more in the world as the sum which he owes her. You must allow, this is base; and such instances, I suppose, have taught the people caution. However, give yourself no concern about R-c---d's board; I shall take care to pay it quarterly. At same time, it is equal to me to draw for it again at the half year, or when it is convenient for your correspondent at L—d-n.

I sincerely sympathize with you in what you call your present distress: I truly feel for you. There is nothing more certain, my good friend, than that great riches contribute little towards happiness; on the contrary, I have almost constantly observed, that they only serve to excite to pursuits which create a life of anxiety and uneasiness, destroy health and peace of mind; the only blessings which are of real value in this world, and end in miserable disease and premature death. Such were often my painful reflections, when I saw lately a worthy friend digging a grave for himself and family, when the
good

man fancied all the while that he was building a house; but where, it is absolutely certain, that neither he nor they can ever live in health, or die of old age: And yet, so intent was he on that single point, that, in the interim, himself, and almost every other member of his family, were perishing unheeded amongst his hands.

If it is true, that we can only enjoy life where we possess health; then, to secure health, is the first object that reason points out to our attention.—But I forget myself; I beg your excuse. I cannot help moralizing; consider it as my weak side. You know we all have failings. Call it raving, and laugh at it; and thus we will each have our own way without offence.

L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te,

L—d—n, August 1771.

I wrote you the day before yesterday, immediately upon my arrival in this place; since which, have seen Mrs. W—l—s, and received from her hands yours of the 2d of August.—Good God, Sir! what shall I think? what must I do? 'Tis your way to run things to such a desperate pass. Does Mrs. S—te's life depend upon my refusal or acceptance? Yet how shall I undertake the charge? When I saw her last, she was certainly dangerously ill: Neither you nor she seemed to treat it seriously at that time. Can I believe that her situation is much mended, from the way in which she has spent the summer? and if not, what may be expected? How am I (an invalid myself) to take the sole charge of one in her condition? what must be my situation, if any thing was to happen? what distress would it not bring me into?—Alas! Sir, you do not allow yourself to consider things. What shall I do? Does it depend upon
me,

me, this last chance for her life? or shall she be left to perish through neglect? Yet how do I know, that her going now can be of any use to her? It may be too late: how shall I judge? I am bewildered; I cannot resolve one way or other.—My God! is not this treating me cruelly? I appeal to yourself. No man ever was more sensible to the social obligations than I am; but, is there not too much exacted here? In fine, I cannot determine. I beg you, to make yourselves easy in the meantime; you shall see me in I—l—d presently, and then I shall be able, perhaps, to form some resolution.—The B—d—x passage will still be open for me.—Present my best respects: And believe me yours, &c. &c.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te.

L—d—n, September 1771.

I must refer you to my former letters. I have only now to say, that soon after I wrote you last, Mrs. S—te arrived here. I cannot, I am sure I need not tell you, how much this circumstance has distressed me. Almost a week passed, before I was able to say any thing to her: However, there was a necessity; and I was obliged to tell her, that my situation calls me to return to S—t—l—d.—This she considered as a sentence of death pronounced in her case. My God! to what a pass have you brought things? She has now taken the resolution to return to I—l—d, as she says, to die.—I have made offer to go home by the west road, on purpose to carry her in my carriage to C—st—r, or to the H—d, or even to D—l—n, if necessary, as she proposes to meet you at D—l—n. I cannot express to you my feeling on this occasion, nor would a letter contain what I wish to say to you; only this, that you do me the greatest injustice,

justice, if you don't believe that I would have done any possible thing, rather than have undergone this scene ; and that my heart is filled with most sincere sympathy for her, and friendship towards you and yours.—I heard of R—c—d by last post ; he is as well as you can wish him. I shall (please God) see him soon. And be assured, that, while it depends upon me, I shall have as much attention to him as if he was my own son.—I am, &c.

L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te.

September 8th, 1771.

I wrote you a few posts ago, which I hope you have received : since that, every thing has been settled. My man carried Mrs. S—te's baggage to the waggon-house last night ; and the waggon sets out to-morrow morning for C—st—r, and takes nine days to perform the journey.—Mrs. S—te and Miss likewise set out for the same place to-morrow morning, in my carriage, along with me. I doubt not but we will be nearly as long of performing the journey, as the waggon will ; my horses, one of which has been lately ill, not being able to perform above two stages a day at most.—However, this is no unfavourable circumstance, as it happens ; slow travelling being most proper for Mrs. S—te's condition : besides, it would serve no purpose her getting there before her baggage.

I know not, my good Sir, in what light you may view my conduct : But, if it is so, that it seems to you, that I have not carried my friendship towards you and your family as far as you expected, I persuade myself, that a little reflection will bring you to see, that I have done it at least as far as I ought. I pray you to consider, Sir, that Mrs S—te wants health ; Miss S—te education ;
(a most

(a most unhappy circumstance for a young lady so far advanced as she is): The one requires an able physician, the other a guardian, who ought, if possible, to be still better qualified. You seem to have expected both these in me. Alas! Sir, I am conscious that you have conceived too highly of my qualifications. And would you have me concur in the deceit, to abuse you in matters of such importance? Yet, notwithstanding the consciousness I have of my own inability, considering the pass to which you brought things, had I had my family with me, I would have undertaken all; but when I left home, I found my wife under such invincible terrors for waters, that she would not cross from D—v—r to C—l—s for the king of F—e's dominions; and I could not, in my state of health, carry my daughter singly along with me; therefore, was obliged to leave them both behind.—Besides, it has so fallen out, that I am under a necessity of making a trip to S—l—d, before I can go to F—e, for a reason which concerns only myself.

I hope, Sir, a little reflection on these points, will be sufficient to justify my conduct in your eyes, and induce you to believe me, what I really am, with sincere friendship, dear Sir, your most obedient and most humble servant, &c.

When we get to C—st—r, if the yacht is ready, or near ready, I will see them on board; if otherwise, they must wait with patience; and the best shall be done, as circumstances fall out. I doubt not, this will induce you to forward your expedition to D—l—n, without delay, that, if possible, you may be there to receive them.—Adieu.

G

LETTER,

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te.

October 16th, 1772.

Was I able, I would write a long letter ; for it would take a great deal of paper, to contain the expressions of the joy it has given to this family, and to all the friends of yours in this part of the world, that you have been graciously pleased to recal the sentence of death you peremptorily passed on Mrs. S—te some weeks ago, and to grant her a reprieve during her pregnancy. Though this is no more than what the mild laws of this country enjoin, in favour even of *every pregnant criminal* under sentence of death ; yet, as you knew the circumstance, at the time you passed the sentence, and could not but have an eye to it, we had formed little hopes of this act of clemency from you ; and this makes our joy the greater.

The 200 l. which you mention to have remitted for my use in September, I indorsed to your commissioners, who, then, likewise cleared with me the accompts which should have been settled in July.

I wish they may be able to discharge their engagements for November : You have mentioned nothing of that, of late, and the term is at hand.

What you mention with regard to the farm, I shall lay before your commissioners, who are to meet in a few days. As to myself, I am incapacitated from being useful in that, or any thing else.—Excruciated with rheumatisms, and a thousand other complaints, which the climate inflicts upon me, I feel nothing but my own miseries ; which, you know, the physicians foretold to me, before you left E—b—h, as I shewed you there. Could you have been satisfied with less than my life, all else I gave voluntarily : This only you have taken by force. I might, probably, and, I confess, I wished to have lived, to have been useful to R—c—d in his education, the only task I proposed for myself ; and, indeed,
the

the only one for which I was, in any degree, qualified. You have been pleased, notwithstanding all remonstrances, to avail yourself of the power put into your hands, to deprive me of my liberty, and of my life: The consequences are in the hands of Providence. I pray God, they be good to him; and that he pass into better hands when I am gone, than mine would have been, had I been suffered to live, and take care of him.

Though, you see, I have spoke plain truth, as becomes a man, do me not the injustice to think, I shall die in resentment: I forgive you, as I hope to be forgiven. It has always been my disposition, to submit with resignation to the dispensations of Providence, by whatever hand they were inflicted; and so I do in this. I have great comfort, at this moment, that it has been the last act of my life, to save that of your daughter, whose recovery has been next to miraculous, owing, under God, to the uncommon attention given. She is now, thank God, in perfect health, and without the least scar from the horrid distemper. Had she set out as had been resolved, in compliance to your express order, you had, this day, been without either wife or daughter: There is a dispensation of Providence for you to reflect upon!—R—ch—d is in perfect health: His improvements, both in body and mind, advance with a rapidity much beyond any thing I have ever seen.—Pray God, they may always continue to do so: He will, in that case, become the object of the love and admiration of society, and do honour to human nature.

Mrs. S—te is in surprising good health; but her delicacy gives continual alarms, as she cannot ride more than two miles at a time, without being hurt by it; at same time, that riding out is thought indispensibly necessary for her welfare. The increase upon your farm, since you left it, is computed as follows:

Barley, 400 bolls.

Oats, 640 do.

Wheat, 40 do.

G 2

Pease

	<i>L.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
Pease and hay in the barn-yard, worth about	100	0	0
35 oxen, fed upon the grass, and now going to be put in upon turnip, worth about	200	0	0
79 wedders, worth about	60	0	0

L—l—e is just now making up a sum, to lay in 10 or 12 score of wedders, for feeding upon the winter foggage and turnip.

He sold wheat yesterday, at 17 s. *per* boll, and barley at 14 s. *per* boll : The price of oats is just now about 12 s. *per* boll.

But the whole scheme of future improvement here must fail, from the want of buildings, which should have taken place last summer ; and these will fall, of course, to be done next summer, neither of which have been attended to. This, I hope and wish, may be the last letter you shall ever be troubled with from, &c.

You may consider this as a postscript to my last : I find I had omitted some things there, which, my conscience tells me, my duty requires me to lay before you, for your reflection.

The connection in which I now stand with your family, which has become mine ; the regard I have for yourself ; the duty I owe, in the relation in which I stand to the dear children ; and the interest I am bound to take in their welfare, who, (as I have been,) must continue to be dependent upon you, for education, for example, and (Heaven look down upon them in compassion) for life and happiness, which, like mine, you will, perhaps, one day, regardlessly sport away : All these considerations call upon me now to speak plainly to you.

As to what farther relates to myself, give me leave just to add to what I said before, That humanity would have suggested to almost any man but you, the generous sentiment, of even anticipating the supplies of my little wants, at the time when you saw my peace and happiness depended upon your doing so. But, surely, at all events, justice forbids your withholding them afterwards ;

wards; knowing, as you did well know, that my life must pay the forfeiture. For this you may only please to recollect the promise you made to me, when I laid before you the opinion of my physicians at E—b—h; and how you kept that promise. You have bubbled me out of my life—and I value it not.

But, Sir, I desire you will mark what I am now going to say to you, in the presence of that God, to whom, most assuredly, one day, you will be accountable; and whom, I solemnly invoke upon this occasion. * * *

* * * * *

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. G—t.

I am much obliged to you for shewing me this letter of Mr. S—te's; which would have surprised and astonished me some months ago; but now, nothing of the kind can. He, however, and all concerned, are certainly under particular obligations to you, for your prudent conduct in regard to it,

I am not able to enter into a detail of facts, which will appear when I am gone, and speak for themselves, to the full satisfaction of you, and the world. I shall only intreat the favour of you, in the meantime, to believe, upon the word of a dying man, that this letter appears to have been wrote at an unguarded moment, as it exhibits things in a light, which never reached my ears or eyes before; and is flatly contradicted, by numberless letters of Mr. S—te's in my custody, and excerpts of which, I laid before him: And, by the whole of his behaviour, when in this country, by the face of the transaction, by his conversation in all companies, where

where he declared his approbation and fondness of what had been done ; and entertained me, and every body, in private and in public, with the schemes of improvements he was to make on R-t—l-t ; which he was to make a beautiful thing of ; was to purchase more property in the neighbourhood, and to entail the same, for the future provision of widow and children, &c. As these things were daily boasted of by him in public companies, and have been, ever since, the subject of conversation among the people to whom they were said ; I leave it to you, to reconcile those with this letter, if you can.—They are above my reach, and, as such, I have long since given them up.

As to the entail itself, by which I have lost my life, I shall only say at present, that I have the strongest claim that can be to candour and justice from you, and from the world ; when I ask you to believe that I had the strongest motive to a step so uncommon, as a man, in his own life-time, making over his estate to an adopted son, and restricting himself to a pension of half the value of it. But when you consider, that the motive to this, was no less than the preservation of my life, the wonder vanishes. I had felt from sad experience, and been told by every physician, with whom I advised, that my life depended upon two points absolutely : *viz.* My giving up all attention to business, which could create the smallest degree of anxiety or vexation in my mind ; and avoiding the climate of Britain, at least in the winter seasons, for some years. These motives had determined me to entail my estate, not upon my daughter, who was unequal to the task of carrying on the improvements, &c. as you know ; but upon one of the male cadets of my family, who was equal to the undertaking. Things were in this situation with me, when a chance conversation about R-c—d made us both, in a kind of half joke half earnest, propose R-c—d as the subject of my entail, and future representative of my family. This, however, immediately became serious on both sides ; and a friendly contract was extended by an uncle
of

of Mr. S—te's; in consequence of which, we both came to S—l—d, and had the same contract ratified and confirmed in terms, by an unalterable deed of entail, now on the register. All this in the strongest terms of friendship and mutual confidence, especially on my side, as appears, by my putting my life in Mr. S—te's hand; an article which depended on his honour; whilst every other article, upon either side, is legally secured.—You know, I have fulfilled, and more than fulfilled, every prestation on my side.—You see, likewise, that Mr. S—te has not fulfilled any; and now refuses to fulfil every article, on his side; by which my life is gone, and my estate fast going, to destruction.

As to what you tell me of Mr. W—m—fs, the attorney, demanding his money, what can I say to it? You know Mr. S—te wrote, that he was to remit that money, after delay of only three posts, in September last: In consequence of which, we had promised him his money at the term in November last. I hope I am not answerable for any man's integrity, but my own.—My person Mr. W—m—fs may seize; I am not able to go out of his way;—but he will not be able to keep it long. He will not now, I believe, find a physician in E—b—h that will undertake for that. My business here is with physicians chiefly, and to try to raise money upon Mr. S—te's bond; which is all the fund I have, to provide a house for my family, the house where they live being purchased by another. If money can be got upon that, Mr. W—m—fs shall be very welcome to the preference. My family may take their chance: I shall recommend them to the guardians whom I shall appoint to see justice done to my estate, and representation, in terms of the entail.—They will find, when I die, many letters wrote by Mr. S—te to me; and copies of letters which I wrote to him; also a very considerable, and a very just claim I have on Mr. S—te on former scores. You and the world will then see, when these letters are examined, under what a mask of friendship I have been f-d-c-d, b-t-y-d, and m-d-r-d, by a man
who

who is possessed of an immense fortune, and basely left me to perish, for want of subsistence, the moment he got me in his power.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te

St. A—d—s, May 15th, 1773.

You may be surpris'd at receiving a letter from me. When you have read it, indeed, you ought to be surpris'd. But, Sir, such is the nature of mankind, that, when put to the test, every individual will always be found to act in character with himself. When I write as a friend, I write without reserve, in the honest language which sincere friendship dictates; regarding, chiefly, the discharge of my duty towards my friend, and the exoneration of my own conscience, in the quality of a real friend: That once done, I hold myself absolved. There lies no blame upon me, when my friendship is rejected; and though I do not now, as formerly, write merely as a friend, let it not surprise you, that you do not see me exhibit myself in a style unbecoming humanity, or without a due regard to that decency, which a man owes to himself. My present subject is business, and of the most interesting nature. When I returned to E—b—h, on the 12th of this month, after conveying Mrs. S—te to D—n---d-e, Mr. G—t shew'd me a letter of yours, in which you inform him, that you are worth no more than 800*l.* *per annum*; whilst, at the same time, you are vested in the property of my estate, in virtue of an irrevokable deed; by which you have bound yourself to pay to me in money, in annuity, and for your son's education, to the amount of 900*l.* *per annum*; besides considerable sums, which you have likewise bound yourself to lay out instantly, in finishing the

the improvement of the estate, and to bring it, for your son's interest, to the value of 1000 l. *per annum*; which it will be worth, when the bargain is fulfilled upon your side, as it has been upon mine. Now, you tell Mr. G—t, his clerks, and the world, (for these things ought not to be kept secret by people of business; they ought to be divulged, for the good of society, so soon as the facts are ascertained: and who is to doubt your own authority in the matter?) that, in your transaction with me, you have only involved me in your bankruptcy, and reduced an innocent man, your friend and guest, to beggary and want; which I have actually felt, even at the hazard of life, ever since you have been in possession of my estate. What is most astonishing to us now, is the very different accounts which you gave us of your circumstances, at, and long after the transaction, when you constantly exhibited yourself as a man of an opulent fortune; and condescended on particular subjects in E—l—d, and in the counties of L—r—k and C—k, as near as we can recollect; from your own information, to the amount of at least 2600 l. *per annum*. As you do not now tell us, in what manner you have lost that great fortune, in the course of a few months, do you mean, that we should believe, that you knew yourself to be bankrupt at the time you involved me? I hope, not; because, in that case, your family would be subjected to an injury much greater than the loss of fortune; your son, and mine particularly, who will still have a fortune by me, which no power on earth can deprive him of: But alas, what can restore his honour to him, when it will be remembered in what manner he came by it, and I was defrauded of it?—You have rendered this subject so delicate and so intricate, that even I, who am not less interested than you, for the honour of a family, which has now my representation, as well as yours, am at a loss how to express myself upon it.

As to my own particular, you know, that I am not worth a shilling in the world, but in dependence from you; and you tell me you are bankrupt. At same

H

time,

time, I am engaged here for R-c—d's board and education; a debt which must daily increase against me, unless I put a stop to it; and what then shall become of him? Mr. G—t has likewise presented me with a demand upon him for balance of some interests unpaid of debts, the principals of which were cleared last year. You know, likewise, that a part of my annuity, which was due in January last, is still resting. It is true, Mrs. S—te told me, that you desired that I might draw for that some time ago; but I wished not to trouble you, so long as I could make any shift. These demands amount to about 100 l.; and you know, I can answer no demands, otherwise than by drawing upon you. As I only stopt at E—b—h a little, I told Mr. G—t, that I would return next week, which is term-time, and settle these matters. My intention is, not to draw upon you, if I can possibly avoid it, till I hear from you, in answer to this: Or, if I am obliged to draw in the interim, it shall be for as small a sum as possible, only to answer the demand of interest, for the sake of credit; as it will look ill, to make an excuse about such trifles.

Whatever has reduced you to this situation, you must allow it hard, that I should be so involved. But, besides that it is not my disposition to show resentment to any one in distress, your family, *my son*, claims sympathy.—There is nothing in my power, in which I am not ready to join you for mutual relief.—My estate has lately been surveyed, and estimated, by good judges, that, could it be let, it would give, just now, 700 l. *per annum*; and that, if you had fulfilled your engagements, it would soon be worth more than 1000 l. *per annum*.

Such is the nature of these engagements, that it is gone from me; that it cannot be let; that no man dares take it; that no man can let it; and, as you hold it, and neglect it, in place of clearing 1000 l. it is evident you may lose as much. Thus, every thing is reversed: All is reduced to a state of progression from bad to worse. What have been your views, in doing this, are best known

known to yourself. Meantime, I can only subscribe myself, the most distressed and most abused

(Signed) H—— H—k—f—n.

P. S. Mr. G—t took particular notice to me of two other heads mentioned in your letter, besides that of your insolvency ; one, throwing all blame upon your wife. To this subject, I was not qualified to speak positively, as I cannot know what may, or may not have passed betwixt man and wife, in private ; but, certain it is, that nothing like that ever happened in my presence, till after I carried out your uncle to B—k R—k, to ask you to destroy the contract, for reasons needless to repeat here. I remember then, indeed, that your uncle, after talking with you, became very solicitous with me, not to insist on that head ; in which he made no secret, that he had your son's interest chiefly at heart. I remember, also, that, in the end, your wife came and joined in the solicitation, with tears ; in which she seemed to be most anxious about her husband's honour. I remember also, that, upon that occasion, you joined with her, in assuring me, that you never meant to break one article of your engagements ; and that you would much more than perform them all.—These facts, and the pains which you took to convince some other gentlemen of my acquaintance and yours, since, that you had used no means, in obtaining such an advantageous bargain of me, were, and are convincing proofs to me, that you acted, through the whole, from your own proper motives. Besides, I am conscious never to have deserved a bad office from Mrs. S—te, but, on the contrary, that I cannot believe her capable of forming a design to ruin me.—The other head, is, a proposal for my becoming steward for you upon my estate. My situation, in every respect, is so well known to you, that I could not suppose you serious in that ; and therefore, it requires no answer, further, than if you meant it as an insult, it is, Sir, very ill-timed.

H 2

LETTER,

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te,

June 13. 1773.

Yours, of the 29th *ultimo*, is on my table. My former letters, during the course of twelve months, * have given you such repeated accounts, and such distinct views of matters here, as would render it the highest folly in me to say any thing more on the subject. My last to you, and one since to Mrs. S—te, were, and for ever must be, my last on that topic.

You assure me, I have neither dealt with a bankrupt nor a deceiver, but with a man of honour and probity; and tell me, that, meantime, I ought to be satisfied with the loss of my fortune and my life, since your son will be liable to pay the price, after I am dead, as he will then have a large fortune, independent of mine.----This is consolatory, and no less candid a declaration of your views in regard to me.

In return, Sir, give me leave to remind you, that I have always behaved to you with the strictest candour and consistency, of which I now give you the last instance. When I found that you had published your insolvency, I appointed an agent, to appear, at times, for my interest, and lodged my papers with him for that purpose; and, as I certainly am as just a creditor as any you can have, and the one in greatest distress, as my life has all along been at stake, which you now tell me you was sensible of, and candidly declare it still to be your aim, I ordered him to correspond with your agent; and, unless that he saw he was to be paid soon, to put your bond in the register, and procure justice to me, by any possible means, before the end of summer; being conscious, that I should have no relish for the caudle you

* These letters unfortunately Mr. H—k—f—n has no copies of: They were all upon the subject of the improvements; and explained fully to Mr. S—te, the bad consequences which would arise to himself, by his neglect, as in fact happened.

you promise me after I am dead, whether it shall then fall to be cooked by yourself, or by R-c---d.

We certainly now fully understand one another, on the great point you have so long contested: Let, therefore, all further duplicity, sham, or evasion, be for ever laid aside: There remains no more room; indeed, there is no more time for that game. If you are determined that I shall die, I am determined it shall be like a man, defending myself by all the powers of justice and truth; and, if I must die, I shall certainly die hard, when so fenced:---The victory will neither be cheap nor honourable to you.

You tell me to take your son from Mr. B---n, who is, you say, a very improper person to have the tuition of him.---This is done; and, for the reason you assign, was I able to write the detail and particulars, I would send you such an atrocious history, as would strike you with horror. But you likewise give another reason why you desire this thing, *viz.* Because his expence there was too high for you.---Yet you do not tell me how I shall dispose of him, or whether I shall send him home to you. He is at present with me, under the tuition of a young man, highly recommended, at the rate of 15 l. *per annum*, with bed, board and washing. Please let me know, whether you would have me send R-c---d to you, with, or without the governor.---Your commissioners were appointed to meet here about ten days ago. M-j-r M-l-v-le and Mr. S---g--r deserted this diet. I had resigned long before. Mr. G---t, singly, could not act in quality of commissioner; but, as agent for you, he inspected the steward's accompts, and made a very strict examination into the state of the farms, which greatly surpasses his expectation, as much as they do any representation that I ever made to you of their value. The losses, however, on that crop, from the badness of the season, were found to be considerable; but would have been much inferior to the rest of the country, had not the loss arising from the want of the houses, which should have been built the year before, doubled the article.

ticle. This loss will be greater next year, as the crop will be greater ; and although, if your plan succeeds, I will not live to see it, I tell you once for all, that you will find every article come to pass as I have often warned you.----You have only to peruse my former letters, and make the calculation.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mrs. S—te.

June 1773.

I received your letter of the 22d *ultimo*, some days ago, and have considered it with the deepest concern, and with no less amazement. You then tell me, in truth, that I am ruined;—that Mr. S—te is actually bankrupt;—that the great fortune which I have heard so much of, never had existence. It can serve no purpose for me to expostulate upon the injury done me, and the deceit put upon me, as you have shown me that it was not done in ignorance, and I know it is without remedy.—I am sorry that my ruin can yield Mr. S—te no advantage; on the contrary, it only serves to hasten his own. My estate, which would have enriched any other man, proves a weight to sink him; and, in place of relieving, must infallibly contribute to drown him so much the sooner, by his laying hold of me in that situation: It is true, when he and I are both gone, my estate will remain to R—c—d; this is the only good which can result.—Alas! the purchase is dear.

The first public intelligence which I received of Mr. S—te's bankruptcy, was from the clerks in Mr. G—t's office, when Mr. H—b—n and I returned to E—n—b—h from D—n—d—e. I then wrote to Mr. S—te, to which I must refer you; as that letter contains a full answer

answer to all the contents of this of yours, and all that I ever can say on the subject.

R—c—d, I have taken from Mr. B—n; he is at present with me, and a governor to teach him: But I am without the means of subsisting myself or them, long. However, while I have any, they are welcome to share in it.

I have laid up your chaise, the new entry of which, would otherwise have fallen to be paid at this period. R—c—d's charities at St. A--d----s stop in course: And the poor boy, whom I intended to educate along with him, I was obliged to leave behind. What horror is in this reverse of things! Heavens grant me a speedy release from it! I detest the light of day; and the presence of society is an inexpressible torture to me.

What is to be done with A—y, I know not: Had I the means of defraying the expence, I would carry her to D—l--n. You had so often assured me that I might rely upon my annuity being punctually paid, that I did not hesitate to pay away my last shilling.

P. S. I know it is needless to suggest, that was Mr. S—te to dispose of some of his small subjects, while it is yet time, and attend to R--c—d's estate here, (which, without the gift of prophecy, will be the only one he ever will inherit) that would relieve us all. But he is so bent upon my destruction, that he will not see his own goes hand in hand with it: Yet he will most certainly feel it.

LETTER, Mr. H--k--f--n to Mrs. S—te.

July 12th, 1773.

Not one word, Madam, from I—l—d since May. Heaven and earth! what is proposed to be done?
What

What is to become of me? What is to be done with your children? What must the world think? What shall I think? Into whose hands have I committed my life, my fortune? And what purposes has that confidence been converted to?

In the name of all that comes under the idea of justice, of common sense, or common honesty, can there be a man on earth so mad, as not to be sensible, that I ought either to have got back my estate, or the price agreed for it?

Had I the means of subsistence, the children (who are most deserving) should be welcome to share the last mite with me: But I am a man without a home, and without the means of procuring one; and winter will soon be upon me. Where am I to look for a shelter? Surely I know not.

R-c—d would have had a fine fortune here, had his father been disposed to do justice to me, and to him, in fulfilling the terms upon which he obtained the right to it: But it must go fast to ruin; and will most assuredly be the means of sinking the man who has formed such amazing views, in regard to the possession of it.

The distress to which I am reduced, in point of health, as well as circumstances, must justify, in the eyes of all mankind, whatever steps may be pointed out to me, for relief from such unheard-of oppression.

You wrote to me, to endeavour to put a countenance upon things to the world here. Alas! did you not hear that Mr. S—te had published his own insolvency here, as well as grossly thrown out reflections upon others, by way of palliation for his own unwarrantable conduct? A man's credit, Madam, like a lady's reputation, is a thing of so delicate a nature, that, when once blasted, although by the falsest breath in hell; whatever steps may be afterwards taken to patch it up, it remains for ever after dubious with the world. Mr. S—te makes no difficulty to hazard such points: A behaviour much more atrocious, and much more odious, than even

even f—d in the transactions which regard R—c—d and me.

R—c—d continues to behave in a way to be approved of, and, I think, promises well, if he is taken care of: A pity such a boy should be lost. Good Heavens! what an astonishing scene does Mr. S—te's breach of paction open to the world, and especially to those who are become victims to it!

God is my witness, that I have never turned my back, or wished to turn my back, upon any one article to which I subjected myself.—I gave up my estate to Mr. S—te freely, and in unreserved confidence, as to an honest man, and a friend.—I have likewise discharged the duty of a parent to R—c—d; and shall continue to do so, to the utmost of my power, and as far as justice and rectitude, fortified by law, can support me. What that will amount to, I am now enquiring; for, of myself, I am equally ignorant and unfit for this sort of business, which Mr. S—te has cut out for me.

You first (upon the road betwixt E—b—h and P—p—k) let me into the secret, "That the fortune which I had always, till then, been given to know, was left to R—c—d by your uncle, has no existence." * Mr. S—te has likewise informed me, and the world, that he either never had any of his own, or else it also is now gone.—If these are facts, then it follows, that the only certain fortune that R—c—d has in view, is that which has been obtained from me; and the conditions on which that was obtained, being f—d—l—t—y broken, it also will be found to be of little value to him.—Had these conditions been fulfilled, he would have acquired, by that transaction, an addi-

* Here was now a deceit likewise in Mrs. S—te; for, in fact, the uncle left 40,000 l. which is entailed to the father in life, to the son in fee, and to a bastard son of the uncle's, failing young S—te. This was said upon the road, as she was returning to I—l—d from S—l—d, the year after the entail was made.

tion of at least 30,000l. or 40,000l.† But, as his father pursues a plan for sinking the value of that estate, in place of improving it, which alone were the conditions upon which he obtained it, and the claims which are secured to me upon it, must daily accumulate, and which, no doubt, my heirs will take care to make good in the end; it is easy to be seen, that this estate will also be lost to him.

What do you think must be the sentiments of the gentlemen in this country, who heard Mr. S—te boast so much, when here, of the fine things he would do in this country; of the estate he was to buy and entail, for the provisions of widows and younger children, &c.? They, as well as I, were deceived by his bravadoes: We never questioned his sincerity.

I have now removed from that scene—But where can I settle, where my misfortunes will not attend me? R—c—d and his governor I have likewise with me; as I could not, you may easily believe, leave them a burden upon my wife. Miss S—te remains with my wife and daughter at St. A—d—s, till some other method is fallen upon to dispose of her.

Mr. S—te wrote me one letter, since your arrival in I—l—d, urging me to concur in a project for ruining R—c—d's estate, to relieve him;—an effect, by the by, which I am certain it would not have produced: This, he urged, no body could call us to an account for, but R—c—d; which, he said, was not to be feared. I

was

	L.	s.	d.
† S—te often said to Mr. H—k—f—n, that he would lay out 5000l. to make a house, offices, gardens, hot-houses, orchard, &c. on his son's estate	5000	0	0
Estate to be made worth 1000l. <i>per annum</i> , at 30 years purchase	30000	0	0
Trees planted out, and to be planted out on the estate, which would have been worth, to the heirs of entail, at least 10,000l. or 12,000l.—say	10000	0	0
	<hr/>		
	L.	45000	0 0

was so much shocked with that proposal, and the terms made use of to reconcile me to it, that, in answering his letter, I was not able to speak to that article.—My God! what has Mr. S—te ever discovered in my principles, to make him think of me, that no more than a prospect of indemnity is requisite, to induce me to an act of v-l—y, and aggravated by such atrocious circumstances?—For, Madam, who were they who were proposed to combine in a project, for ruining the only estate that the poor boy has in prospect? Why, truly, *his two fathers*.—O my God! what am I come to? After making me a fool, is it also thought possible to make me a knave? I may die a poor man; I may even die, as Mr. S—te has all along endeavoured, for want^v of the means of prolonging life:—be it so; if Providence is pleased to suffer such intentions to take place: But still it depends upon myself, to die an honest man; and I will always prefer dying an honest man, to living otherwise. In spite of all the distress which I have suffered, and am still further threatened with, I am so far from being disposed to concur in any scheme to defraud and ruin the child, to whom I am bound, in the eyes of God and man, to discharge the duty of a parent, that, to my last breath, I will contend for justice to him, and to myself.

You know, Madam, that this scheme has been insisted on from the beginning: Soothing, bullying, scurrility, flattery, have, in their turns, been used, from the day that I disposed my estate, to this hour, in order to make me yield to it. Am I left to conclude, from all this, that Mr. S—te's intention, from the first, had been, so soon as the writings were confirmed, to put me to d—th, and then to appropriate R—c—d's estate to his own use, depriving me of life and fortune, and the heirs of entail of all the improvements which (shall I believe?) he only bound himself to make as a blind, in order to get things into his power? Whether this was his premeditated intention, or not, it is certain, that this, and this only, has been steadily pursued.

Had Mr. S—te ever proposed any scheme, agreeable to the principles of honour and honesty, he would have found me at all times ready to do any thing for the mutual ease and advantage of all parties concerned. But I never can think, that even the unparalleled circumstances of distress to which he has reduced me, much less bullying or flattering, would be any alleviation of my guilt, could I, by such means, be prevailed upon, to abandon the paths of rectitude, and dispense with that integrity which every man is bound to maintain in his conduct, through all the duties of life.

This contest is now, however, ended; and we shall see next, by an appeal to that science which no honest man ever had use for, but which, society has been obliged to invent for bad occasions, what *salvo* justice will point out for the relief of the injured. I have the honour to be, Madam, your most humble servant, &c.

P. S. Let no more letters be directed for me to F—e.

This moment three letters have come in from Mr. S—te.—There is, however, nothing material in them, but what is already answered here. He still urges selling the estate, and me to be the f—l and the v—l—n to attempt it: Well does he know, that the nature of the conditions upon which he obtained the possession of it, put that out of his power.—But there needs no more words upon this head. Let Mr. S—te either instantly give me back my estate, by which I will gain at least 20,000*l.* or else pay the price at which he bought it, by which R—c—d will gain 40,000*l.* This, Madam, I persuade myself, every man on earth, as well as Mr. S—te himself, will judge to be fair and honest dealing betwixt man and man.

LETTER,

L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te.

July 1773.

Yours, of the 28th of June, which I received just as I was leaving R—t—l—t, lies before me. You say well, Sir, in saying, that it was not expected such letters would ever pass betwixt us. It appears, *ex facie*, from the nature of the transaction, at least, that I had no presentiment of what has given occasion to these letters. No body will suppose, that I would have put my estate into any man's hands, had I entertained the smallest opinion, that that man would have availed himself of that confidence, to deprive me of my life also.—The only circumstance in the bargain, that was left entirely upon honour, was your punctual payment of my annuity, to enable me, in my bad state of health, to go abroad, upon which, you was told by the physician, my life depended: And let me ask you, Sir, *Was it for that reason, that you put that out of my power ever since?*

You say, you *thought we were to be on a friendly footing, and to be one family*. True again, Sir: I also remember to have heard all that, and that you was fond of farming; that it always was your taste, and your desire; and that you would improve R—c—d's estate, and live upon the produce of it, while your own great fortune was to accumulate all the while, as you would only have to pay out of it my small annuity, which, you know, was to be punctually remitted to me, wherever my bad state of health should make it necessary for me to go.—All this, and much, very much more in this style from your side, was the prelude to a bargain, by which, nevertheless, you have since made shift very near to strip me of life and fortune. However, Sir, it has so far pleased Providence to frustrate your schemes, that I am not yet dead; and I trust in the same Providence, that I may still live much longer than you wish me to do; not for any desire that I have for life, but for the
 sake

fake of justice. You know, that I disposed my estate to your son, not to you, upon the following conditions, viz. 1^{mo}, That the estate should be his only ;—and his, free of all burden.

2^{do}, That you should instantly pay me 4000 l.

3^{tio}, That you should pay me, punctually, an annuity of 500 l. *per annum*.

4^{to}, That you should, within the space of five years, not only not draw any thing from the estate, but lay out several thousand pounds, within that space of time, in improving the estate, building a house upon it, &c. for the interest of your son, and the other heirs of my entail.

These, Sir, with some others which I cannot suppose you have forgot, and therefore I need not repeat them here, were the express conditions upon which you obtained possession of my estate ; and, you know well, were the only conditions upon which you could have obtained the possession of it ; and still are certainly the only conditions upon which you can honestly continue to possess it. It must be without offence to any honest man, that I desire either to have my estate back, or else the price for which I sold it. We shall soon see, whether this is an honest request of mine, or not.—Mean-time, when you hold my estate, I must insist upon these conditions being fulfilled. I have this day drawn upon you, at twenty-one days sight, for the annuity due me the 17th instant ; the last 50 l. which I drew for, was the balance of annuity due in January last, of which I had before received 200 l. I shall soon draw upon you for a considerable sum upon R—c—d's account, as you have made no remittance for his education of a long time.—For, considering the pass to which you have brought things, you must not expect that any of the produce of my estate will be allowed to be applied to that, or any other purpose, so long as the improvements are unfinished.

You have had the highest possible proofs of my benevolence and generosity : in return, you have been
pleased

pleased to put my good-nature and forbearance to such a stretch, as never had an example. It is saying nothing, to take notice only, that through the whole of it you have totally neglected every thing that becomes a gentleman, and rendered it absolutely necessary for me to put you in remembrance of that.

The state of this account is making out.—You will please also to hold yourself in readiness, to pay up the balance due upon your bond to me, which I shall be obliged to draw for, so soon as I shall get an extract from the register; to which, I have just now sent it. That balance is, in principal and interest, about 1200*l.* which I have pressing and instant occasion for, to purchase a habitation for myself and my family; which we have been without too long, for your credit, as well as our ease, if you could have prevailed upon yourself to pay a just regard to such matters.

I have found a proper company for Miss S—te to go to I—l—d, about six weeks hence; it is certainly worth waiting till then, as I should think it a matter of some importance, to consider what sort of company she is to be associated with, upon so long a journey.

Whenever you find yourself disposed to act upon the principles of equity, you will find me ready to coincide in any rational and honest proposal, for the ease and advantage of your family: Meantime, you must excuse me for taking every possible measure to guard myself, and the heirs of entail, from your injuries.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te.

SIR,

E—b—h, the 22d, 1773.

I wrote you fully last week, and have only now to acquaint you, that I arrived here this day, for the purpose

pose of settling the small account which I mentioned; And as I find the principal one is a claim of R—B—'s, who, I have reason to believe, is no stranger to the situation I am in, at least I know he can guess pretty well how matters are; I have thought proper to let him know he is to be paid this night by me, and have drawn upon you, of this date, for the balance of my annuity, due since January last; out of which, I am to clear all these small matters, which do not exceed 50*l*. Thus, these little dirty matters will be taken out of the way. When I am to be done with all such, and at ease, God only knows. R—c—d I left well—Miss S—te and my daughter are both with me; and we are going a day or two to Sir T—m—s H—n's. We all offer best wishes to Mrs. S—te and you. And am, &c.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mrs. S—te.

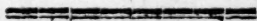
M A D A M,

12th August, 1773.

Yours of the 27th of July, gives me the deepest concern, and adds greatly to that distress, both of mind and body, which Mr. S—te's amazing behaviour, and breach of paction, has reduced me to. I trust in God, Madam, that you will be preserved to your children, and them to you, to be a mutual comfort to one another many years. How could you do me the injustice, to think that I had left Miss S—te in an improper situation? She will tell you quite otherways. She is now making preparations for her journey, and will set out probably in a week or two hence. As to R—c—d, since the law has determined that it is impossible for me to recover my estate from Mr. S—te and his heirs of entail; so it has also determined, that it is impossible for Mr. S—te to deprive me of my son: And as his education

education has, unfortunately for him, been formerly so much neglected and interrupted, that he is already a man in stature, and only a child in his progress to knowledge, I can by no means allow him to be any more hurt in that way.—You have the experience, Madam, both Mr. S—te and you, how great a benefit it is to both of you to travel. Come and see your son, and be assured of a hearty welcome. This will do good to you both: His going to see you, would be an irreparable injury to him. After the disappointment which I had in Mr. B—n, I am determined not to separate from my son, but to superintend and regulate his education myself, so long as I live.—The rest must be left to Providence. I shall also put him in good hands, before I die; and I hope he will be an honour to me, and all his connections; for, indeed, he is a promising boy: and I am now perfectly sensible, that the grievous complaints brought against him to you and to me by B—n, were great falsehoods. I have the honour to be, Madam, &c.

P. S. Captain H—b—n has seen your son's estate here; to whom I refer you for accounts concerning it. He went to St. A—d—s yesterday, and returns here again in a few days. Adieu.



L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mrs. S—te.

R-t—l—t, August 18th, 1773.

Your present situation is become the subject of unsupportable distress to me, and makes the constant subject of the most serious conversation betwixt good Captain H—b—n and me. Since you have desired the entail to be destroyed, and to have your son sent to

K

L—l—d,

I--I--d, though you know the opinion of an eminent lawyer formerly, that that was impossible ; yet, to gratify your request, if possible, other advice has now been taken ; and all agree, that it is impossible to restore me to the possession of my estate, or to absolve Mr. S--te from the obligations of improving it for his son. Some equitable, and, if possible, amicable measure must, therefore, be found out, to reconcile the interests of all the parties, and for doing justice.

Captain H--b--n humanely offers his good offices.—He has examined your son's estate here with attention ; and has, I dare say, mortified some of your friends at St. A--d--s not a little, by telling them, that it will be better than 1000 l. *per annum* to R--c--d.

He likewise proposes to put off his journey to L--d--n, that he may go home the shortest way, and take Miss S--te, with your carriage and horses, under his protection.—He has, indeed, proposed my going along ; which I would readily do, were it not too late in the season for me to go and return. I fancy, about a fortnight hence, they will set off.—My God ! what becomes of you, in the mean time, knowing your backwardness to apply for advice or assistance from any body in your distress ? I tremble to think, that that unhappy reserve will one day cost you your life, and the ruin of your family. Pray Heaven to protect you, and guide you to a proper judgment in the discharge of these important duties.—If you throw away your life, O think what will be the fate of your unfortunate children, when they shall have lost their mother ! Whose protection will they have then, whom to interpose between them and ruin, as you have hitherto done ? O Madam, think of this : I conjure you, in the name of Heaven, not to abandon yourself, and, along with you, your children, to destruction. Could Mr. S--te be prevailed upon, to give his business into hands who will take care of it, and retire here, where he will be free from care, and free from expence, for two or three years ; in which time, the improvement may easily be finished :

finished: What a happiness would it be for himself, and how effectually would this relieve us all from our present distress, as well as from future apprehensions? This, you know, was the plan he most wisely laid down himself at first, and is still the best plan which can possibly be adopted for the interest of himself and family.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mrs. S—te.

E—b—h, August 21st, 1773.

Exhausted, Madam, with fatigue of mind and body, I arrived here half an hour ago; and have now committed your last orders to your agent Mr. G—t, who is preparing memorials for different lawyers on the subject of your request. Pray Heaven direct them to something that will at last put any period to this correspondence.—Two years has my fortune been sacrificed, and my life at stake, both in the hands of a man who has treated them as a boy does a shuttle-cock; only with less respect, and more negligence—if nothing more was intended; and, at last, I am reproached and insulted, for daring to complain, or wishing to live, and this from you. Great God! what have I lived to hear and see?—I trust, Madam, you will not fail to keep the appointment which Captain H—b—n has made at D—l—n.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. G—t.

October 18th, 1773.

I have read Mr. S—te's letter to you, which, I see (but for what purpose, he only knows) he desired you

to communicate to me.—I observe, he says, that, three years hence, he will have a better income; and then he will be able to remit, &c. Is this to be understood as a declaration, that, for three years to come, I am to expect the same treatment that I have met with for two years past?

Considering the distressed situation to which he has reduced me, humanity would have suggested to him, to have spared this insult: But, sad experience has taught me, that he is no less a stranger to humanity, than he is to h—y.—I must therefore request of you, to communicate no more such letters to me. All correspondence and connection, in a friendly way, must, now and for ever, be at an end betwixt that gentleman and me; and a paper war I have no taste for.

The attacks made upon my life, for two winters already past, I am in no hazard of forgetting, though he had not added this threatening of three more to come. If I perish in this situation, I presume, no honest man will envy him either his profit or honour, in the m-r-d-r he seems to plume himself upon. 'Tis true, he enjoys the pleasure, at present, to know that I am here, laid up in the greatest jeopardy of life, from the climate; in want, and every hour expecting to be carried to a gaol, from debts accumulating upon me; my horses and carriage in a livery stable; myself, my son and his governor, in a boarding-house; and nothing to balance all this expence, but his returned draught, and his bond, which he likewise refuses to pay; my wife and family coming to town at the term, that is, in a few weeks, and no place ready for their reception, for want of the means, of which he has stripped us: Add to this, the reproaches of the world, and especially of those who were once my friends, who have seen me make a present of my estate to a *man of straw*, who, in return, has overwhelmed me with all this load of oppression, and now insults me under it.—Great God! and all this under the mask of friendship.—L. 800 *per annum*!—This, now, under the hand of the man who vaunted so much

to me, to you, and to all the world, of his great riches, and who obtained possession of my estate, by engaging to pay me 900*l.* *per annum*, out of that opulent fortune, which, he now blushes not to declare, he never had ; for you know, that, by his bargain with me, my estate was provided to R-c—d only.—But, my good friend, adieu.

P. S. No doubt, he hugs himself with the soothing hopes, that every post will bring him the account of my sinking under his oppression.—You may be sure, that nothing but my affection for R-c—d has prevented my exposing this man, long before now ; and now, you see, I am compelled to it at last, in spite of all my reluctance. You see, he says he has offered my own estate for my annuity, and to be accountable to him.—Have not I had experience enough of his way of dealing, to teach me not to have any more accompts with him, than those which I am already engaged in ?—But, mark the insolence of this proposal—My own estate for my annuity ;—and to be accountable to him !—By what means, and upon what conditions, came it to be in his power to insult me with such a proposal ? You see he does not so much as suppose, that he is to pay me what he owes upon bond, though he knows that I am engaged to pay away that money at the term. But what do you think of his writing to you, that he offered to forfeit 3000*l.* ? Who knows so well as you, that this bravado came not from him till many months after he was well assured by you, that he run no risk in making that offer, as it could not take place ? But why do I charge myself here with the horrid task of detecting and answering his chicanery ?—That province falls now to another. The dates and contents of all the deeds and letters, which, you know, fall, in course, to be printed, will soon set every thing in a clear light, which neither he nor I can chicane about ; and sorry am I to think, that this letter now must add one to the number, which was too great before.

LETTER,

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. G—t.

DEAR SIR,

November 11th, 1773.

I have received the bills, amounting to 250 l. which shall place to accompt of Mr. S—te. They have come very *à propos* to serve my credit, in clearing scores, that otherways would infallibly have brought me immediately into shameful distress; such as, two quarters board and lodgings for myself, my son and his governor, which, you know, is always paid here *per* advance. But, though we have almost run one quarter already, the people have been civil enough never yet to mention it to me. I now have it in my power to pay them both quarters, which shall do immediately, as also my stable bill, R—c—d's taylor for his winter-clothes, &c. It seems Mr. S—te does not think of retiring the protested draught, amounting, with expences and interest, to 261 l. and upwards.

What a situation has this man reduced me and himself to? Nor is it in my power any longer to save him; which I have struggled in vain to do, for a long time. I am here confined to an apartment, riding a chamber-horse, and living upon a biscuit and a tea-cup full of milk twice a-day, which I have not the powers to digest; such is the effect of the winter climate upon me; seeing only my physicians and my enraged friends, who have this day (as was intimated to you formerly) drawn upon Mr. S—te, to amount of about 1500 l. Sterling. I would not (in his place) for all his great estate, stand the consequence of non-acceptance; and yet, I doubt not, he will be mad enough to take his ordinary course; and, in expectation of that, they have engaged one to go to I—l—d to prosecute him. What a scene does this man's v—l—y exhibit? I have, however, positively refused to expose the letters, until the accounts come of his

his refusing acceptance.—How I feel for R-c—d!—
This is the last struggle I am able to make for him.

L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Miss S—te.

November 22d, 1773.

I have the happiness of my dear daughter's letter, by her cousin; and, was I able to write, have much to say to her, in return to the affectionate kindness she has expressed to me. Never did I set much value upon life in this world; yet, now, how much do I wish to live a few years for R-c—d's sake, and to do a piece of justice to my dearest daughter, which, at present, is the subject of great uneasiness to me. But I am resigned to the will of Heaven. Reduced, as I am, to a biscuit and half a pint of milk twice a day, without any sleep, and obliged to a chamber horse only for the digestion of these my heavy meals, leaves me no room to flatter myself, that I ever can be blessed with the sight of my dear daughter again. Your mother writes me to send R-c—d to the country with his governor, to live with his cousin.—Tell her from me, that I am too sensible to the rigour and justice of that awful tribunal where I am summoned, to add, in my last moments, to the many follies and trespasses which I have to answer for, the atrocious crime, of abandoning, in my last moments, the important duties which I subjected myself to, in the character of a parent to her son.—Alas! R-c—d's heart is not so moulded, or his principles so formed, as that I dare suffer him to go from under my eye. I could enlarge upon this subject, was I able to write so much as would convince her of this, and of the impropriety of her request; but, as I am not able to write, I have inclosed a few letters on the subject of education, which
were

were printed here last week, which I intreat her to contemplate a little.

When she has done that, she will perceive the cruel injustice which has already been done to her son, and the precious years he has already lost, which, I doubt not, will prevail with her not to entertain any more thoughts of treating, with a criminal neglect, an article of such serious consequence. She may consider this as my last legacy; and I conjure her, as my last request, that, when I am gone, she will exert her utmost endeavours to have R—c—d's education prosecuted with some attention to this plan. I am now instructing Mr. B—l with that view, and shall make it my last request to him, to remain with R—c—d, and to follow my instructions through the course of his education; for which, I shall likewise appoint him some suitable encouragement. Tell her also from me, that I freely and sincerely forgive her the share she had in the deceit put upon me, by which I have lost my life and my fortune; that I beg, in return, she will make it up to you and to R—c—d; that, for your sakes, she will pay a due attention to the preservation of her own health and life; and that I shall never cease to pray for her happiness and prosperity, as fervently, as I now imprecate the sovereign Disposer of blessings, to extend his benign influence, in a peculiar manner, to my dearest daughter, for whom, as I have lived, so I shall certainly die with the true sentiment of an affectionate Papa.

H—N—s H—K—s—N.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mrs. S—te.

December 23d, 1773.

Weak as my hand is, Madam, I took up the pen several days ago, upon receipt of yours of the 14th current,

rent; in order to acknowledge it; but finding myself altogether unable to prosecute that detail, which an answer to yours required; I was obliged to desist.

I have since thought of the only possible way for me to give you any sort of satisfaction; which is, to cause copy what was done (the inclosed) during my late illness; which, from the attack I then sustained, seemed immediately to promise that issue which you so much wish for. My temporary recovery, has put it in my power to suspend the operations of my friends for a little; (which was the first thing I did, for poor R-c—d's sake): Had not that happened, a gentleman from them, would, by this time, have been in I—l—d with all the printed papers, to solicit justice. Yet, what avails this suspense? for the moment that I expire (which is looked for daily here, as well as with you, though with very different views) they will proceed; and even though I live, I cannot hinder them. Mr. S—te, in endeavouring to take away my l—e, took from me all power, and translated it to those hands, whose compassion rescued me from a jail, and from that d—h, which he then flattered himself he had prepared for me, and rendered inevitable. The same hands still support my miserable existence; and, while they are daily advancing for me, with what countenance can I object to their taking the only method they have for reimbursement?

You are conscious, Madam, and Mr. S—te's own conscience must bear witness, that, could he have been prevailed upon to listen to reason, to humanity, to justice, no argument was omitted, on my side, to prevent his embruing his hands in my b—d, and staining his own. The consequences I am not now answerable for.

As to what you say from R—t—l—t, I need say nothing.—Things, there, will always speak for themselves. It is incontrovertible, that, had Mr. S—te fulfilled his engagements for carrying on the improvements, that estate would, by this time, have been in a fair way to free him of the expence of my annuity and his son's education; a way much more advantageous and eligible,

L

than

than the method he chose to take to free himself from these incumbrances; and the printed letters will evince how timely he was advised by me, that the neglect of the improvements would not only cut him out of these advantages, but draw great losses upon him, which he would have found to be very considerable before now, had not my attention prevented them, in a great measure. You say Mr. T—f—l—n found the farm 300l. in debt.—I know he found it 100l. in debt, which the steward, by my intercession, got credit for here, about a week before Mr. T—f—l—n arrived, and with which, he bought oxen for his turnip; which oxen are now in Mr. T—f—l—n's custody. It is true, the farm had been in debt 200l. a little before that; which money, I had likewise procured to the steward last summer, to buy oxen for the grass; and which oxen he had sold again, and, at my sight, paid the debt about a month before Mr. T—f—l—n came here. It is nevertheless certain, that the farm is reduced to such a state, by being thrown back two years, that, without assistance, it must be impossible for Mr. T—f—l—n to recover it: This, Mr. S—te knew at the time when he did it, as the printed letters show, by their dates and contents.

No man was more sensible than I am, that a stranger has an undoubted claim to all the tenderness of humanity; but you must perceive, Madam, that the man who has as—f—n—t—d me, cannot now be represented in that light to my friends, who know the truth.

It is evident to all the world, that, had he, when he formed to himself the plan of m—d—r—g me, and d—f—d—g his son, in place of that, remitted 1000l. to his commissioners, for carrying on the improvements, and 2000l. to preserve my life, and provide for his son's education, (and it is well known he cannot in the least pretend, that it was not in his power to raise that sum) he would, this day, not only have been innocent of the guilt of a m—d—r, which must now, alas for his posterity! execrate his memory for ages to come, but his

his son's estate would also have been in a way to enrich him; from which likewise he will now be cut off. There is nothing more certain, than, what the printed letters will show, I often demonstrated to him, that this small sum of 3000*l.* so applied, would have prevented all the distress which he has brought upon himself and his family, and upon me and my family; would have put his son in possession of 1000*l.* *per annum*, and freed him from all future expences, either on his son's account, or mine. How different this from his present situation, let his own conscience speak. And with what unwearied patience I, at that time, pointed out all this to him, you know well, and the printed letters will for ever testify. I see, by this of yours, that it has not been in my power to open your eyes, more than his: but I tell you, once for all, that it is not now in my power to make things otherwise than they are. The least attention to the principles of common honesty, on his side, would, any time before this, have prevented all. Now, a profuse squandering of money commences on both sides: Thousands will be expended for redressing those injuries, which would have been prevented, by an honest and timely application of fewer hundreds. You will see, in the course of what is going on, that the law, it seems, is so far connected with justice, as neither to overlook the m—d—r, nor defend the r—b—y. It has, you see, also determined, indeed, that my estate has passed for ever from my family to yours; but, thank God, it has also determined, that the man who has m—d—r—d and r—b—d me, can never have it in his power to m—d—r or r—b my heirs (his own son); which, otherwise, he has shown, that he would not hesitate to do, upon the first fit of caprice that might strike him at any time, whether suggested, as in the present case, by avarice, or any other passion.

Thus, I have now, as on all former occasions, without disguise or reserve, informed you of all that I know, or can foresee. Had all parties always acted with the same candour that I have done from the beginning, how

different would the situation of affairs now have been! What havock and desolation, want of probity and integrity produces in human society, falshood and hypocrisy themselves must at last acknowledge, in contemplating their own works. Nothing has happened hitherto, that I did not point out early enough, to have been prevented. For this, I appeal to you, Madam, to Mr. S—te himself, and to the printed letters.—You see also, that every thing has fallen out precisely as I forewarned him; and so he will also find the same in what is yet to come. True it is, Madam, that extreme violence, injustice and oppression, so often repeated, has long called for, and at last extorted, what you are pleased to call rigour; which will not stop now, till reparation is obtained, so far as reparation can be made. 'Tis certain, l—e taken away, cannot be restored; but there is a retribution for that also.

Finally—Once more, I attest you, Madam, I attest Mr. S—te's own conscience, I appeal to the printed letters, to bear witness, when I am gone, to the unwearied pains which I bestowed, to prevent all this. The consequences to those who abused and deceived me, will be seen. I shall be at peace; but I feel extremely for those who are to survive.

What, above all, has astonished me, and strikes every body, is, that your letters have shown so strong a disposition, on your side, to withhold my money, and hasten my destruction, that it is almost impossible to avoid believing, as you declare, that your share has been deep in this mysterious scene. All that is known for certain, at present, is, that I have been ch—t-d out of l—e and f—t—e. Whose hands have been deepest in the tragedy, will doubtless be discovered, in the course of the enquiry which is now begun; and can avail me nothing, as I shall be gone.—That l—e, which I humanely preserved to others, has been brutally taken from me; and amazing it must appear, that you have repeatedly justified the deed, and pled to become accomplice in it. Be it so.—I can no longer doubt it.—You have

have claimed the triumph.—It must now remain with you ; but I dare not wish you joy : for, well I know, the tree will produce far other fruit.—I cannot sit up.—This has been the labour of many days to me ; it is the last. Adieu.

P. S. Why, for truth's sake, has it never been told, where that great fortune, we heard so much of, has vanished to? Mr. S—te vaunted, in a very numerous company at B—kh—l, and on many similar occasions, of an estate he would buy in this country, which, he said, he was to entail, for the provision of widows and younger children.—He told Mr. B—n at St. A—d—s, in a public company at Major N—n's, that he would not grudge to allow 50 l. *per annum* for his son's charities ; and his son has ever since been obliged to another's charity for his own support and education, and as welcome to it as he is worthy of it. Alas ! the spell is broke ; and I foresee, that infamy will spread her baneful wings over all this scene of v—l—y and f—d. And, to add to the misfortune, as if not great enough already, sums are going to be thrown away, where, it is clear as sun-shine, that, in the end, neither party can either save or gain a shilling by litigating ; for, at last, justice will infallibly take place, in the precise terms of the recorded deeds.

MEMORIAL and QUERIES for Mr.
H—k—s—N and Miss H—k—s—N, laid
before Private Counsel.

IT is to be observed, that it appears, by the original minute of agreement betwixt Mr. H—k—f—n and Mr. S—te (here produced),

1^{mo}, That

1^{mo}, That Mr. H—k—f—n bound himself to make over his estate of R—t—l—t to R—c—d S—te, by a deed of entail, according to the laws of S—l—d, and to put R—c—d S—te in immediate possession of the same, clear of all debts, together with the whole stock upon the farms; the estate becoming the sole property of R—c—d S—te, independent of his father, from the date of the contract.

2^{do}, Mr. S—te, upon his side, in return for the above, bound himself to pay to Mr. H—k—f—n an annuity of 600 l. *per annum*, during his life, and 300 l. *per annum* to Miss H—k—f—n during her surivency, after her father's death.—These annuities not to become a burden upon R—c—d's estate of R—t—l—t, but to be paid by Mr. S—te out of his other estates.

3^{tio}, Mr. S—te bound himself, at his own expence also, to carry on and finish the improvements upon R—c—d's estate, and to build a suitable house upon the same, &c. within the space of five years.

4^{to}, Mr. S—te bound himself to defray the expences of R—c—d's education; which was to be entirely under the direction of Mr. H—k—f—n.

5^{to}, Mr. S—te bound himself instantly to pay to Mr. H—k—f—n the sum of 4000 l. Sterling, to enable him to pay off the debts upon R—c—d's estate, and to provide another home for himself, and in lieu of the stock upon the farms, which Mr. H—k—f—n made over to R—c—d, together with the estate as above.

Notwithstanding the terms of the above minute, when the contract came to be extended (by Mr. B—m—sh Mr. S—te's uncle) Mr. H—k—f—n generously, and unasked, having, at that time, absolute confidence in Mr. S—te, as a man of honest and generous principles, struck 100 l. *per annum* out of his own annuity, and also 100 l. *per annum* out of his daughter's annuity; and, further, gave to Mr. S—te the whole product of the estate, and use of the stock upon the farms, during the years in which Mr. S—te had bound himself to build the

the house, and finish the improvements; and further, protracted these years from five to seven.

Upon these last terms, then, thus generously altered by Mr. H—k—f—n, the contract was extended by Mr. B—m—sh (attorney in C—k, and uncle to Mr. S—te) and signed and sealed by Mr. H—k—f—n and Mr. S—te.

No sooner was the contract signed and sealed, than Mr. S—te disclosed his secret intention not to implement sundry of the obligations which he had bound himself to in it, such as the carrying on of the improvements, which, he said, he would leave to be done by his son; and, in the mean time, he would let the estate as it was, for what it could bring, in its then unimproved state.

Alarmed and astonished at this declaration of intended fraud, Mr. H—k—f—n applied to Mr. B—m—sh, and solicited him to use his influence, to prevail with Mr. S—te to agree to destroy the contract, which was not then registered. Upon this occasion, Mr. S—te protested, that he had no intention of breaking through any of the obligations contained in the contract,—that he would faithfully fulfil them all; and Mr. B—m—sh, as would seem, from his partial regard for R—c—d, turned all the force of his mediation, to persuade Mr. H—k—f—n to make himself easy, and to rest upon what Mr. S—te then declared.

Mr. H—k—f—n, however, upon this occasion, in the course of sundry conversations with Mr. B—m—sh, and others, made a full discovery, that these sort of caprices were not new with Mr. S—te, and that he was a most difficult man to fix. Thus, Mr. H—k—f—n, though too late, found himself to be engaged with a man, whom he could no longer regard as an honest man.—But there was no remedy. Things remained upon this footing, till Mr. S—te and Mr. H—k—f—n went to S—l—d, and (after staying some time at R—t—l—t, which Mr. S—te declared himself to be exceedingly fond of, and boasted largely to every body, and

and upon all occasions, of the sums he would lay out, in beautifying and improving it) gave orders to extend the entail, in terms of the contract.

Nevertheless, when the entail came to be signed, Mr. S—te's natural disposition again shewed itself. He declared, particularly, that he would not build a house upon R-t--l--t; because (he said) he had one in I--l--d: And he likewise insisted to have the expence of his son's education restricted to 200 l. *per annum*, and never to exceed that sum.—A sum which is by no means adequate, if ever the boy arrives above the rank of a school-boy.—Here, again, Mr. H—k—f—n stood for justice, and desired rather to destroy the contract. The friends present interposed; and these articles were compromised, upon very unequal terms for R-c—d, and the other heirs of Mr. H—k—f—n's entail, as appears by the subsequent deeds then extended, alluding to these articles.

These things being thus settled, Mr. S—te took possession of the estate of R-t--l--t; appointed commissioners upon it; gave order to have the entail registered, and uplifted some of the rents which were due, with which he set off for I--l--d, as he said, in order to make remittances, and to settle his affairs in that country, so as to return the following spring, early, in order to set about building the house, which, he said, would be the first thing he would do; than which, however, certainly nothing was further from his secret intention. Nevertheless, he continued to keep up the same farce: For, some time after he went to I--l--d, he writes to Mr. H—k—f—n from C—k, of date the 27th July, 1772, thus: “ Yours of the 13th has affected me much; that
 “ you should be obliged to apply to borrow money,
 “ and be refused: By it you learn who will assist you
 “ in your necessities. Suredly, they could not imagine
 “ you had parted with your estate to a man of straw,
 “ or a r--c-l, that would not keep his word; therefore,
 “ yours surprises me much. You need not want money
 “ now, nor never shall again.—I am surprised Mrs.
 “ S—te

" S—te should be so much affected. Surely, she
 " knows there is a plentiful fortune at her command,"
&c.—He writes again, on the 7th of August, to Mr.
 H—k—f—n, thus: " You need not remain in Britain
 " for the want of money; and, believe me, my dear
 " Sir, you shall never want it, while I am worth a shil-
 " ling. If you will not go to F—ce, let me recom-
 " mend your wintering with us; it may be more moist,
 " but it will be more mild. Your air has had a good
 " effect upon Mrs. S—te; I trust in God she will do
 " well," *&c.* In this manner did Mr. S—te cajole
 and shuffle with Mr. H—k—f—n, till the summer 1772
 expired.—It remains now to show what was Mr. S—te's
 real purpose:

It evidently appears, in fact, as well as from the let-
 ters which have passed between Mr. H—k—f—n and
 Mr. S—te, (copies of which are now preparing for the
 press, and originals are here produced) in which this
 point has been fully canvassed, that Mr. S—te had, from
 the beginning, conceived the horrid intention of putting
 Mr. H—k—f—n to death, so soon as he should, by
 means of the transaction being finished, have things in
 his power; and likewise, of d— his own son
 (and Mr. H—k—f—n's adopted son and representative)
 of the estate of R—t—l—t, and particularly, of the ad-
 vantages which were to accrue to him, and the other
 heirs of Mr. H—k—f—n's entail, from the improve-
 ments which Mr. S—te was taken bound to make upon
 that estate in a limited time. It appears also, that Mr.
 H—k—f—n very early discovered that design, and ex-
 postulated with Mr. S—te upon the injustice of it; cal-
 ling upon him, by all the obligations of honour and ho-
 nesty, of religion and morality, to abandon a scheme so
 brutal and so v—l—n—s; but all in vain.—Mr. S—te
 (having seen the opinion of Mr. H—k—f—n's physi-
 cian in June 1772, wherein he declared, that if Mr.
 H—k—f—n should remain in the climate of Britain in
 the winter, it must be at the utmost hazard of his life,
 and what, therefore, he absolutely forbid him to do) re-

solved to make the shortest work, by putting it out of Mr. H—k—f—n's power to go abroad, by withholding his money, notwithstanding that he had given his most solemn promises, at the time when Mr. H—k—f—n shewed him the physician's advice, that he would immediately settle a credit for him at L—d—n, where Mr. S—te was then going, and where he might draw regularly for his annuity, from any part of the world where he might be obliged to go for the recovery of his health.—The fact shows, that nothing was further from his intention than this.—He made haste to remit the sums which were necessary for discharging the debts upon the estate of R—t—l—t, and homologating the transaction which put him in possession of it. But here he stopt.—When desired to remit the remainder for Mr. H—k—f—n's use, he would not advance a farthing; and, the more to distress Mr. H—k—f—n, he refused even to remit for his son's education, or for the support of his wife and daughter, whom he left at R—t—l—t, throwing all a burden upon the estate of R—t—l—t; by which means, that estate, being loaded with all this expence at the critical time when it required the most spirited exertion of money and industry to preserve the improvements which Mr. H—k—f—n had formerly made upon it, and to carry on the improvements which Mr. S—te had bound himself to, has been reduced to such a state, as scarcely to be able to defray its own expences, by the feeble returns it makes. Mr. S—te now likewise conceiving things to be entirely in his power, and at the pass to which he aimed to bring them, laid aside the mask; and, without further ceremony, ordered to put a stop to the improvements, and that the estate of R—t—l—t should immediately be let for what it could bring in its then unimproved state, so to remain for his particular benefit. His letters shew such a scene of duplicity, of contradictions, and chicanery, as is shocking to repeat.—Thus you see him sometimes boasting of his plentiful fortune, at other times, declaring himself to be in no better than
a bankrupt

a bankrupt state, and positively asserting, that he never had the fortune which he boasted of.

The fact is, that Mr. S—te is actually possessed of a large estate, (partly his own, and a great part belonging to his son) and has extensive credit. He has not remitted a shilling for his son's education or support, for upwards of two years past; and Mr. H—k—f—n's draughts upon him for the annuities due to him in July 1773, and January 1774, which were lately sent him for acceptance, together with what he owes Mr. H—k—f—n by bond, ly now all in the hands of Sir W—l—m F—b—s and Co. their house, returned under protest for non-acceptance by Mr. S—te.

The estate of R—t—l—t is at present in the hand of Mr. T—f—l—n, a nephew of Mr. S—te's, sent to S—l—d by his uncle, and vested with a power of attorney from him for that purpose, and to supersede his former commissioners, and who seems to act at present as if he had got a present of it to himself, and was accountable to nobody. He having already discharged the steward to keep the journal, or any accompts by which the product of the estate can be discovered, has likewise put a stop to the improvements, and even ordered the fields to be dressed and laid out, in a way different from that which Mr. S—te is bound to by the entail.

Advice of counsel learned in the law is therefore now desired, to point out what is the most speedy and effectual method to obtain justice on all these heads.

COPY REGISTERED FACTORY,
H—L—N—S H—K—S—N to A—X—D—R
R—B—S—N.

At E—b—h, the twenty-ninth day of March seventeen hundred and seventy-four, in presence of the

M 2

L—ds

L—ds of C—c-l and S—f—n, compeared Mr. D—v—d R—e advocate, procurator for Mr. H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, after-designed, and gave in the factory under-written, desiring the same might be registered in their L—f—s books, conform to the clause of registration therein contained; which desire the said L—ds found reasonable, and ordained the same to be done accordingly; whereof the tenor follows, *viz.* I H—l—n—s H—k—f—n of R—t—l—t, Esq; being resolved to leave this country for some time, and being satisfied of the fidelity of A—x—d—r R—b—f—n writer to the si—n—t, do, therefore, hereby nominate, constitute and appoint the said A—x—d—r R—b—f—n my factor, during my absence from S—l—d, giving, granting, and hereby committing to him my full power, during my said absence, to call for, intromit with, uplift and receive, all debts and sums of money, heritable or moveable, annuities or annualrents, addebted and owing, or which shall become addebted and owing to me, by whatever person or persons, whether upon real or personal securities, and, upon receipt thereof, to give receipts, discharges and assignations thereof, or renunciations, dispositions and conveyances for the same, which shall be as sufficient to the receivers, as if I had signed the same myself; and, generally, to do every thing thereanent, which I could do myself, if personally present. Providing always, That the said A—x—d—r R—b—f—n shall make just compt, reckoning and and payment to me, of his intromissions in virtue hereof; but declaring, that he shall noways be liable for omissions, or for his not doing of diligence, but for his actual intromissions in virtue hereof allenarly: And this my factory to continue and endure during my absence from S—l—d, or ay and until I recal the same, by a writ under my hand.—And I consent to the registration hereof in the books of C—c-l and S—f—n, or any other judges books competent, therein to remain for preservation. And thereto I constitute Mr. D—v—d R—e advocate, my procurator. In witness whereof, I have subscribed these presents, consisting of this and the preceding

preceding page of stamped paper, written by J—n A—b—n—t, apprentice to the said A—x—d—r R—b—f—n, at E—b—h, the thirteenth day of July, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-two years, before these witnesses, J—n S—w—t, and D—v—d R—s, both writers in E—b—h; the place of signing, date, and witnesses names and designations, being filled up by the said D—v—d R—s. (Signed) H. H—k—s—N. J. S—w—t, witness. D—v—d R—s, witness.—Extracted upon this and the preceding page, by

(Signed) A—H. C—B—L.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Miss S—te.

L—d—n, April 6th 1774.

And is it come to be a matter of doubt with me, in what style I shall address myself to my dear daughter? Perhaps you have forgot, perhaps you have, long since, in your estimate, thrown off that connection.—Your long silence, and the amazing things which I have met with from other quarters, where, surely, I had no reason, in justice, to expect them, has so overwhelmed me, that I am almost without confidence in any body: inso-much, that, were it not to inform you of what concerns your brother, which, I know, cannot fail to be agreeable to you, I should not, I believe, have ventured to trouble you with this. Yet, why should I doubt, that you may still entertain the same sentiments which you expressed to me in your last letters, which I often read with pleasure? However you may find yourself disposed, be assured, that my regard for you is unalterable, and invariably determined by that duty which I have bound myself to, as well as from affection, to consider you as my daughter, no less than your brother as my son; though

though the particular charge I bound myself to, in respect to him, renders him the most immediate object of my attention.

You, no doubt, know, as I wrote to your mother, that, when my physicians ordered me to Sp—n, I had formed the resolution of sending R-c—d and his governor to R-t—l—t. His governor, indeed, would not engage to remain any length of time in that situation; Nay, he at first absolutely declined the charge altogether; from an idea, that, when I was gone, he would have too great an undertaking upon his hand. However, I had got him, at last, to promise, that he would make a trial for one summer; and that, if he did not find that answer his expectation, he should, even then, not leave him abruptly, but give intimation some time before, and likewise assist in procuring another. All this I had settled, and wrote to Mr. T—f—l—n; when my physicians, just as I was ready to set off, told me, I must not think of going to Sp—n, till the heat of summer was over; which, they judged, I would not be able to stand; but to go to the north of F—e in the summer, and to Sp—n in the autumn.—This alteration opened a new field to me, and relieved me, in some measure, from what had given me great anxiety of mind before. I knew not how to leave R-c—d. As this is a very critical time with him, just about finishing the Latin, and to begin the Greek; and I had likewise ordered his governor to read French with him this summer at R--t—l--et; I took the resolution, at once, to carry them with me, that I might see these things done under my own eye, so much more to R-c—d's advantage, especially the French.—This, indeed, leads me into an expence, which, I am afraid, may be rather above my finances; but it being of so great advantage to R-c—d, and I am so absolutely bound to attend to that, that it appeared to me an indispensable duty, however much the expence may distress me. He is, indeed, very deserving, and promises well: He is eager to be a scholar and a gentleman, and spares no pains on his side. Who would

would not run any risk, rather than turn their back upon such a boy, and hazard his being ruined in his education?—He has but one failing; and who is without failings?—It is, indeed, a dangerous one; and, if not corrected, would ruin him with society, when he comes into the world. But, I have already done much to help that; and hope to get the better of it, before I part with him. Should I succeed in that, and could I live but a little longer, I think I could promise to shew you such a brother as you well might be proud of. These things are in the hands of Providence: None knows how long, or how short a time is allotted them; and our business is, to go on in our duty, till we are called from it. This, Heaven requires; and we can do no more; nor can we, with impunity, do less. As moral agents, we are indispenfibly bound by moral obligations. And, nothing could hurt me so much as to think, that I could give cause to reproach my memory, when I am dead, with a voluntary breach of that kind.—I shall not, I believe, go so far as P-r-s, but somewhere near, where good French is to be got. It will make me happy to hear from you. If you direct for me, to the care of Mr. R-b—t A-b—ne, at Messrs. E-d-e and L—d, L—d—n, he will always know how to forward my letters. The duty which I have bound myself to, in regard to R-c—d, I am sensible that no power on earth can absolve me from now, however much cause I have had since to regret my rashness, in subjecting myself to it. W—t—y H—ll—y goes to wait upon your brother, as W—l—ie P—ge does with me. By what I have learned, W—t—y could be of little use at R-t-l—t; and he was tired of it, as he saw all the plans of improvement overturned; the nurseries perishing, which should have been planted out; the fields ordered to be put out of the courses ordained by the entail; and the whole in a way to be reduced to the least possible value. These are astonishing things; but they depend entirely upon Mr. S—te at present, by whose orders, no doubt, they are done; for I was told, by every body with whom

whom Mr. T—f—l—n conversed in the neighbourhood, that he declared, from the beginning, he was to pay no regard to the terms of the entail; though, at any time when I saw him, I found he was willing to make me believe otherwise. J—s Th—m—n had, by order of the commissioners, bespoke some fir-trees, for finishing the plantation of the hill, which was to have been done last winter; but Mr. T—f—l—n countermanded them. This would have been an expence of forty or fifty shillings; and, to save that, that plantation is, it seems, condemned to remain incomplete. What are human engagements to be thought of, at this rate? What must have become of your brother, if I had not been taught other principles? These things I regret; but your father only can remedy them: And I see they will, in the end, produce a most disagreeable and expensive litigation, betwixt him and the guardians of the entail. I was informed also, that Mr. T—f—l—n talked very contemptuously of the estate to others, though he likewise expressed himself differently to me on that head.—But words are not to be regarded, further than when they are supported by facts.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Miss S—te.

May 18th, 1774.

What can I say in answer to my dear child's letter?—It proceeded upon a mistake; for, I see, you expected it would find me in E—l—d. Alas! I was not in a way to stop there: I was ordered, on the peril of life, to get out of that climate, before the easterly spring-wind should set in; and I was actually in F—e when you was writing. This letter, however, furnishes me with great matter for reflection, on various heads, the
most

most interesting that possibly can be. But, alas! I am not able to write myself; and have no person here, in whom it would be prudent to repose such confidence, as to employ any other pen than my own, to write on such subjects: And besides, supposing that I had strength to write myself, which is far from being the case, I am perfectly sensible of the vanity of beating that tract any more, having, long since, exhausted all my weak powers, in soliciting, nay, conjuring your father, by every principle, religious or moral, to remedy the distressed condition into which he has plunged himself and me. But, as your letter requires an answer from me, I must tell you, my dear child, that he knew perfectly well, from the beginning, that returns from my estate depended entirely upon his fulfilling the obligations he bound himself to on his side, by that unhappy transaction, by which he has deprived me of that estate, and of my ~~life~~.—He knew well also, that, by not fulfilling these conditions, things would not stop there, but that great losses, from labour and expence misapplied, would be added to the accompt: All this he knew; and yet, from what views, can only be the secret of his own breast, he persisted, in spite of every advice and remonstrance from me, and which I never neglected; I say, in spite of all, he persisted obstinately, in bringing things to that pass in which they actually are. It is not my disposition to contend, especially when I know a contest must be vain.—I discharged my conscience, in advising and remonstrating, faithfully.—This was incumbent upon me: This, I was sensible, my duty exacted, upon the principles of rectitude, of honour, of honesty, of interest, as well as of charity and benevolence towards my neighbour, my friend, at least one who ought to have placed himself in that light. This duty discharged, I resigned all into the hand of Providence; and am not, now, either in capacity or disposition to resume that task. I must, therefore, leave it, and content myself with praying to God, which I do incessantly, to touch his heart, to divert him from injustice; an injustice which is

N

fraught

fraught with so many dreadful consequences, and such a complication of guilt, the destruction of his own peace of mind, which it is impossible for any man to enjoy who is engaged in such pursuits, and no inconsiderable prejudice to his fortune ; for, great as it is, it may prove inconvenient for him, as it certainly is, at least, imprudent, if he will not allow himself to think, as I do, that it is criminal to lessen it, at the expence of sacrificing the great, the first, the only fundamental principles of the human character, probity and integrity. But, alas! my dear child, what havock, what devastation do passions, when yielded to, make, in these principles!—Nothing that was in my power could your father have asked of me, that I had not already put him in possession of. My fortune, my life was in his hand.—When he proposed to me to be my own executioner, and sacrifice that life in his service at R—t—l—t, which he now considered as expensive to him, this I refused ; because it is not permitted to man, wilfully to destroy that life which God has bestowed on him : On the contrary, it is permitted, nay, it is an indispensable duty to preserve it, till He, who gave it, call for it again. It was next proposed to me, to defraud ~~your~~ brother and you, and all who are concerned in my entail :—This I also refused, as impossible with me ; because it is not permitted to man to defraud his neighbour ; and because it was further incumbent on me, particularly as a parent, as a guardian to him and to them, to defend and protect them from injustice, in that particular especially. In resentment for this, it seems, he, knowing my life, at least the means of preserving it, to depend upon him, determined to deprive me of it. Thus it stands betwixt him and me.—And now, my dear child, by you he makes another demand, which is equally out of my power to grant. To abandon my charge!—To give up your brother!—How do passions blind people!—Does that thing now depend upon me?—Did not he himself see me solemnly bound to discharge the duty of a parent to R—c—d—B— Can he, can I, can any power on earth absolve me now from

from that obligation? Was that possible, how much more reason have I to wish to be freed from it, than he has to desire it? He who forced it upon me, at a time when I was free to charge myself with it, or to reject it, now requires of me to abandon it, when it is no longer in my choice, when I stand irrevokably bound to execute it, when I stand answerable to God, to my own conscience, and to society, for your brother, now my son's moral principles, which, we all know, depend upon the sort of education which is given him, and the example which is set before him in that period of his life.—How unreasonable, how unjust is this demand? Was the question about teaching your brother Latin, Greek, and the other scholastic branches only, which is the business of pedagogues; doubtless, pedagogues are to be found every where, who are capable of communicating these branches of knowledge, and, in many situations, at a small expence, compared with that situation in which your father's persecution has placed me.

Also, it must be an easy matter for any of them to succeed in this with your brother, as he has a good genius, and is, to do him justice, less reluctant to application, than many, at his time of life, are often found to be. But what avail these branches of education, comparatively with that which falls to the share of a parent,—to teach him to be a man? If the pedagogue's business is light with your brother; alas! I find the parent's task not so: I find tares among the wheat, which often makes me tremble for the harvest: A disposition to caprice and passion, which sets at nought all precepts, and is capable of frustrating every principle.—Great God, avert the consequences of such a tendency, and second my endeavours to eradicate these weeds.—And you, my dear child, ask me to give over this task, and your mother too desires it.—Would to God it depended on me, you should soon see how much it still is, as ever, my inclination to refuse you nothing that you can ask of me, and that is proper, or possible for me to grant. But, my dear child, look forward a little; do but ask

yourself how you would be shocked, some years hence, to see your brother appear in life, in the true character of a Mr. N—p—r, such as your father used to represent him : (For example), considering as nothing his word pledged ; falsifying, without hesitation, his obligations betwixt man and man ; sacrificing the peace, the happiness, the interest of his wife, his children, his own honour, his honesty, and all that is estimable in man, to gratify any caprice that strikes him ; and in favour of which, he had degraded reason from her seat, shut his ears against the remonstrances of his friends, and his heart against all feelings for the ruin of his family, or the forfeiture of his own honour among men ; and, above all, that moral integrity which Heaven exacts from moral agents, in the discharge of their various duties, of whatever nature. Do not mistake me, my dear child, as if I have said, that your brother has a heart naturally prone to falshood, and dishonesty : It is quite otherwise ; he has in it the seeds of every virtue, but a proneness to caprice, and an impetuosity of passion ; which, if he is not taught to regulate in his youth, will ripen with him ; and, when he comes to be independent, or master over any body, would make him consider the remonstrances of reason, nay, the pleadings of distress itself, only in the light of insolent control to his absolute will, and hurry him blindfold to any crime, without allowing himself one moment to examine what may be the consequence ; which might be, perhaps, the ruin of himself, of his fortune, of his best friends, of his family, if he had one, of his character amongst men, and ultimately of his own soul. This is the task allotted me, and from which I cannot be absolved.—Great God, thou knowest how painful it is in my present condition ; but I dare not murmur.—I brought it on myself ; therefore, thy will be done.

My dear child tells me, her father will not remit the means of subsistence, unless I purchase it by a crime. He cannot be more eager to deprive me of life, than I am willing to resign it. A man so tired of life as I
am,

am, is not likely to purchase a prolongation of it at that expence.—If it so please God, it may be in his power in that way to make me die : but it depends upon my choice, whether I shall die a villain ; and that is a choice to which no threatenings can ever bias me.—The account you give me, of your mother's distress and your own, affects me beyond description.—My dear child needed not to have painted it to me ; I am highly sensible to it ; and it has been my constant business, to entreat the Protector of innocence to support and conduct you.—It is, indeed, a matter of wonder to me, that your mother lives, subjected, as she has been, to such unexampled distress of mind, and condemned to a climate, which, all her physicians have so often declared, could not fail to destroy her : Heaven, I persuade myself, miraculously supports her, for the interest of her poor children, and I hope will continue to do so.

My time, doubtless, draws nigh, and with joy I regard its approaches. My health is so far from being mended, by my coming here, that I find myself daily worse since I came to this country. I came too late, to receive any benefit from change of climate : That time was spent in S—l—d, which, in all probability, would have saved my life, had I changed the climate sooner. Such has been the will of Heaven ; and I assure you, I sincerely forgive all who were unhappily the instruments of my destruction, designedly, or undesignedly.

Your brother is in perfect health, and sends his affectionate love. He wrote you last week : He advances well in improvements. Though he has been little more than six weeks in F—e, he understands almost every thing that is spoke to him in that language ; and even makes a tolerable shift often to answer in the same : For, it is an established rule, that whoever speaks a word of English, forfeits a farthing ; which is instantly put into a box for the poor ; and he being very tenacious of his money, indeed rather too much so, takes care to commit few trespasses of that kind.—He is, with all his failings, a promising boy ; and, with proper care, I hesitate

fitate not to pronounce, may be made an excellent man. While I am spared, nothing shall be wanting, on my part, which can contribute to that. At present, he costs me at the rate of 300 l. *per annum*; which, you know, is more than I can afford; for you know his father pays only 200 l. the rest must be to my accompt: But I have not had time to look about me, and my distrefs disables me, otherwise I hope to fall upon a more frugal plan.

Let not my situation create the smallest uneasiness upon his account; it was my first care to provide for that. He is not here without friends, who will pay a proper attention to him, should any thing happen me. All that, I have already secured, in every step that is proper, excepting one. I have hitherto been prevented, by my own distrefs, and now by the confusion occasioned by the king of F——e's death, as we have mournings to prepare, &c. before I can present him to L—d S—m—t*, the B—t—th ambaffador at the F——ch court; but that also will be done before this reaches you. Let me entreat my dear child to continue to write to me. I cannot tell where we may be; but, if you direct for me, *chez Mess. Germany, Girardos & Co. à Paris*, your letters will always be taken care of.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mrs. S—te.

M A D A M,

June 1774.

About ten days ago, I received, at once, two of your letters, one dated April 4th, the other April 19th; the first

* Unfortunately, Mr. H—k—f—n's illness prevented this, and left room for his Lordship's being greatly imposed upon afterwards, by a misrepresentation of facts, from an emissary of Mr. S—te's.

first had, it seems, been sent to S—I—d.—I have considered these letters with proper attention, and shall, I dare say, remember them as long as I live; at least I hope so.—I perceive they claim no great reply: But, your honesty, at last, condescending to pull off the whole mask, merits my acknowledgment: And though that has come too late, to be of service to me, I wish not to be thought ungrateful, even for the smallest favour. This has induced me now to take up my pen; and since I have done so, I shall likewise take the trouble, though by no means necessary, to answer the principal parts of these letters.

1st, Then, Madam, I do solemnly aver, that all that I have wrote in my former letters is strictly just and true; and this is equal to, and a short way of repeating them here. You know they are all in point, and I am always ready to undertake the proof of the facts.

My principles do not permit me to tell lies, or suspect others of telling lies. The miserable situation to which I have been so v--l--n--ly reduced, is an incontrovertible proof of the truth of the last of these assertions; and for the first, I dare appeal to your own conscience, and defy you to impeach my integrity or probity.—You have had abundant experience.

I am none of those people who can one day boast of being possessed of 3000 l. *per annum*, and the next, pretend insolvency;—that can one day boast of having 40,000 l. given me in legacy, and the next, declare that I cannot afford to educate my only son, or to pay a small debt.

2^{do}, You say, Mr. S—te told me at the beginning, that his affairs were not settled, and he could not command the money, and that I well knew how I saved that to him. I do well remember, that he told me, his affairs would be settled in one year; and I assured him, that, in that case, the scheme which he himself proposed (*viz.* settling at R-t-l-t) would make all easy. In that case, the creditors on my estate would, I was confident, not have demanded their money; for it was seeing themselves

themselves turned over to a stranger, who was immediately to leave them again, and go to another kingdom, while I myself was also at same time to go abroad, which made them call for their money. Besides, nor they, nor I, could ever dream that it could be of the smallest inconvenience to a man, possessed of the immense fortune which he gave himself out for, to raise at any time the small sum requisite for these purposes.—I indeed knew well, and do still know, that that was an easy matter for him; and that all the deficiency lay, where it still lies, in his want of inclination to do justice betwixt man and man.

3^{to}, You tell me, that I need not fear, for that the improvements will now be carried on, &c. I answer, plainly, that I do not believe one word of that; and that I know, at this moment, it is, as it has always been, quite otherwise; and that that fraudulence will, in the end, cost him ten times the sum which the improvements would have cost, besides the sums which he has lost already, and must continue to lose, by his mismanagement and wilful deviation from the plan stipulated.

4^{to}, I said then, that when his engagements were fulfilled, my estate would be worth to his son, 1000 l. *per annum*; and I now aver, (with Captain H—b—n, as he told him) that, had it been my fate to have dealt with an honest man, my estate would have been, to my adopted son, and his heirs, to perpetuity, worth 1200 l. *per annum*. It requires no great skill in arithmetic, to find out which of these sums is the smallest. This I am ready to demonstrate; as also, that, by his breach of faith, and in the way in which things are conducted at present, it cannot be expected that it will produce one half.

5^{to}, The rights to my estate have been in his possession these three years: He had only to examine, whether they were clear, or not: He has surely had time enough.

You may, in your turn, Madam, make what use of this letter you please. For my share, as I perceive that
all

all the letters will soon be submitted to the inspection of the courts of judicatory, I have never advanced, nor ever shall advance, in a matter of such importance, any thing but what it is fit that society should be informed of. This is so far from being a breach of trust, in my estimate of things, that I am rather inclined to think it a duty. A man introduces people, as friends, into his house; and they are no sooner entered, than they discover their intention to rob and murder him. In so dismal a situation, he naturally calls for assistance and protection: And this is called breach of trust, and want of friendship. Give me leave to ask you one question.—When I generously made over my estate to your son, making him, by adoption, mine, did I not then stipulate for the safety of my life, and had I not then the most positive and repeated assurances from Mr. S—te, and you, that my annuity should be punctually paid, in order to enable me to prosecute the recovery of my health, upon which my life depended? This, however, never was done; and you now plainly acknowledge, that it never was intended to be done.

6to, I never was so wicked as to entertain the most distant thought of abandoning my son's education to the direction of any person whom I knew to be incapable of conducting it.—'Tis true, when my physicians ordered me to Sp—n, where I could not carry him, I had taken order, that his governor and he should reside at his own (once my) house, there to prosecute his education, in the way which I had directed, till my return. And, had that scheme taken place, I would have insisted on security, that he should not, without the consent of the guardians, be removed from thence. But my physicians afterwards changing their opinion, and ordering me to F—ce, I found it practicable for me to continue to do my duty.

7mo, You tell me, Mr. S—te solemnly declares, that he will not remit any money, till I abandon my son.—I know him too well, not to be sensible, that he will never want a pretext for refusing to pay a just debt.

O

This,

This, however, must immediately reduce my son and me to a very disagreeable situation, in a strange country; and therefore, my trustees must take order accordingly, without loss of time; for which purpose, I send them these letters, and the copy of this, to be added to the former ones.

I have often said, and I must now repeat it, that there is no room for epistolary altercation. You, who have already r--b-d me of every thing else, have now impeached my probity and integrity. I cheerfully go to disprove the charge in the face of the world, and in the most public manner; in which, if I fail, let me be degraded from the rank of a gentleman, and, what is still more valuable, from the name of an honest man; but not till then.—At present, I lay claim to both; and will forfeit my life, if I do not prove my justice, in that claim, through the whole of this execrable affair. I the more readily embrace this call, as I find the money has not been paid to my friends, who rescued me out of the hands of my barbarous a-f-f-s last winter; and for which, a prosecution must have commenced at any rate.

My affectionate love to my daughter; for such I acknowledge the force of moral obligations, that I am bound to regard her as such: And Heaven is my witness, that, at this moment, I would not hesitate to spend my last sixpence, to guard her from the influence of bad example, in a depraved world.

L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mrs. S—te.

August 18th, 1774.

I am sorry, Madam, to be the author of conveying disagreeable intelligence; yet, this must show Mr. S—te and you, that I am still in the land of the living,
notwithstanding

notwithstanding the various distresses which have been thrown upon me, on purpose to make it otherwise. But, what sort of life? Surely, not to be envied: And I assure you, of a great truth, that the prolongation of it is little desired by me, for one reason, as it is wished, on your side, for another. Continual distress, a pint of ass's milk in the morning, and the same quantity of cow's milk twice a-day, for my other meals; my whole day divided betwixt my chair and my bed, and exhausted with fatigue and weakness; laid up every night by seven:—Such has been my life for four months past. I am, however, somewhat better than I was four months ago; infomuch, that, notwithstanding the orders of my physicians, to go to Sp—n, I am resolved, upon R-c—d's account, to winter in F—ce.

He is in perfect health, though he has been sometimes troubled this summer with his constitutional complaints, scorbutic blotches in his legs and feet. He, however, improves fast, both in body and mind. He is now no contemptible Latin scholar; is well advanced in the French, and going to begin to Greek. I have, at last, also got him taught to swim this summer; at which he was very slow.—He sends love to his father, mother, and sister; and often wonders that there are no letters from them.—He wrote to his sister in May, as did I also; but neither he nor I ever received any answer. A reason for this I cannot conceive; and I think there can be no good one; neither do I enquire. I am content with silence on disagreeable subjects; but I am at a loss what to say to him. As I never have failed, so, whether you write, or not, I shall continue, from time to time, while I live with him, to give you information about him. I have the honour to be, &c.

L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te.

S I R,

N-v--n--s, October 2d, 1774.

Was I able to write, you have furnished me with an ample field. How astonishing is it, that you should write to any gentleman, to take R-c—d from me, by force or by fraud, saying, that I had stolen your son, &c.

What do you think must now be the sentiments of that gentleman, after he has seen the registered papers, which shows, that you have actually possessed my estate for several years, by an unalterable entail; on the express condition, that the custody of the person, and the direction of the education of my adopted son, should remain with me? Is it thus, Sir, that you allow yourself to sport with that truth, which ought to be held so sacred amongst men?

But with what sentiments of horror must that gentleman, and all the world see also, that you, who stand possessed of my estate, by virtue of an entail, which you took the trouble, yourself, to go to S—l—d on purpose to extend and homologate, and to which you know I was induced, chiefly by the motive of my bad state of health, in order to free myself from business, and to go abroad for the recovery of my health, upon a small pension, which you obliged yourself to pay punctually? —I say, how must it astonish that gentleman, and all the world, to whom you have discovered, that, from the time that you got possession of my estate, you have withheld my annuity, on purpose, by that means, to prevent my going abroad, and consequently to deprive me of life! You know, Sir, with what steady perseverance you have hitherto prosecuted that premeditated m--d--r; and with what difficulty I have hitherto escaped your diabolical malice, by the assistance of my friends, who have long contented themselves with privately ex-
postulating

postulating with you on these heads, in order to save the honour of your son, who has the representation of my family.

And now, it seems, you have turned your malice also against that son, whom you pretend to have a regard for; and he has effectually become the wreck of it.—He, who was doing so well at his studies, and giving hopes that he might one day become a good member of society, has, since he received your clandestine letters, entirely turned his back upon his studies, and talks and thinks of nothing else but the dissipation he has in prospect when he gets to I—l—d. Such is the result of your works; and, after all, you know that no power on earth can justly attempt to take him from me.—Yet, seeing now that the boy is lost in any event, and to show how little I am disposed to contend, even when I have the greatest justice on my side, please, Sir, to remit to my agent at E—b—h, the arrears which you owe me; and, the instant he informs me of that being done, R—c—d's governor shall set out with him directly, and deliver him into your hands at C—k:—They shall go by the way of B—d—x. So, if it is really that you want to have the possession of your son, it now depends upon yourself, in a fair way, whether you shall receive him by Captain B—b—e, on his first trip in the spring. Meanwhile, his governor shall continue his assiduous endeavours to redress the injury which you have done the boy.—Sincerely recommending you to the mercy of Heaven, I remain, &c.

=====

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. R—b—f—n.

A-x in P—v—e, November 1st 1774.

I have this day received yours of the 1st of August, inclosing one from Mr. S—te to you, of date the 22d
of

of July, which is perfectly in character with the man.— Any kind of shuffle, rather than pay: Nor will his being detected in falshood, put him in the least to the blush. He says, he has not a single paper to show his rights, &c. The progress of writs were delivered up to him, clear as day, at the time of the transaction, and by him lodged in the hands of his agent, where they still remain, I suppose. The hundred pounds to the college, I suppose, allude to the public burdens payable out of the estate, which, to king, college, &c. are, according to the prices of corn, from 40*l.* to 80*l.* *per annum*; the circumstances of which he likewise understands perfectly well, as they were particularly explained to him often and again; though, you see, he says he never heard of them, till informed by his nephew of late. But, Sir, it were folly to spend time in detecting and replying to his duplicity. You know your rights; and, as you have the greatest v—l—n to deal with, I desire you will show no lenity, and lose no time. I hope you have received my two last, to which I refer you.

L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te.

Upon first reading your letter of the 10th of November last, transmitted to me by Mr. R—b—f—n, I laid it aside, with an intention not to answer it; as, I imagine, I had fully answered the particulars therein pointed at, in my former ones to you? But, afterwards, reflecting upon the smooth hypocritical style of it, which, at same time, called to my remembrance the many proposed v—l—n—s of its author, which have been formerly always ushered in by some extraordinary profession of candour and good intention on his side, made me resume the examination of it, in order, if possible, to discover the

the snake in the grass ; which brought me, at last, to recollect a circumstance which I had actually forgot, and which, I guess, is the foundation of this new plot, *viz.* My having lodged the rights of my estate in the hands of Mr. T—f—l—n, as agent for you, and guardian of R—c—d's interest, when I was leaving S—l—d, in order to satisfy him, and, at same time, enable him to defend himself against a pretended claim, which Mr. G—l—y was making to a servitude on the mill-dam ; and, together with them, at same time, a memorial in writing, on that subject, pointing out and referring to the clauses in the rights, which relate particularly to the dam ; and marking with a pencil, a cross, thus, +, on the margin, opposite to these clauses, in the different parchments, to make it the more easy for Mr. T—f—l—n to find them out.—All these, together with the decreet of the justices, anent the road on the east farm, and some other particulars in a leather bag, wrapped up in that chest, which Mr. T—f—l—n acknowledged to have received and opened, in March last, together with a letter to him, inclosing the key of the chest, and directing him to take out these papers.

You now say, that you have never seen any rights ; that you have been informed my rights are precarious ; and, therefore, desire me to produce my rights, otherways you will never pay, &c.

You know, Sir, that the rights which I had to my estate, being produced and examined, for the purpose of writing the entail, and which were made over to you by the entail, and lodged from that time in the hands of Mr. G—t your agent, agreeable to your order, were then good rights, and that they continued to be good rights, and unquestioned, so long as they remained in Mr. G—t's hands, that is, till his clerk brought them to me, at my desire, in order to send them to Mr. T—f—l—n, as above ; and certainly they are as good rights as any man in S—l—d ever could shew to an estate ; and, as you have been often informed, they have been all along in the custody of your doer ; and, if they were

were found not to be good, why did you not point out the flaw three years ago, and require justice then, as well as now? Was it honest in you to keep my estate three years in your hands, and also to retain my annuity for the same length of time, leaving me to starve? Or is it honest in you, or can you pretend the intention good, that you still persist to do the same, concealing the rights now in your custody, and still will not tell where this pretended nullity lies? Surely, Sir, before you require me to make up new rights, you should, in justice, point out where the old rights are deficient: They are in your custody, and consequently, you know that I cannot show them; and you know also, that the moment you do show them, they will appear to be as clear as day. What barefaced v—l—y is this? Produce them, Sir, such as they are; read them, show them to my lawyers; show them not to be good, and show that you have acted the part of an honest man: Most certainly, neither of which is possible. But, Sir, if this is really the fact, that you have determined to conceal or deny the rights which were delivered to Mr. T—f—l—n, the plot is indeed strongly meant, and highly v—l—n—s; but will not serve the purpose. Had Mr. T—f—l—n, who stayed so long in S—l—d, taken the trouble to inform himself how exactly our records are kept, especially in regard to matters of that kind, he might have prevented your employing a stratagem, equally vain and disgraceful, as that of secreting a charter from the King, in favours of W—l—m H—k—f—n my grandfather; another from the King, in favours of R—b—t H—k—f—n, my father; and another from the King, in favours of myself; all containing a clear progress of writs, for near 100 years back, and of which Mr. R—b—f—n shall furnish you with new copies from the register, after your, and Mr. T—f—l—n's oaths are taken, in relation to those formerly delivered. Alas! Sir, you have been much deceived in projecting, that such a manœuvre could render precarious the titles of my estate.

What

What you mean, by denying the words of the recorded deeds, I cannot conceive. Is it by an excess in the style of bravado, to show that you dare deny, that it is the sun which gives light at noon-day? Yet, even in that view, you might have spared yourself, since, of all the numerous letters of yours, which are in my custody, almost every one of them flatly gives the lie to another, in some one circumstance or another; and well do you know, that no other conditions but that only, would have prevailed on me to prefer your son to my entail. You tell me, that "*all my oratory, rhetoric, and flourishes will never prevail on the world to think,*" &c. I readily concur with you, in this your appeal to the world; and you shall see, that I shall use no oratory, rhetoric, or flourishes, to bias the decision of the world; but only lay before it the state of facts, in printing copies of the letters and deeds, which I shall order to be distributed over S—l—d and I—l—d; and the originals, under your own hand, lodged in the advocates library at E—b—h; that the same world, which you have appealed to, may have access to compare the copies with the originals. And most certainly, Sir, till now, the world, in S—l—d, never saw an example of a man so hardened in f—h—d, such a brutal a—f—f—n, so f—d—l—t and sot—c—r—s a v—l—n. T—c—r—s, because you knew well, that it was not till after I had experienced instances, and you had loaded me with repeated protestations of a generous and invariable friendship, that I was prevailed upon, to put myself, my estate, and the interest of my heirs of entail, into your power; the destruction of all which, you had, at same time, planned in your own breast, and which plan, you have actually prosecuted and accomplished, in spite of the continued, and daily remonstrances which have been made to you, for three years together, to induce you to desist from m—d—r, and from v—l—y.

I have the charity also to believe, that this horrid scene will be as new to the world of I—l—d; for I cannot allow myself to think, notwithstanding your in-

P

sinuation

sinuation of an I---h b--e, that ever that, or any country, has seen such a monster as this before. I remember, indeed, to have heard you describe a Mr. N—p—r, as a man of a most extraordinary atrocious character; but, doubtless, it was your own heart which then suggested the language, in which you described yourself, under the name of that poor man, whom, and his numerous family of children, I am informed, you have since inhumanly beggared, by stripping him of his estate; which, you have often told me, was worth 1400*l.* *per annum*, and taking possession of it to yourself, in virtue of a mortgage for 5000*l.* of which he had incurred the irritancies, by not being punctual in paying the interests; which, together with the principal, most unhappily for his now miserable family, he had suffered to run up, in all, to a claim of 8000*l.* against him. Often have I wished to live, to prevail upon R-c—d, one day, to restore that estate to the right heirs, after being paid the precise sum which you had a just claim to. And, though I cannot now expect to live to see this, yet, I hope, R-c—d will do it of himself; thereby, if possible, to avert the wrath of Heaven, which cannot fail to be kindled against you and yours—alas! now also mine—and draw blessings upon himself, in the enjoyment of what he will otherwise be justly possessed of.

You know, that I wrote, that I would send you your son, because your clandestine correspondence with him, had made him turn his back upon me, upon his governor, and upon his studies, and left me no more hopes of making any good of him; otherwise, nothing would ever have made me voluntarily part with him. But I forget that you have appealed to the world: That letter of mine will then speak for itself.

LETTER

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Captain H—b—n.

Reflecting, that I have often heard you express particular regard for Mr. S—te's children, makes me, for their sake, trouble you with the inclosed, for that singular man : It is unsealed, on purpose that you may read it. By it also, you will see how much he had deceived you, when you wrote to Mr. J—ck—n last winter, that matters were amicably settled betwixt him and me. It gives me infinite pain, that the whole of his i-f-m—s proceedings must now be made publick, as it must leave an indelible stain upon his name and family. You see, it is his practice, amongst other things, to deny the receipt of letters, which is another reason which has induced me to address this, my last, to your care. Many of the letters referred to in it, you have seen ; the rest you will also see, as I shall order a printed copy of the whole to be sent you, by first convenient opportunity from E—b—h. I am, Sir, yours, &c.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. S—te.

SIR,

December 14th, 1774.

I am informed, that my adopted son has been carried off, by force, from his governor at P-r-s, at your instigation, and without any of his clothes, but one coarse suit, which was made up for his journey to join me, I having left him behind, when I set out from P-r-s, in August last, lest in travelling so early as that, the weather might prove too hot for him, and hurt him ; his baggage, however, being then sent off, along with mine, as he was to follow me within a month or six weeks

P 2

after,

after, had you not interfered to prevent him. It seems, however, you have been less delicate in attending to his health and welfare, when you forced him to make such a journey in the midst of winter, and without his clothes, or any proper person to take care of him; it being also your express order, that his governor should not be allowed to attend him; and all this, after you was possessed of my letter, assuring you, that his governor should carry him to I—l—d in the spring, upon the simple condition, that you would pay, in the mean time, the annuities due to me; and when his trunk and clothes were on the road returning to P—r—s to him, for that purpose. I have, however, now ordered them also to be sent from thence after him. Pray God, after such treatment, he may have occasion for them.

I am likewise advised, that, after denying the receipt of Mr. R—b—f—n's letters, for a long time, demanding payment of my annuities, you at last condescended to acknowledge the receipt of one, and to answer it with a refusal;—because (you said) you are not possessed of the rights to my estate, which, you know, have been lodged in the hands of your agent at E—b—h, these three years, by your order;—because (you said) I refused to give up to you my adopted son, the custody of whose person, and the sole direction of whose education, being formally secured to me, were the conditions upon which you obtained my estate;—and because (you said) you want a compensation from me, for the publick burdens payable out of the estate, which you amazingly say, you never heard of, till your nephew lately told you of them. Conscious are you, Sir, that you got a note of the particulars of these, in writing, from me at C—k, which you carried in your pocket, at least three or four weeks before; and, after the writing of the contract, (by Mr. B—m—sh,) often took it out, and conversed with me upon it, made me explain to you, how sometimes our estates in S—l—d pay to king and college, to minister, to schoolmaster, &c. all which, you said, was new to you, the landholdings in I—l—d being different;

ferent : And, lastly, at my sight, you locked the note up in your closet. Conscious are you, also, that you ~~really~~ bound yourself to the payment of these burdens, when you basely went off from another article (the building of the house) when you signed the final deeds, and upon which occasion I insisted, rather to have the whole transactions cancelled, and would have seen that done, had not some of the gentlemen present interposed, and proposed an alternative, which, most reluctantly, I was prevailed on to agree to.

What, in the name of wonder, can you propose to yourself in the end, from all this shuffling, l—g, and f—se dealing? Surely, I can see nothing but dishonour to yourself, and to your concerns. You told me in your letters, long ago, that I had not dealt with an *Irish bite*, or a man of straw, but with an honest man. There was something in that expression; and application of it to yourself, which shocked me at the time, though I did not then know what you meant by an *Irish bite*; and you very soon after wrote me, in plain terms, that, in point of fortune, I had actually dealt with a mere man of straw, in dealing with you; and also showed me plainly, that truth and honesty were things of light esteem with you.—Yet, even then, I find, that I did not conceive the meaning of the term, *Irish bite*, in its full extent. And how could I, or any man, imagine such a character, had you not explained yourself further, and showed clearly, in a series of letters, that avarice is the only god which you worship; that this was the sole principle which moved you to propose your son as the object of that entail which I had destined for another, seeing that I was, to all appearance, in a dying way, and knowing, that, in any event, my life would depend upon my going abroad, as that again would depend upon your paying my annuity, which, it seems, you predetermined never to do (as, in fact, you never have done it) upon frivolous pretences, and, when confuted in one, always inventing new ones, till, by that means, my death should absolve you from all payment to me, as well as from all the obligations which you subjected yourself

yourself to in favours of the heirs of entail, and which you had the weakness, as well as the wickedness to write me, you trusted your son, the first heir of entail, would not call you to account for? Thus, not scrupling to give it under your hand, that a prospect of impunity was all that was requisite to induce you to commit the greatest act of v--l--y, in which you, at same time, solicited my connivance, and, notwithstanding my strong and friendly remonstrances to you upon that occasion, still persisting in this your scheme; so that, in fact, the fine fields which have been destroyed by mismanagement, and the numerous and beautiful nurseries which have perished, in three years that you have had the administration of the affairs of the heirs of entail in your hands, move the regret of every person who sees these things.—And now, Sir, that you have ruined my estate, r--bb--d me of my adopted son, and steadily prosecuted your intention of m--d--r--g myself, for three years past, I am, at last, fully instructed what is an *Irish bite*. Yet, notwithstanding my personal sufferings, the consideration that you have put it beyond all remedy, that your posterity, and my future representation, must for ever carry the reproach of this i--f--m—s stigma, is what gives me most concern, and makes me doubly regret, that, to have had dealings with an *Irish bite*, has been the fate, and the cruel misfortune of

(Signed) H—— H—K—S—N.

P. S. I had almost forgot that you wrote to Mr. R--b—f--n, that I did not inform Mrs. S—te about her son.—I am sensible that my letters going first into your hands, it depends upon you, whether she sees them or not.—For shame, Sir: Next time you find yourself disposed to assert such a f—h—d, take out and read only the one which I wrote from P—s to Mrs. S—te, of date August the 19th, upon the subject of her son, and in which I told her my sentiments particularly upon this head, and what I would constantly observe, while her son remained with me.—And you know, that I not
only

only wrote to her, but to his sister, and also made him write: All which letters were actually in your custody, long before you wrote to Mr. R—b—f—n.

L E T T E R, Captain H—b—n to Mr. H—k—f—n.

S I R,

A—g—l V—l—a, March 20th, 1775.

I had your favour from F—ce, with one from Mr. S—te, which (though you intended I should read) I really did not, as I supposed it contained invectives, not fit for me to be acquainted with; especially as I found by experience, that all my former sanguine endeavours for reconciliation have proved abortive.

I lately received an answer to mine, wherein yours to Mr. S—te was inclosed. He prayed me to propose referring the whole dispute between you and Mr. S—te to the determination of gentlemen of the country, at R—t—l—t. No other measures will he come into; and, if that is not complied with, he will have recourse to equity.—I am very sorry, that it is out of my power of acting the part of a peace-maker: And am, with best salutes to the Ladies, Sir, your most obedient humble servant,
(Signed) S—M H—B—N.

L E T T E R, Mr. H—k—f—n to Captain H—b—n.

S I R,

P—s, July 10th, 1775.

Your favour, of date 20th of March last, I have only received just now.—It had been kept up at E—b—h
four

four months. You directed it to H. H—k—f—n at E—b—h: Had you directed it to M—l—d's land, C—n—g—te, E—b—h, it would have been taken care of. But, although this error had not taken place, I might have been long of receiving it, it being now five months since I wrote from P—v—ce, to my correspondent at P—s, not to forward any more letters for me to P—v—ce, as, at that time, I set out from thence for P—s. But, as it is about eight months since I lost the power of my left side, by my distrefs, and Mr. S—te's oppression, and also lost all hopes of recovery, so that I had ordered my servants to carry me homewards; and as I was often taken ill on my road, lying bed-fast, three weeks at one place, five weeks at another, &c. I have been four months upon the journey.

You say, that Mr. S—te proposes referring to gentlemen, &c.—I am going home to die: and all my view was, to get into a country where I will not be denied a Christian burial. His views have always been of a different nature.—He has been almost four years in possession of my estate, you know upon what terms, and refuses to pay my annuities, or any part of them, with a premeditated intention to cut off my life, which he has effected; and, what will doubtless surprize you more, Mrs. S—te has (I think) shown, by a letter, above a year ago, that she had been accessary to this design, from the beginning.—But, Sir, leaving that betwixt Heaven and them, I wish to die at peace with him, as with all mankind. And, if there is any thing serious in this new proposal of his, (which, by the by, I am very far from believing) you may tell him, that he has no time to lose. You cannot, Sir, impute it to breach of charity in me, that I say, I don't believe him; as, you know, for you saw his letters, wherein, to evade payment of my annuity the first year, he meanly and falsely wrote, that he was insolvent. The second year, he refused to pay, unless I first gave up to him my adopted son; which, he knew, I could not, in conscience, do, as, you know, that the express condition upon which he obtained

obtained the advantages of my entail, (which I had otherwise destined for one of my own name and family) was, that the custody of the person, and the direction of the education of the boy, as becoming my son, was made over to me. The third year, his pretext was a strange one, *That he had not seen the rights to my estate*; and that was, because he would not look to them, they being, all the while, lodged in the hands of his doer at E—b—h, waiting his arrival in S—l—d, agreeably to his promises and engagements.—His nephew, Mr. T—f—l—n, having, as would seem, carried the rights to I—l—d to him, his pretext then became, *That he was told the rights were lame*; but, at same time, he refused to say, in what points they were lame: And well does he know, that none in the kingdom can show better rights. All the while, too, he was writing, from time to time, sometimes to me, sometimes to Mr. G—t, sometimes to Mr. R—b—f—n; now, that he was going to S—l—d himself to pay; then, that he was sending his nephew with full powers for that purpose; none of all which, he ever performed, or intended.

Now, you tell me, that he has gone from all these; and prays you to propose referring the whole dispute betwixt him and me to the determination of gentlemen in the country: *That no other measures will be come into; and, if that is not complied with, he will have recourse to equity*; by which, I suppose, he means *law*. You know, Sir, that I have great experience of the v—l—y of this man.—I must also inform you, that I now consider myself as being nearly out of the reach of his malice.—Pluming himself with the idea, that, having so long reduced me to want, exhausted my credit, and put it out of my power to prosecute any plan for the recovery of my health, by which he gains 500*l.* *per annum*; and, confiding in his own great fortune, he now threatens my family with the expence of *law*. You may tell him, Sir, that I equally despise and detest his threatenings; and, fearless on the head, cheerfully resign the issue of that to Providence.

Q

I doubt

I doubt not, however, that, by this time, he has gone from this last proposal also. All this shuffling, Sir, and the oppression, which has been the consequence of it, to me, and to my family, is self-evident. But, not to make you dwell on this horrid scene; if I do not die by the way, I hope soon to be in S—l—d: And, as I am sensible of the many disadvantages which must follow, to him, to my son, and to all concerned, if these matters are not adjusted in my lifetime, I am always willing and ready to settle them amicably; having nothing else to do in this world that gives me much concern. But, if there is any truth in this proposal of his, I fear it comes too late, if he does not make great haste. Had he made this, or any other equitable proposal, at the time when he began to execute his plan of oppression and injustice, and when he turned a deaf ear to every private remonstrance from me, from you, from Mr G—t, &c. what a load of guilt and reproach would he not have escaped, which he now stands exposed to?—I wish, for the sake of his son and mine, that these things could be buried in oblivion: I only fear, that, unless he has made some payments of late, which were become indispensibly necessary, he has rendered some steps unavoidable, which may bring his conduct to light, so as never to be wiped out. I should be happy to know that it were otherwise; but it depended upon him.—He has long reduced me, and my family, to be without subsistence. Credit could not always hold out, in such a situation. A case so urgent, and of such detestation, cannot be always concealed or suffered. Whatever steps he has occasioned, to redress that oppression, with which he has so long and so inhumanly glutted himself, and which he has, in part, brought to such a tragical end, for himself, as well as for me, the progress can only be stopped by his diligence in doing justice, so far as is yet in his power; the future will not depend upon me. It is true, they have anticipated the fall of my annuity, by shortening my life, which they cannot now restore. But, alas! Sir, they are much to be pitied with that gain, in
the

the way which they have purchased it. Add to all this, the f—d committed against my heirs of entail:—He has ruined their estate, by not fulfilling his obligations, in carrying on the improvements:—He has so totally deviated from his engagements in this, that, as far as I am able to judge, from the information sent me, 10,000 l. would not be an equivalent for the injustice he has done on that article. You know, that, by the terms upon which he obtained the entail, the estate should have been, by this time, nearly brought to its value; and, by what I have learned of his management, I cannot believe it now yields half, perhaps not a third of the value* which you put upon it, when you saw and examined it. With best respects to Mrs. H—b—n, I am,
G^c.

N. B. August 16th, 1775.—Mr. H—k—f—n never received any answer to the above letter; but, upon his arrival at E—b—h, upon the 6th of August, was informed, that Mr. S—te had taken up counsel against him a few days before, upon hearing that Mr. H—k—f—n was arrived at L—d—n.

On the 29th day of August 1775, Mr. H—k—f—n cited Mr. S—te before the L—ds, upon the following complaint.

* 1200 l. a year.

Q²

MEMO²

MEMORIAL for Miss H--K--S--N, only Daughter of H--L--N--S H--K--S--N of that Ilk, Esq; *

IN the year 1771, a correspondence of letters began between the memorialist's father and J--n S--te, of the city of C--k in I--l--d, which proved the introduction to the sale of the memorialist's father's estate, and to all the other transactions which have taken place between the parties.

Upon the 18th March 1771, Mr. S--te thus writes to Mr. H--k--f--n: " Dear Sir, I hope you'll excuse the freedom I take in addressing a gentleman whom I have not the honour of being acquainted with. The many disinterested friendships you have shown Mrs. S--te, somewhat emboldens me to this liberty, and has laid us under such grateful obligations, as will never be in our power to repay. But, as they were done from a generous and benign motive, the only return in our power to make you, is, that you have our most grateful thanks and sincere wishes.

" We

* This paper was suppressed altogether before the arbiters, and another substituted in its place, less calculated to impress them with a favourable opinion of the transaction: all the letters were likewise carefully kept out of sight.—Such was the industry and address of the third party, that it seems as if they had found means, in some shape or other, to poison almost every one in whom Mr. H--k--f--n confided, and to dispose them to favour their plan; which was this,—if possible, to deceive the arbiters, by bringing things in such a light before them, as might induce them to break the entail; not in the way in which it was done, but so as to re-pone Mr. H--k--f--n to his estate. They trusted to their own machinations otherwise, for cutting him off in the interim; so that, had all their views succeeded, the estate would have gone directly into the hands of R-- B--, and his pupil Miss H--k--f--n. This was the scheme, of which Mr. H--k--f--n drew the first hints out of Miss M--l--d. Mr. H--k--f--n's own agents, at that time J-- W-- and E-- B-- (whom he dismissed) know themselves how far they were embarked in it, or not.

" We return you thanks for your kind information and
 " advice, as to a plan for R-c—d's education."

This letter was occasioned by the civilities which Mr. H—k—f—n had shown to Mrs. S—te, whom he had met with at B—h some time before. From B—h, Mr. H—k—f—n went over to F—e, for the benefit of his health; and this letter was addressed to him there.—The R-c—d mentioned in the letter is Mr. S—te's son, to whom Mr. H—k—f—n had paid great attention; and his attachment to whom, was one main circumstance which contributed to bring matters into their present situation.

Another letter, of the 13th of April, is in the same style with the former, and again returns thanks for Mr. H—k—f—n's advice about R-c—d's education. These are repeated, in a letter of 12th June; in which Mr. S—te writes,—“ We are much obliged for your thinking so much about R-c—d's education; the management of which we shall leave entirely to you, as you have been so friendly as to undertake it.” And he adds, “ Inclosed is a letter for our dear R-c—d, which you will please deliver him, with your good advice. I have mentioned to R-c—d, that his learning would be expensive; therefore, he must mind his books, as it will take off from that little I am able to give him: *for by no means* would I have him think I had a large fortune to give him. I hope, by this, he has got safe to you. Mrs. S—te and your G--f-y* joins me in compliments to you, Lady G--f-n, and Miss H--k--f--n.”

Mr. S—te, from the information which he had received of the goodness of the education at St. A---d---s, the attention of the professors, and other circumstances, had determined to send his son thither. It was, probably, in that view that he pressed Mr. H—k—f—n to visit him at C—k, on his return from F—e; which he could easily do, by means of the C—k packet. Mr. H—k—f—n did accordingly come by that conveyance; and, after residing at C—k for some time, had a propo-

sal

* Mr. S—te's daughter.

sal made to him, which is that hinted at in the foregoing letter, that he should chalk out a plan for R—c—d's education, and undertake the total management of it. This, Mr. H—k—f—n refused to do; but promised, that if R—c—d should be sent to St. A—d—s, he would be of all the use to him in his power; and that he would readily point out any thing which should occur to him to be proper in the course of his education.

This was eagerly grasped at by Mr. S—te, who immediately wrote to his son, then at L—d—n, desiring him to come to E—b—h, where Mr. H—k—f—n agreed to take him up, and from thence to carry him to St. A—d—s. This plan was accordingly carried into execution; and Mr. H—k—f—n informed Mr. S—te, by letter, of his son being properly placed at St. A—d—s; and received the following answer:

“ DEAR SIR,

5th July 1771.

“ I have your esteemed letter of the 16th past,
 “ which gives us the pleasing account of your being
 “ safe arrived at E—b—h, and likewise of your re-
 “ ceiving R—c—d in such health, and his giving the
 “ preference of being educated in S—l—d. All
 “ these, I assure you, add not a little to our felicity. It
 “ gives us concern, that you should wait so long for
 “ him. This is adding favours; how shall we return
 “ them? You'll get nothing by the acquaintance; we
 “ are sure of profiting. The management of R—c—d
 “ I shall leave entirely to yourself.”

In an after letter, of the 6th July, Mr. S—te gives Mr. H—k—f—n very particular directions relative to his son's education—“ Your kind letter of the 4th I received with great pleasure, giving an account of the disposal of R—c—d; which we are well pleased with, and return you our most grateful thanks. If Lady G—f—n will be so good as to give directions about R—c—d's cloathing, it will be quite agreeable to us
 “ the

" the way her Ladyship fixes on ; and we are of opi-
 " nion, that plain cloaths are the most proper. I have
 " read over Mr. B——n's proposals, which, I think,
 " are very high ; yet, as he thinks he will fit him for
 " the college, October 74, we are content. As to
 " R-c—d's change of linen, we think three shirts *per*
 " week ; and as to his allowance for pocket-money, 6d.
 " *per* week. He generally lays out his money in fruit,
 " which disagrees with him : But Lady G—f—n may
 " enlarge it, if it is proper, and that he behaves well.
 " We are very happy in the way you have placed him ;
 " and the more so, as Lady G—f—n is so kind as to
 " have an eye over him. This is what we could not
 " expect ; it is heaping favours, when it is not in our
 " power to make the least return, except hearts full of
 " gratitude and thanks ; and we hope R-c—d's beha-
 " viour will merit the continuation of your parental care
 " of him."

And, in a postscript, he adds, " For any advance,
 " and the quarter's advance that you have paid Mr.
 " B——n, please draw on Mr. R. B—l—e, and I shall
 " acquaint him who to apply to for money. I would
 " be better pleased Mr. B——n would apply for his
 " board half-yearly ; paying quarterly is pitiful, and
 " looks as if he had met with *Irish bites*. It gives my
 " friend in L—d—n double trouble, and was neither
 " practised here, or in E—l—d, except for servants.
 " I assure you, I wrote to you twice, since I had an ac-
 " count of your safe arrival at E—b—h : If I had not,
 " I should look upon myself to be very absent and un-
 " grateful."

In a letter of 2d August, Mr. S—te writes, " Dear
 " Sir, I have both yours of the 11th and 18th past,
 " with R-c—d's. The account you give of him, and
 " what Mr. B——n his master says, are very agreeable
 " to us ; and doubt not but he will answer our hopes.
 " Nothing shall be wanting on my side : though you
 " condemn me, I think the mother ought to have a
 " part. I have mentioned in my letters, (which, I find,
 " you

“ you have not received) that I left the entire management of R—c—d to you and your lady, as you are both so kind to take the trouble on you. As to the expence, I am very well pleased with it; but as to your producing receipts, I am not. There will be a credit at Messrs. S—s and B—l—s in L—d—n, to receive what Mr. B—l—e may ask for, or any one else you think proper.” And the letter concludes with great expressions of gratitude and kindness for Mr. H—k—f—n, and pressing invitations to come to C—k, to pass the winter.

Some time after, Mrs. S—te having come to L—d—n, with an intention to go to the south of F—e for her health, Mr. S—te begged of Mr. H—k—f—n to accompany her, as he was detained by business in I—l—d. This, Mr. H—k—f—n declined; being unwilling to undertake such a charge. He agreed, however, to accompany Mrs. S—te to C—st—r, in her way to D—l—n, where she expected to meet her husband, to prevail upon him to go abroad with her. At length, Mr. H—k—f—n agreed to attend her to C—k, where he and his daughter resided for some months.

Mr. H—k—f—n had, for many years, been in an uncertain state of health; and, as his complaints were rather increasing than diminishing, which rendered it necessary for him to go to a warm climate, he turned his thoughts upon a plan which might secure the representation of his family, one of the most ancient in S—l—d; and, at the same time, reserve a decent competency for himself, during his life, and for his daughter after him. He was sensible, that his estate was capable of great improvement; and that, with attention and skill, it might be brought to be very valuable: But the situation of his health put it out of his power to execute an operation of this kind himself. And the scheme which had occurred to him, was, to settle his estate upon a gentleman of his own name, a cadet of his family, upon condition of paying him a sum of money, sufficient to extinguish any debts he owed, with a life-
rent

rent annuity for himself, and for his daughter after his death.

As Mr. H—k—f—n lived at C—k, in the greatest intimacy and friendship with Mr. S—te, it was natural for him to communicate his intention to him, and to ask his advice. Upon hearing the plan, Mr. S—te not only approved of it, but said, that he himself was willing, in name of his son, to accept the terms which Mr. H—k—f—n had proposed offering to another; and that he had no objection to submit to the condition, which was, indeed, Mr. H—k—f—n's favourite object in the whole matter, and to agree, that his son should continue the representation of Mr. H—k—f—n's family, by bearing the name and arms of H—k—f—n of R—t—l—t.

Upon this, Mr. H—k—f—n readily and sincerely declared, that he would prefer Mr. S—te's son, for whom he had conceived a very great attachment, to any person whatever. And parties being thus at one, their agreement was reduced into the form of a mutual contract, by T—m—s B—m—sh, notary-public, uncle to Mr. S—te.

This contract, of date 16th January 1772, bears to be entered into between H—l—n—s H—k—f—n of R—t—l—t, in the county of F—e, Esq; "for and in behalf of R—c—d B—j—m—n S—te, gentleman, a minor, now at St. A—d—ws, in the county of F—fe" "aforesaid, for his education, upon the one part, and "J—n S—te of P—f—f—d, in the south liberties of "the city of C—k, upon the other." It proceeds upon the preamble, that the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n is now seised of an estate, in fee-simple, of the aforesaid lands of R—t—l—t, and is possessed of the present stock thereon, and has agreed to settle these lands upon the said R—c—d B—j—m—n S—te, according to the plan hereto annexed. Therefore, the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n "doth fully, freely, and absolutely grant, "bargain, and sell to the said J—n S—te, in behalf of "the said R—c—d B—j—m—n S—te, the aforesaid lands

R

of

“ of R-t---l-t, with all the improvements, and other
 “ appurtenances thereto belonging, together with all
 “ the stock thereon, belonging to the said H-l-n-s
 “ H-k-f-n, on the terms, and to and for the several
 “ uses, intents and purposes herein after mentioned,
 “ and to and for no other use, intent and purpose what-
 “ soever: That is to say, That the said J-n S-te shall
 “ and will, within the space of seven years from the
 “ date hereof, improve the aforesaid lands, as marked
 “ out and specified in the aforesaid plan; for which
 “ purposes, the said J-n S-te is to have and exercise
 “ the aforesaid stock now on said lands, and the issues
 “ and profits of said lands, for the aforesaid term, and
 “ from and after the expiration of the aforesaid seven
 “ years; that then, the aforesaid lands, and premises,
 “ shall come and be vested in the aforesaid R-c-d-
 “ B-j-m-n S-te, and his heirs, who are to carry the
 “ surname and coat of arms of H-k-f-n; which said
 “ lands are to be entailed on the said R-c-d for that
 “ purpose, in the strictest terms, and agreeable to the
 “ usage of S-I-d.”

Upon the other hand, Mr. S-te is taken obliged to
 pay to Mr. H-k-f-n the sum of 4000 l. Sterling;
 and likewise becomes bound for an annuity, payable to
 him and his daughter, in the following terms: “ That
 “ he the said J-n S-te, and his heirs, shall and will
 “ pay unto the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, and his assign-
 “ nees, for and during the term of his natural life, one
 “ annuity or yearly rent-charge of 500 l. Sterling Eng-
 “ lish currency, to commence from the date hereof; to
 “ the payment of which, the aforesaid lands of R-t-l-t
 “ are hereby made subject; which said annuity, or year-
 “ ly rent-charge, is to be paid half-yearly, that is to
 “ say, on every 16th day of July, and 16th day of Ja-
 “ nuary. And in case of non-payment, by the space
 “ of twenty-one days next after the same shall become
 “ due, to distress for the same, and the distress to dis-
 “ pose of according to law, until payment shall be made
 “ thereof, and all costs and charges attending the seiz-
 ing

ing for, and recovering the same. And the said J—n S—te doth hereby, for himself, and his heirs, further covenant and agree to pay to C—s H—k—f—n, only daughter of the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, for and during the term of her natural life, in case she shall happen to survive the said H—l—n—s, one annuity or yearly rent-charge of 200 l. Sterling English currency, to commence from the day of the death of the said H—l—n—s, and to be paid by two half-yearly payments; to the payment of which, as the same shall become due, as aforesaid, it is hereby declared and agreed, that the aforesaid lands of R—t—l—t shall be subject. And in case of non-payment, by the space of twenty-one days after the same shall become due, as aforesaid, then to distrain the aforesaid lands, and premises, and the distress to dispose of according to law, until payment and satisfaction shall be made, with all costs and charges attending the same."

This contract contains a clause respecting the education of R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, in the following words: "And it is hereby declared and agreed, that the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n shall have the management and education of the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, but at the expence of the said J—n S—te."

And, for carrying the intention of the parties more effectually into execution, a clause was inserted, "That all proper deeds, and other instruments and writings, shall be executed between the said parties within the space of six months from the date hereof, for the better and more perfect assuring and sure-making of the aforesaid premises, with the appurtenances, and all other the matters and things therein specified, according to the true intent and meaning hereof, as counsel learned in the law, shall reasonably advise, devise, or require, at the request of either of the said parties."

This contract was executed at C—k, upon the 16th day of January 1772; and it was more favourable for Mr. S—te than had been originally intended: For,

though it had been at first agreed, that Mr. H—k—f—n's own annuity should be 600 l. and that of his daughter 300 l. *per annum*, yet Mr. H—k—f—n agreed to strike 100 l. *per annum* out of each of them. However, soon after the contract was executed, something having fallen from Mr. S—te, as if he was not inclined to implement the stipulations of it, particularly with respect to the improvements, which he now hinted an intention of leaving to be executed by his son, Mr. H—k—f—n became extremely uneasy, and very desirous of being free of the contract altogether. In this view, he mentioned to Mr. S—te, that if he had any difficulty with respect to the contract, he was at liberty to give it up; and that Mr. H—k—f—n would willingly take back his estate. Upon this Mr. S—te protested, that he had no intention of breaking through any of the obligations in the contract; but that he would cheerfully implement the whole of them: Mr. B—m—sh also, the uncle, made use of his mediation with Mr. H—k—f—n, persuading him to make himself easy, and to rest upon Mr. S—te's assurances.

It was now determined, therefore, to carry the contract into execution; and, with that view, Mr. H—k—f—n came over to S—l—d, in company with Mr. S—te, who was much pleased upon seeing the estate, and impatient to have the transaction completed, by formal deeds.

Accordingly, a contract and deed of entail was executed, by advice of counsel, upon the plan of the original articles of agreement entered into at C—k, with such additions as seemed proper to the parties themselves, or were suggested by those with whom they advised.

It occurred, that as one main view of the transaction was, to secure the perpetual representation of Mr. H—k—f—n in the estate of R—t—l—t, so, it was proper, that the substitution should be further extended than had been done, in the rough draught of the articles; and, as the parties were, at this time, on the best terms
with

with one another, this matter was easily adjusted, to the satisfaction of both.

Accordingly, by deed of entail, of date the 29th April 1772, Mr. H—k—f—n “ gives, grants, alienates “ and dispones, his lands and estate of R—t—l—r, to, and “ in favours of the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and “ the heirs whomsoever to be procreate of his body; “ whom failing, to A—e—Y—g S—te, sister-german of “ the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and the heirs whom- “ soever to be procreated of her body; whom failing, “ to the heirs whatsoever to be procreated of the body “ of the said J—n S—te; whom failing, to C—s “ H—k—f—n, daughter, and only child of the said “ H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, and the heirs whatsoever to be “ procreated of her body; whom failing, to the heirs “ whatsoever to be procreated of the body of the said “ H—l—n—s H—k—f—n; whom failing, to M—y “ H—k—f—n, otherwise H—y, sister-german of the “ said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, and spouse to J—n—G—b—l “ H—y merchant in D—z—ck, and the heirs-male of “ her body; whom failing, to R—b—t T—f—l—e, Esq; “ of B—l—d—e, in the county of C—k in I—l—d; whom “ failing, to T—m—s T—f—l—e, son of the said R—b—t “ T—f—l—e, and the heirs-male of his body; whom “ failing, to Captain J—l—s S—k, of the 10th regiment “ of foot, and the heirs-male of his body; whom fail- “ ing, to the nearest heirs and assignees whatsoever of “ the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, the eldest heir-fe- “ male, and the descendents of her body, so oft as the “ succession devolves upon females, or their descen- “ dents, excluding still all other heirs-portioners, and “ succeeding always without division, throughout the “ whole course of succession, in all time coming, and “ the right of primogeniture taking place among the “ female heirs, in the same manner as it is established “ by law among the male heirs.”

This entail is made and granted, “ with, and under “ the burden of the payment of a free liferent annuity “ of 500 l. Sterling to the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, “ during

“ during all the days of his life, and of the like annuity
 “ of 200 l. money foresaid, to the said C——s H—k—
 “ f—n, daughter, and only child of the said H-l-n-s
 “ H—k—f—n, during all the days of her life, after
 “ the death of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n her fa-
 “ ther, in case she shall happen to survive him, or a
 “ provision to her of 1000 l. Sterling, in the option of
 “ the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, and failing thereof, in
 “ the option of the said C——s H—k—f—n his
 “ daughter, in the events after-mentioned ; which re-
 “ spective annuity and eventual provision of 1000 l. are
 “ hereby declared a real and preferable burden and
 “ incumbrance upon the lands and others foresaid, and
 “ are to be payable at the terms, with annualrent, and
 “ in manner herein after specified : And in case of non-
 “ payment of the said respective annuities, within the
 “ space of twenty-one days after the same shall become
 “ due, it is hereby declared and agreed, and specially
 “ provided, that it shall be in the power of the said
 “ H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, and the said C——s H—k—
 “ f—n his daughter, not only to sue for, levy and up-
 “ lift the said respective annuities, so oft as the same
 “ shall become due, out of the first and readiest of the
 “ rents, mails and duties of the lands and others fore-
 “ said, or any part thereof, but also to distrain or o-
 “ therwise attach the said lands themselves, in any
 “ manner competent in law, not only for payment of
 “ the said respective annuities and eventual provision of
 “ 1000 l. but also for payment of the annualrents
 “ thereof, and of all costs and charges attending the
 “ recovery of the same.”

The representation of the family is provided for, by
 a clause in these words : “ And with, and under these
 “ conditions, that the said R-c—d-B--j-m-n S—te, and
 “ the whole heirs and substitutes aforesaid, who shall
 “ succeed to him in the said lands and estate, shall, and
 “ by acceptance hereof, become hereby bound and
 “ obliged, to use, bear, and constantly retain, in all
 “ time after their succession, the surname of H—k—f—n,
 “ and

" and arms-bearing, and coat-armorial of that family :
 " And the husbands of all the female-heirs, succeeding
 " to the said estate, shall also be, and do, by accepta-
 " tion hereof, become hereby bound and obliged, to
 " assume, use, wear, and constantly retain the said sur-
 " name, and arms: As also, that the said R-c—d-
 " B-j-m-n S—te, and the whole heirs and substitutes
 " aforesaid, succeeding to the said lands and estate,
 " shall be obliged to possess and enjoy the same, in vir-
 " tue of these presents, and the infeftments, rights, and
 " conveyances, to follow hereupon, and by no other
 " right or title whatever, which may be inconsistent
 " herewith, or prejudicial hereto: As also, to cause in-
 " gross, and *verbatim* insert, the aforesaid course and
 " order of succession, and the several conditions, provi-
 " sions, limitations, restrictions, clauses irritant and reso-
 " lutive, and declarations herein contained in the in-
 " struments of resignation, charters, and infeftments to
 " follow hereupon, and in all the subsequent procura-
 " tories and instruments of resignation, charters, special
 " retours, services, instruments of seisin, and other
 " transmissions and investitures of the said lands and
 " estate."

It is likewise provided, that it shall not be in the
 power of any of the heirs or substitutes, to sell, alienate,
 impignorate, or dispoise the lands, or any part thereof,
 " or to burden the same, in whole, or in part, with
 " debts, or sums of money, infeftments of annualrents,
 " wadsets, provisions to wives, husbands, or children, or
 " any other servitude or burden whatever."

Moreover, the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n assigns and
 makes over to and in favour of the said R-c—d-
 B-j-m-n S—te, and the other heirs and substitutes be-
 fore-mentioned, not only the whole progress of writs,
 title-deeds, and securities of the lands, " but also, the
 " whole rents, mails, duties, kains, customs, profits, and
 " casualties thereof, from and since the 16th day of
 " January last, and in all time thereafter, with full
 " power to call, sue for, uplift, receive, and discharge
 " the

“ the same: But, notwithstanding thereof, reserving al-
 “ ways the possession of the said lands and estate, for
 “ the space of seven years from the said 16th day of
 “ January last, to the said J---n S---te: And full and
 “ ample power is hereby given to him, to levy, uplift,
 “ sue for, receive, and discharge the rents, mails, duties,
 “ profits, and issues thereof, for the said space of seven
 “ years, and no longer; which rents and issues, are
 “ hereby declared to belong to him, in consideration of
 “ certain improvements, which he has become bound to
 “ make upon the said lands; and for which rents, du-
 “ ties, and issues, falling due, or uplifted during the
 “ foresaid space, he shall not be accountable to the said
 “ R-c---d-B--j-m-n S---te, or any person whatever; and
 “ declaring the possession of the said R-c---d-B--j-m-n
 “ S---te, or the other heirs of tailzie, or their right to
 “ the issues and duties of the lands, to commence at the
 “ expiration of the said seven years.”

Then follows the obligation on Mr. S---te, expressed
 in these words: “ For the which causes, and in imple-
 “ ment of the said J---n S---te’s part of the present
 “ contract, for behoof, and on account of his said son,
 “ the said J---n S---te has instantly advanced and paid
 “ to the said H-l-n-s H--k--f--n, the sum of 4000l.
 “ Sterling: And the said J---n S---te, for himself, and
 “ as taking burden on him for his said son, bind and
 “ oblige themselves, conjunctly and severally, their heirs,
 “ executors, and successors, to satisfy and pay to the said
 “ H-l-n-s H--k--f--n, or his assignees, during all the life-
 “ time of the said H-l-n-s H--k--f--n, a free lifeferent annui-
 “ ty of 500l. Sterling yearly; and, after his death, to
 “ C---s H--k--f--n, his daughter, or her assignees, dur-
 “ ing all the days of her life, in case she shall happen to
 “ survive her father, a like free lifeferent annuity of 200l.
 “ Sterling; both the said annuities by half-yearly pay-
 “ ments, and by equal portions, viz. upon the 16th day
 “ of January, and 16th day of July each year; begin-
 “ ning the first term’s payment upon the 16th day of
 “ July next, and the other half year’s payment upon
 “ the

" the 16th day of January next, 1773, and so forth;
 " by equal portions, at said two terms, during the sub-
 " sistence of the said several annuities, with a fifth part
 " more of penalty, in case of failzie, and annualrent of
 " the said several annuities from the respective terms of
 " payment thereof, yearly, termly, and proportionally
 " thereafter, during the not-payment: And further,
 " declaring and consenting, that, in case of not punctual
 " payment of the said respective annuities, within the
 " space of twenty-one days after the same become due,
 " it shall thereafter be in the power of the said H-l-n-s
 " and C---s H-k-f-n, or either of them, or their
 " assignees, to recover the said respective annuities,
 " by diligence against the said J-n S-te, personally,
 " or against his separate estate, real or personal, or to
 " sue, levy, uplift, distrain, or otherwise attach the said
 " lands and estate of R-t-l-t, for payment thereof,
 " and of the annualrents and charges attending the re-
 " covery of the same, in manner before provided, the
 " one without prejudice of the other, as the said H-l-n-s
 " and C---s H-k-f-n, and their forefairs, shall find
 " proper and necessary: Which annuity of 200 l. pro-
 " vided to the said C---s H-k-f-n, is hereby de-
 " clared to be in lieu and place of, and which she shall
 " accept of, in full of the provision of 1000 l. Ster-
 " ling, formerly provided to her by the said H-l-n-s
 " H-k-f-n her father, payable to her at the first
 " term of Whitsunday or Martinmas after his decease,
 " or his marrying a second wife, conform to a contract
 " and agreement, entered into betwixt him and B-b-a
 " M-l-d his spouse, dated and registered in the com-
 " missary-court books of St. A-d-s, the 22d day of
 " March 1769: But reserving always power to the
 " said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, by a deed or writing, to be
 " executed by him at any time in his life, to retract the
 " foresaid annuity of 200 l. and reponne the said C---s
 " H-k-f-n to her former provision of 1000 l. And
 " failing thereof, declaring, that it shall be in the power
 " of the said C---s H-k-f-n herself, to take, or ac-
 " cept

“ cept of the said annuity or provision before mention-
 “ ed, as she shall think proper ; and in both, or either
 “ of these cases, the said annuity or provision, are here-
 “ by declared a real and preferable burden upon the
 “ said lands and estate of R-t—l-t.”

Of even date with this entail, and in further imple-
 ment of the original articles of agreement, a contract
 was entered into between the parties, whereby Mr.
 S—te became bound, for himself, his heirs and succes-
 sors, “ within the space of seven years from the said
 “ 16th day of January last, to improve the foresaid
 “ lands and estate of R-t—l-t, according to, and in the
 “ precise way and manner marked out and specified in
 “ the foresaid plan referred to : That is to say, to erect
 “ and build the mansion-house of R-t—l-t, and the o-
 “ ther houses, ditches, fences, and inclosures, marked
 “ out thereon, of the several dimensions, and in the
 “ form and manner particularly specified in said plan ;
 “ and labour, manure, and dress the fields, so as the
 “ same may be in the best order and condition at the
 “ expiration of the foresaid seven years, and as near as
 “ possible in culture, as follows, viz. 70 acres under
 “ wheat, 70 acres under barley, 70 acres under oats,
 “ 60 or 70 acres under pease or beans, 60 or 70 acres
 “ under sown grass, fit for cutting, one year old ; 60 or
 “ 70 acres more under sown grass, for cutting, two
 “ years old ; 70 acres under sown grass for pasture,
 “ three years old ; 70 acres more, under sown grass for
 “ pasture, four years old ; 70 acres in fallow ground,
 “ under turnip ; and the remaining 46 acres, for gar-
 “ den and orchard ground, planting, feeding, and pa-
 “ sturing of sheep, swine, and other like bestial, all in
 “ the way and manner specified in the foresaid plan ;
 “ agreeable to which, in all respects, I bind and oblige
 “ me, and my forefairs, to perform the haill premises,
 “ within the time limited, under the penalty of 500 l.
 “ Sterling, over and above performance.”

It had been agreed between the parties, that
 Mr. S—te should build a mansion-house and offices
 upon

upon the lands, suitable to what they might be supposed to be worth, when the proposed plan of improvement should be carried into execution.

But, at signing the entail, Mr. S—te made some difficulty about this article; he also was desirous to restrict the expences to be bestowed upon the education of his son, to as small a sum as possible. These things were very disagreeable to Mr. H—k—f—n, and made him desirous to break off the transaction altogether, before it should come too great a length: But the gentlemen who were present interposed, and these articles were at length compromised, though upon terms not very advantageous for the heir or substitutes in the entail. In this view, a clause was inserted in the contract, “ declaring, that in place of erecting and building the “ forefaid mansion-house and office-houses, I bind and “ oblige me, and my forefaids, to make payment to the “ said R—c—d—B—j—m—e S—te, whom failing, to the “ other heirs of entail, contained in a contract and deed “ of entail, execute betwixt the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n “ and me, of this date, of the sum of 1500 l. Sterling, “ at the first term of Whitfunday or Martinmas after “ the said R—c—d—B—j—m—e S—te shall arrive at the “ age of twenty-one years, with annualrent thereafter “ till payment, and penalty in case of failzie.”

And, with respect to the education of R—c—d—B—j—m—e S—te, the contract bears these words: “ And lastly, As by the aforefaid contract, it is expressly stipulated and agreed, that the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n shall have the management and education of the said R—c—d—B—j—m—e S—te, from and “ since the said 16th day of January last; therefore, “ the care and superintendency of the said R—c—d—B—j—m—e S—te his education, and the custody of “ his person during his minority, are hereby totally devolved upon the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, but at the “ sole expence of me the said J—n S—te; and which, “ I do hereby become bound and obliged to pay, as the “ same shall be drawn for, or demanded by the said

" H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, or any person authoris'd by him,
 " not exceeding 200 l. Sterling yearly, and that under
 " a suitable penalty, over and above performance."

The only other article of the contract, respected the stock upon the lands, which Mr. S—te became bound to convey and make over to R—c—d—B—j—m—e S—te his son, at the expiration of the seven years specified in the articles of agreement.

No sooner had these matters been thus adjusted, than Mr. H—k—f—n had reason to repent that he had entered into the transaction. Mr. S—te immediately took possession of the estate, appointed commissioners upon it, gave orders to have the entail registered, and levied some rents which were due; with which he returned to I—l—d, in order, as he said, to make remittances, and to settle his affairs, so as to come back the following spring to carry the plan into execution.

Mr. S—te was by no means punctual in his remittances; which put Mr. H—k—f—n to very great inconvenience. This appears from Mr. S—te's letter, of 27th July 1772, in which he writes, " My dear Sir—
 " I had the pleasure of writing to you a few lines the
 " 24th instant, which I inclosed, under a frank, to Lady
 " G—f—n, and a letter to our good friend Mr. G—t,
 " with bills, to the amount of ; and this
 " day, have remitted D—v—d S—g—r, for to be ac-
 " cepted and forwarded to Mr. G—t, four bills, a-
 " mount 565 l. 8s. 11 d.; and next post, if I can get
 " bills, shall remit 7 or 8 hundred more. They are
 " very scarce here; and, if it was not for L—b—n, and
 " foreign bills, I should be much at a loss. When you
 " get my letter, I hope it will restore both your peace
 " and health; which, I pray God, may long continue.
 " Yours of the 13th has affected me much, that you
 " should be obliged to apply, and be refused. By it,
 " you learn, who would assist you in your necessities.
 " Suredly, they would not imagine, that you had parted
 " with your estate to a man of straw, or rascal that
 " would not keep his word. Therefore, yours surprises
 " me

" me much. You need not want money now, nor never
" shall again."

This letter contains pressing invitations to Mr. H—k—f—n, to come and pass the winter with Mr. S—te at C—k; and the next letter, of 7th August 1772, is much in the same style.—" Dear Sir—I wrote
" to you the 13th past, to which I refer. I have now
" before me yours of the 24th, mentioning of your
" distresses. You ought not to have made yourself so
" uneasy. The indorsers of the bill I should not be
" surpris'd at; for they were not so well acquainted
" with me: But you, who was, and must know that I
" would not suffer it to go back, and that I would re-
" mit, as soon as possible, the remainder of the money.
" —I hope our friend I—c, (Mr. I---c G---t, writer to
" the signet) and the rest of our friends, will alter their
" opinion, as their fears are at an end, and not hold me
" in the light of an *Irish bite*. I left all my family as
" hostages, &c. &c. I observe you intend taking a
" house at E---b---h. You need not remain in Britain
" for the want of money; and believe me, my dear
" Sir, you never shall want it, while I am worth a shil-
" ling. If you will not go to F---ce, let me recommend
" your wintering with us."

The same letter makes mention of a small remittance;
and adds, " In a few posts more, I hope to remit you
" the balance."

In the following letter, 14th August, Mr. S—te
speaks of the improvements upon the estate of R-t-l-t.
" I hope L-l-e (the overseer) will manage right, and
" follow your direction for the winter's operation:
" And I think, if he could have some of the bounds
" run so, as to put out some of the quicks, it would be
" right: If he has not time, I shall do it. L-l-e, I
" hope, will take care of the young horses, and not o-
" verwork them."

The last letter of this kind, of date 2d October 1772,
which Mr. H—k—f—n received, is in these words:
" Dear Sir—Yours of the 14th ult. gives me vast plea-
" sure;

“ sure ; by which I find you are all happy, which, I
 “ hope, may continue. As to my going over this year,
 “ it is out of the question ; for I must be (God willing)
 “ in L—r-ck in December, March, and the latter end
 “ of April, in order to let the lands that belonged to
 “ N-p-r. I observe what you say, in regard to the
 “ farm : *I have not the least doubt, but it is a very va-*
 “ *luable one ; and I hope the one you have placed your*
 “ *affections on, may have a heart full of gratitude to ac-*
 “ *knowledge and deserve it.* I am vastly thankful for
 “ your giving orders about running the marches, and
 “ putting out the thorns. The trees, I believe, would
 “ be better put at 20 feet asunder, at the back of the
 “ hedges. It would give me pleasure you would give
 “ directions, as heretofore ; for in that light, I would
 “ have you look on R-t-l--t ; and wish you may take
 “ more pleasure in it than ever, and make use of it, in
 “ the same manner you ever did.”

After this, a great alteration took place. Mr. S—te gave over writing to Mr. H—k—f—n altogether : But, during the following months of November and December 1772, and January and February 1773, he wrote many letters to Mrs. S—te, who resided in S—l—d during that period, representing himself as an absolute bankrupt : That he was not able to make any remittances to Mr. H—k—f—n, either towards payment of the balance of the 4000*l.* for which he had granted bond, or in payment of the annuity : Nay, that he was no longer able, even to pay for his son's education. For all these reasons, he desired, that a stop might be put to the improvements upon R-t-l--t, which he was determined to allow to ly over till his son should come of age.

These tidings were extremely grievous to Mr. H—k—f—n, who saw, that if Mr. S—te's account was true, he had sold his estate to a bankrupt ; and that he run a risk of wanting even the necessaries of life. His feeling, upon this occasion, cannot be better described than in the following letter, which he wrote to Mr.

S----te,

S—te, upon the 15th of May 1773: “ Sir,—You may
 “ be surpris’d at receiving a letter from me; when you
 “ have read it, indeed, you ought to be surpris’d: But,
 “ Sir, such is the nature of mankind, that, when put to
 “ the test, every individual will always be found to act
 “ in character with himself. When I write as a friend,
 “ I write without reserve, in the honest language which
 “ sincere friendship dictates, regarding chiefly the dis-
 “ charge of my duty towards my friend, and the exo-
 “ neration of what I make a matter of conscience of, in
 “ the quality of a real friend: That once done, I hold
 “ myself absolved. There lies no blame on me, when
 “ my friendship is neglected; and though I do not now,
 “ as formerly, write merely as a friend, let it not sur-
 “ prise you, that you do not see me exhibit myself in a
 “ style unbecoming humanity, or without a due regard
 “ to that decency which a man owes to himself.—My
 “ present subject is business, and of the most interesting
 “ nature. When I returned to E—b—h, on the 12th
 “ of this month, after conveying Mrs. S—te to
 “ D—n—d—e, Mr. G—t shewed me a letter of yours,
 “ in which you inform him, that you are not worth
 “ 800*l.* *per annum*; and you are vested in the property
 “ of my estate, in virtue of an irrevokable deed, by
 “ which you have bound yourself to pay to me, in mo-
 “ ney, in annuity, and for your son’s education, to the
 “ amount of 900*l.** besides considerable sums, which
 “ you have likewise bound yourself to lay out instantly,
 “ in finishing the improvement of the estate, and to
 “ bring it, for your son’s interest, to the value of 1000*l.*
 “ *per annum*, which it will be worth, when the bargain
 “ has been fulfilled on your side, as it has been upon
 “ mine. Now, you tell Mr. G—t, his clerks, and the
 “ world (for these things ought not to be kept secret by
 “ people of business; they ought to be divulged for the
 “ good

* In cash <i>per</i> advance	—	—	L. 4000	0	0
In annuity	—	—	500	0	0
Towards expence of his son’s education	—	—	200	0	0

" good of society, so soon as the facts are ascer-
 " tained ; and who is to doubt your own authority
 " in that matter ?) that, in your transaction with me,
 " you have only involved me in your bankruptcy,
 " and reduced an innocent man, your friend and guest,
 " to beggary and want ; which I have actually felt, e-
 " ven at the hazard of life, ever since you have been
 " in possession of my estate. What is most astonishing
 " to us now, is, the very different account which you
 " gave us of your circumstances, at, and long after the
 " transaction, when you constantly exhibited yourself as
 " a man of an opulent fortune, and condescended on
 " particular subjects, to a very large amount. As you do
 " not now tell us in what manner you have lost that great
 " fortune, do you mean that we should believe that you
 " knew yourself to be bankrupt, at the time when you
 " involved me ?—I hope, not ; because, in that case,
 " your family would be subjected to an injury, much
 " greater than the loss of fortune ;—your son, and mine
 " particularly, who will still have a fortune by me,
 " which no power on earth can deprive him of : But,
 " alas ! what can restore his honour to him, when it
 " will be remembered in what manner he came by it,
 " and I was defrauded of it ?—You have rendered this
 " subject so delicate, Sir, that even I, who am not less
 " interested than you, for the honour of a family, which
 " has now my representation, as well as yours, am at a
 " loss how to express myself upon it."

This letter produced several returns from Mr. S—te,
 who still pretended, that his affairs were in a desperate
 situation ; and that it was his inability only, which pre-
 vented him from fulfilling his engagements. In one of
 these letters, he says, " I know of no other way of ex-
 " tricating me and my family, and enabling me to pay
 " you, but letting a part, or the whole farms, for two
 " or three years, until my affairs are settled here. You
 " say, no one can let, nor no one would dare to take
 " it.—Who is to call us to an account but R—c—d ?
 " which, I am sure, he never would attempt. By this,
 " I would

" I would not have you think, that I did not intend the improvement, and that it should not go on when in my power.—As to my son's enjoying your estate, without being paid for, is impossible, (in case I did not pay), as he has a large fortune liable, and exclusive of yours."

In another letter of the 28th June, Mr. S—te renews his apologies for not making remittances to Mr. H—k—r—f—n, and adds, " That he has written to S—l—d, to take advice of counsel, to have the entail broke, and to make out deeds, for making over to Mr. H—k—f—n, what sums of money Mr. S—te has remitted to S—l—d, as an equivalent to him, for the trouble and distress in which they have involved him."

In this measure Mr. H—k—f—n most heartily concurred: He was eagerly desirous to get quit of the transaction; and wished for nothing so much as a possibility of breaking the entail. But these wishes proved abortive: For, upon advising some of the most experienced counsel in S—l—d, they gave it as their opinion, that the entail, which had been put upon record by Mr. S—te, could not be infringed upon, even by his and Mr. H—k—f—n's mutual consent.

As then there was no hope from that quarter, it became necessary, to make the best of a transaction which could not be set aside; and many letters passed, in which Mr. H—k—f—n expostulated pretty warmly with Mr. S—te, upon his behaviour, in entering into possession of his estate, and neglecting to pay the price, or even to remit him what was necessary for his immediate support.—On the other hand, Mr. S—te renewed his promises of remitting as soon as it should be in his power; and excused himself, as well as he could, upon his former pretence of inability to pay.

Hitherto Mr. S—te had never dropped a hint, as if he had any objections against the transaction, or as if Mr. H—k—f—n had not fully performed his part. At length, after Mr. H—k—f—n had gone to F—ce, for the recovery of his health, and taken R—c—d with him,

T

whom

whom he considered as his adopted son, and to whose education he still continued to pay the greatest attention, Mr. S—te, in a letter to Mr. A—x—d—r R—b—t—f—n, who, as agent for Mr. H—k—f—n, had been insisting for payment, puts his apology upon a very different footing from before.

“SIR,

July 22d, 1774.

“My being from home a few days, prevented my
 “replying to yours of the 28th past; by which I ob-
 “serve, that you had, prior to your last, wrote and
 “sent me the state of my accompt with Mr. H—k—f—n,
 “which I assure you I never received; if I had, I would
 “have answered it in the following manner:—That un-
 “til my son is given up, and until a clear title is made
 “out to me (for, at present, I have not a single paper
 “to show my right) and a proper compensation made
 “for near 100*l. per annum*, which the lands pay the
 “college, and which, I assure you, I never knew nor
 “heard of, until the return of my nephew, and the
 “different sums paid, which were never allowed me,”
 &c. &c.

Here, it is probable, Mr. S—te meant to have added, that, till all these things were adjusted, he would make no further remittance. So far is certain, that his last remittance was upon the 23d of February 1774; that he has made no payment since; and that he now owes Mr. H—k—f—n considerably above 2000*l.* Sterling.

The nephew, whom Mr. S—te mentions in his letter, is Mr. T—f—l—n, whom he sent over to take the direction of the estate of R—t—l—t, and to put a stop to the improvements.

With regard to the objections which he, for the first time, made in the letter of 22d July, nothing can be worse founded than they will appear to be. The progress of the rights of the estate had been delivered to Mr. S—te's agent, at the time of the original transaction, and have remained in his hands ever since. And as to the sum said to be payable to the college, the whole public burdens payable out of the lands, whether

to the college or to the King, amount to between 50*l.* and 80*l.* Sterling, according to the prices of corn, and were fully explained to Mr. S—te at the time.

There is nothing, therefore, in the objections, which were now at length started by Mr. S—te, after he had so long acquiesced in the bargain, and which he seems to have reserved, till Mr. H—k—f—n should be out of the way.

But as Mr. H—k—f—n now saw, that nothing could be made of Mr. S—te in an amicable manner, and that it would be necessary to proceed to legal measures, he wrote repeatedly to his agent in S—l—d, directing him to take the most effectual method for obtaining justice, whether by attaching the stock and crop at R—t—l—t, or otherwise. These letters, however, were ineffectual, as it does not appear that the agent took any step whatever*.

The consequence of this has been, that no remittance has been made for more than a year past: So that Mr. H—k—f—n, in justice to himself and to his daughter, is under the necessity of taking such steps as shall be most adviseable for compelling payment: And, for that purpose, is determined to bring a process against Mr. S—te, to compel him to perform the contract in all its branches, or, at least, to make payment of the balance due upon his bond, as well as of the bygone annuities;

T 2

and

* This agent had a deed of trust, in the most ample form, from Mr. H—k—f—n, (See registered factory, p. 91.—93.) with instructions from him, to retain Mr. D—d—s and Mr. M—Q—n; and particularly, to have an eye, whether T—f—l—n (whom S—te had just then sent to supersede his commissioners, in the conducting of the improvements) should attempt to deviate from the plan established by the entail; and if he found that he did so, instantly to protest him, and prosecute him to implement the engagements. To this agent's t—c—y and b—ch of t—st in this, is truly to be imputed the ruin of the estate, and the deteriorated condition in which the improvements were found to be, at the time when the farmers appointed by the arbiters visited them, and made their report; as also, that when Mr. H—k—f—n returned to S—l—d, he found Mr. D—d—s taken up against him.

and to find security for payment of those annuities in time coming.

It may be observed, that, after Mr. H—k—f—n had carried R—c—d S—te to F—ce, for his improvement and education, which he was entitled to direct, by the exprefs terms of the writings which had passed between him and Mr. S—te, that gentleman was pleased, not only to endeavour, by letters, to alienate the affections of the boy from his adopted father, but at length, got some of his emissaries to carry off the boy, by force, from his governor at P—r—s.

In these circumstances, Mr. H—k—f—n is not inclined to insist for implement of this part of the contract; but he is certainly entitled to demand payment of the allowance stipulated by Mr. S—te for his son's education, down to the term of Whitsunday 1775. It is true, the boy was carried away before that term; but Mr. H—k—f—n had already expended the whole allowance, and he was obliged to maintain the governor at P—r—s till Whitsunday, and to send him home at his own expence.

This memorial cannot be concluded better, than by transcribing two of Mr. H—k—f—n's last letters upon the subject: The first is addressed to Mr. S—te, and is as follows: " December 14th 1774. Sir,—I am informed, that my adopted son has been carried off by force from his governor at P—r—s, at your instigation, and without any of his cloaths, but one coarse suit, which was made up for his journey to join me, I having left him behind when I set out from P—r—s in August last; left, in travelling so early as that, the weather might prove too hot for him, and hurt him; his baggage, however, being then sent off along with mine, as he was to follow me within a month or six weeks after, had you not interfered to prevent him. It seems, however, you have been less delicate in attending to his health and welfare, when you forced him to make such a journey in the midst of winter, and without his cloaths, or any proper person to take
" case

" care of him ; it being also your exprefs order, that his
 " governor should not be allowed to attend him ; and all
 " this, after you was possessed of my letter, assuring you,
 " that his governor should carry him to I—l—d in the
 " spring, upon the simple condition, that you would
 " pay, in the mean time, the annuities due to me, and
 " when his trunk and cloaths were on the road, return-
 " ing to P-r-s to him. I have, however, now ordered
 " them to be sent from thence after him.—Pray God,
 " after such treatment, he may have occasion for them.

" I am likewise advised, that after denying the re-
 " ceipt of Mr. R-b—f-n's letters for a long time, de-
 " manding payment of my annuities, you at last conde-
 " scended to acknowledge the receipt of one, and to
 " answer it with a refusal ;—because (you said) you are
 " not possessed of the rights to my estate ; which, you
 " know, have been lodged in the hands of your agent
 " at E—b—h for these three years past, by your or-
 " der ;—because (you said) I refused to give up to you
 " my adopted son, the custody of whose person, and the
 " sole direction of whose education, being formally se-
 " cured to me, were the conditions upon which you ob-
 " tained my estate ;—and because (you said) you want a
 " compensation from me, from the public burdens pay-
 " able out of the estate, which you amazingly say, *upon*
 " *your honour*, that you never heard of, till your ne-
 " phew told you of them. Conscious are you, Sir, that
 " you got a note of the particulars of those in writing
 " from me at C—k, which you carried in your pocket
 " at least three or four weeks before and after the
 " writing of the contract by Mr. B—m—sh ; often took
 " it out, and conversed with me upon it, and made me
 " explain to you, how sometimes our estates in S—l—d
 " pay to King, to college, to minister, to schoolmaster,
 " &c. ; all which, you said, was new to you, the land-
 " holdings in I—l—d being different. And, lastly, at
 " my sight you locked the note up in your closet.—
 " Conscious are you also, that you readily bound your-
 " self to the payment of these burdens, when you basely
 " went

“ went off from another article (the building of the
 “ house) when you signed the final deeds ; and upon
 “ which occasion, I insisted rather to have the whole
 “ transactions cancelled ; and would have seen that
 “ done, had not some of the gentlemen present, inter-
 “ posed, and proposed an alternative, which most re-
 “ luctantly I was prevailed upon to agree to.

“ What, in the name of wonder, can you propose to
 “ yourself, in the end, from all this shuffling, l—g, and
 “ f—se dealing ? Surely, I can see nothing but dishonour
 “ to yourself, and your concerns. You told me, in one
 “ of your letters long ago, that I had not dealt with an
 “ *Irish bite*, or a man of straw, but with an honest man,
 “ There was something in that expression, and your ap-
 “ plication of it to yourself, which shocked me at the
 “ time, though I did not then know what you meant by
 “ an *Irish bite*. And you very soon after wrote me, in
 “ plain terms, that, in point of fortune, I had actually
 “ dealt with a mere man of straw, in dealing with you :
 “ And also shewed me, that truth and honesty were
 “ things of light esteem with you. Yet, even then, I
 “ find, that I did not conceive the meaning of the term
 “ *Irish bite*, in its full extent. And, how could I or
 “ any man imagine such a character, had you not ex-
 “ plained yourself further, and shewed clearly, in a se-
 “ ries of letters, that avarice is the only god you wor-
 “ ship ? That this was the sole principle which moved
 “ you to propose your son as the object of that entail,
 “ which I had destined for another, seeing that I was,
 “ to all appearance, in a dying way, and knowing, that,
 “ in any event, my life would depend upon my going
 “ abroad, as that again would depend upon your pay-
 “ ing my annuity ; which, it seems, you predetermined
 “ never to do, (as, in fact, you never have done it)
 “ upon frivolous pretences ; and, when confuted in
 “ one, always inventing new ones ; till, by that means,
 “ my death should absolve you from all payment to me,
 “ as well as from all the obligations which you subjec-
 “ ted yourself to, in favours of the heirs of entail ; and
 “ which

" which you had the weakness, as well as the wicked-
 " nefs, to write me, you trusted your son, the first heir
 " of entail, would not call you to account for? Thus, not
 " scrupling to give it under your hand, that a prospect
 " of impunity was all that was requisite, to induce you
 " to commit the greatest act of v--l--y, in which you, at
 " same time, solicited my connivance; and notwithstand-
 " ing my strong and friendly remonstrances to you, up-
 " on that occasion, still persisting in this your scheme;
 " so that, in fact, the fine fields which have been de-
 " stroyed by mismanagement, and the numerous and
 " beautiful nurseries, which have perished, in three
 " years that you have had the administration of the af-
 " fairs of the heirs of entail in your hands, moves the
 " regret of every person who sees those things. And
 " now, Sir, that you have ruined my estate, r-bb-d me
 " of my adopted son, and steadily prosecuted your in-
 " tention of m--d--r--g myself, for three years past, I
 " am at last fully instructed, what is meant by an *Irish*
 " bite. Yet, notwithstanding my personal sufferings, the
 " consideration, that you have put it beyond all remedy,
 " that your posterity, and my future representation,
 " must, for ever, carry the reproach of the i-f-m--s stig-
 " ma, is what gives me the most concern; and makes
 " me doubly regret, that, to have had dealings with an
 " *Irish bite*, has been the fate and cruel misfortune of

(Signed) H. H—K—S—N."

And in a postscript, he adds, " I had almost forgot,
 " that you wrote to Mr. R-b-f-n, that I did not in-
 " form Mrs. S—te about her son.—I am sensible, that
 " my letters, going first into your hands, it depends up-
 " on you, whether she sees them, or not. For shame,
 " Sir: Next time you find yourself disposed to assert
 " such a f—h—d, take out and read only the one which
 " I wrote from P-r-s to Mrs. S—te, of date, August
 " 18th, upon the subject of her son; and in which I
 " told her my sentiments particularly upon this head,
 " and what I would constantly observe, while her son
 " remained with me: And you know, that I not only
 " wrote

“ wrote to her, but to his sister, and also made him
 “ write; all which letters, were actually in your custody
 “ long before you wrote to Mr. R—b—f—n.”

And the other of the letters is addressed to Captain
 H—f—n, and of the following tenor: “ P—r—s, July
 “ 10th, 1775. Sir—Your favour, of date, 20th of
 “ March last, I have only received just now: It had
 “ been kept up at E—b—h four months. (You di-
 “ rected it to H. H—k—f—n, at E—b—h; had you
 “ directed it to M—l—d’s Land, C—n—n—g—te, E—
 “ b—h, it would have been taken care of.) But, al-
 “ though this error had not taken place, I might have
 “ been long of receiving it, it being now five months since
 “ I wrote from P—v—e, to my correspondent at P—r—s,
 “ not to forward any more letters for me to P—v—e,
 “ as, at that time, I set out from thence for P—r—s.
 “ But, as it is above eight months since I lost the power
 “ of my left side, by my distress, and Mr. S—te’s op-
 “ pression, and also lost all hopes of recovery, so that
 “ I had ordered my servants to carry me homewards;
 “ and, as I was often taken ill on my road, lying bed-
 “ fast, three weeks at one place, two weeks at another,
 “ five weeks at a third, &c. I have been four months
 “ upon the journey.

“ You say, that “ Mr. S—te proposes referring to
 “ gentlemen,” &c.—I am going home to die: and all
 “ my view was, to get into a country where I will not
 “ be denied a Christian burial. His views have al-
 “ ways been of a very different nature.—He has been
 “ almost four years in possession of my estate, you
 “ know upon what terms; and refuses to pay my an-
 “ nuities, or any part of them, with a premeditated in-
 “ tention to cut off my life, which he has effected; and,
 “ what will doubtless surprise you more, Mrs. S—te
 “ has (I think) shown, by a letter, above a year ago,
 “ that she had been accessory to this design, from the
 “ beginning.—But, Sir, leaving that betwixt Heaven
 “ and them, I wish to die in peace with him, as with all
 “ mankind. And, if there is any thing serious in this

“ new

“ new proposal of his, (which, by the by, I am far, very
 “ far from believing) you may tell him, that he has no
 “ time to lose. You cannot, Sir, impute it to breach
 “ of charity in me, that I say, I don’t believe him; as,
 “ you know, (for you saw) his letters, wherein, to e-
 “ vade payment of my annuity the first year, he mean-
 “ ly and falsely wrote, that he was insolvent. The se-
 “ cond year, he refused to pay, unless I first gave up to
 “ him my adopted son; which, he knew, I could not,
 “ in conscience do, as, you know, that the exprefs condi-
 “ tions upon which he obtained the advantages of my
 “ entail, (which I had otherwise destined for one of
 “ my own name and family) was, *That the custody of*
 “ *the person, and the direction of the education of the*
 “ *boy, as becoming my son, was made over to me.*
 “ The third year, his pretext was a strange one, *That*
 “ *he had not seen the rights to the estate;* and that was,
 “ because he would not look to them, they being, all
 “ the while, lodged in the hands of his doer at
 “ E—b—h, waiting his arrival in S—l—d, agreeably to
 “ his promises and engagements. His nephew, Mr.
 “ T—f—l—n, having, as would seem, carried the rights
 “ to I—l—d to him, his pretext then became, *That he*
 “ *was told the rights were lame;* but, at same time, he
 “ refused to say, in what points they were lame: And
 “ well does he know, that none in the kingdom can
 “ show better rights. All the while, too, he was writ-
 “ ing, from time to time, sometimes to me, sometimes
 “ to Mr. G—t, sometimes to Mr. R—b—f—n; now, that
 “ he was going to S—l—d himself to pay; then, that
 “ he was sending his nephew with full powers for that
 “ purpose; none of all which, he ever performed, or
 “ intended.

“ Now, you tell me, that he has gone from all these;
 “ and prays you to propose referring the whole dispute
 “ betwixt him and me to the determination of gentle-
 “ men in the country: *That no other measure will be*
 “ *come into; and, if that is not complied with, he will*
 “ *have recourse to equity;* by which, I suppose, he
 “ means

“ means *law*. You know, Sir, that I have great experience of the v-l—y of this man.—I must also inform you, that I now consider myself as being nearly out of the reach of his malice.—Pluming himself with the idea, that, having so long reduced me to want, exhausted my credit, and put it out of my power to prosecute any plan for the recovery of my health, by which he gains 500 l. Sterling *per annum*; and, confiding in his own great fortune, he now threatens my family with the expence of *law*. You may tell him, Sir, that I equally detest and despise his threatenings; and, fearless on the head, chearfully resign the issue of that to Providence.

“ I doubt not, however, that, by this time, he is gone from this last proposal also. All this shuffling, Sir, and the oppression, which has been the consequence of it, to me, and to my family, is self-evident. But, not to make you dwell on this horrid scene; if I do not die by the way, I hope soon to be in Scotland: And, as I am sensible of the many disadvantages which must follow, to him, to my son, and to all concerned, if these matters are not adjusted in my lifetime, I am always willing and ready to settle them amicably; having nothing else to do in this world that gives me much concern. But, if there is any truth in this proposal of his, I fear it comes too late, if he does not make great haste. Had he made this, or any other equitable proposal, at the time when he began to execute his plan of oppression and injustice, and when he turned a deaf ear to every private remonstrance from me, from you, from Mr. G—t, &c. what a load of guilt and reproach would he not have escaped, which he now stands exposed to?—I wish, for the sake of his son and mine, that these things could be buried in oblivion: I only fear, that, unless he has made some payments of late, which were become indispensibly necessary, he has rendered some steps unavoidable, which may bring his conduct to light, so as never to be wiped out. I
“ should

" should be happy to know that it were otherwise ; but
 " it depended upon him.—He has long reduced me, and
 " my family, to be without subsistence. Credit could
 " not always hold out, in such a situation. A case so
 " urgent, and of such detestation, cannot always be
 " concealed or suffered. Whatever steps he has occa-
 " sioned, to redress that oppression, with which he has
 " so long, and so inhumanly glutted himself, and which
 " he has, in part, brought to such a tragical end, for
 " himself, as well as for me, the progress can only be
 " stopped by his diligence in doing justice, so far as is
 " yet in his power ; the future will not depend upon
 " me. It is true, they have anticipated the fall of my
 " annuity, by shortening my life, which they cannot now
 " restore. But, alas ! Sir, they are much to be pitied
 " with that gain, in the way which they have purchased
 " it. Add to all these, the f—d committed against my
 " heirs of entail.—He has ruined their estate, by not
 " fulfilling his obligations, in carrying on the improve-
 " ments :—He has so totally deviated from his engage-
 " ments in this, that, as far as I am able to judge, from
 " the information sent me, 10,000 l. would not be an e-
 " quivalent for the injustice he has done me on that ar-
 " ticle. You know, that, by the terms upon which he
 " obtained the entail, the estate should have been, by
 " this time, nearly brought to its value ; and, by what
 " I have learned, by his mismanagement, I cannot
 " now believe it yields half, perhaps not a third of
 " the value (1200 l. a year) which you put upon it ;
 " when you saw and examined it."

COPY ORIGINAL CONTRACT and
ARTICLES of AGREEMENT betwixt
J--N S--TE and Mr. H--K--S--N.

ARticles of agreement made and concluded upon this 16th day of January, in the year of our Lord 1772, between H-l-n-s H--k--f--n of R-t--l-t, in the parish of K-m--y, in the county of F--e, in N--h B--t--n, Esq; for, and on behalf of R-c--d-B-n-j-m--e S--te, gent. a minor, under the age of twenty-one years, now at St. A--d--s, in the county of F--e, aforesaid, for his education, only son of J--n S--te of P--f--t--f--d, in the south liberties of the city of C--k, in the kingdom of I--l--d, Esq; of the one part, and the said J--n S--te of the other part. Whereas, the said H-l-n-s H--k--f--n is now seised of an estate, in fee-simple, of the aforesaid lands of R-t--l-t, and is possessed of the present stock thereon; which said lands and stock, the said H-l-n-s H--k--f--n has consented and agreed to settle the aforesaid lands on the said R-c--d-B-n-j-m--e S--te, on the terms and conditions herein after mentioned, and according to the plan hereunto annexed. Now, these presents witness, that the said H-l-n-s H--k--f--n, for, and in consideration of the great love and affection which he beareth unto the said R-c--d-B-n-j-m--n S--te, and for the other considerations herein after mentioned, hath granted, bargained, and sold, and by these presents, doth fully, freely, and absolutely grant, bargain, and sell unto the said J--n S--te, in behalf of the said R-c--d-B-n-j-m--n S--te, the aforesaid lands of R-t--l-t, with all the improvements and other appurtenances thereunto belonging, together with all the stock thereon belonging to the said H-l-n-s H--k--f--n, on the farms, and to and for the several uses, intents, and purposes herein after mentioned, and to and for no other use, intent, or purpose whatsoever.

foever: That is to say, that the said J—n S—te shall and will, within the space of seven years from the date hereof, improve the aforesaid lands, as marked out and specified in the aforesaid plan; for which purpose, the said J—n S—te is to have and receive the aforesaid stock now on said lands, and the issues and profits of said lands for the aforesaid term: And from and after the expiration of the aforesaid seven years, that then, the aforesaid lands and premises shall come to, and be vested in the aforesaid R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and his heirs, who are to carry the surname and coat of arms of H—k—f—n; which said lands are to be entailed on the said R—c—d for that purpose, in the strictest terms, and agreeable to the usage of S—l—d. Now, these presents further witness, that the said J—n S—te, for the considerations aforesaid, hath covenanted and agreed, that he will, on the perfection thereof, pay, or well and sufficiently secure to be paid unto the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n and his assigns, the sum of 4000 l. Sterling, with interest for the same, at the rate of 5 l. by the hundred, by the year, until the same shall be discharged. And the said J—n S—te doth also, for him and his heirs, covenant and agree to and with the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n and his assigns, in manner following: That is to say, that the said J—n S—te and his heirs, shall and will pay unto the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n and his assigns, for, and during the term of his natural life, one annuity, or yearly rent-charge of 500 l. Sterling, English currency, to commence from the date hereof, to the payment of which the aforesaid lands of R—t—l—t are hereby made subject; which said annuity, or yearly rent-charge, is to be paid half-yearly; that is to say, on every 16th day of July, and 16th day of January: And in case of non-payment by the space of twenty-one days next after the same shall become due, to distrain for the same, and the distress to dispose of according to law, until payment shall be made thereof, and all costs and charges attending the suing for and recovering the same: And the said J—n S—te doth hereby, for him and

and his heirs, further covenant and agree to pay unto C—s H—k—f—n, only daughter of the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, for and during the term of her natural life, in case she shall happen to survive the said H—l—n—s, one annuity, or yearly rent-charge of 200 l. Sterling, English currency, to commence from the day of the death of the said H—l—n—s; and to be paid by two half-yearly payments; to the payment of which, as the same shall become due as aforesaid, it is hereby declared and agreed, that the aforesaid lands of R—t—l—t shall be subject; and, in case of non-payment by the space of twenty-one days after the same shall become due as aforesaid, then, to distrain the aforesaid lands and premises, and the distress to dispose of according to law, until payment and satisfaction shall be made, with all costs and charges attending the same: And it is hereby declared and agreed, that the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n shall have the management and education of the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, but at the expence of the said J—n S—te: And it is hereby declared and agreed, between the said parties respectively, that such issues and profits as shall be made of the said lands, and the stock thereon, before the day of the date hereof, and which shall be agreeable and conformable to the steward's book, shall go to the account of the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n; and all subsequent profits which shall be made of the said lands and stock from the date hereof, shall go to the account of the said J—n S—te. And it is further hereby declared and agreed upon, by and between the said parties respectively, by these presents, in manner following: That is to say, that all proper deeds and other instruments and writings, shall be executed between the said parties, within the space of six months from the date hereof, for the better and more perfect assuring, and sure-making of the aforesaid premises, with the appurtenances, and all other the matters and things herein specified, according to the true intent and meaning hereof, as counsel learned in the law shall reasonably advise, devise, or require, at the request of either of the said

faid parties : And the faid H-l-n-s H-k-f-n doth covenant and agree, that the aforefaid lands of R-t-l-t, with the appurtenances, shall, within the faid space of fix months, be freed and discharged from all incumbrances whatsoever, which now affect the same, and which were, had been made, committed, or done, by the faid H-l-n-s H-k-f-n : And also, that he, the faid H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, hath good right, full power, and lawful authority, to make this present grant and sale, in manner aforefaid : And that he, the faid H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, shall and will, on the first opportunity, within the faid space of fix months, give up the actual, quiet, and peaceable possession of the faid lands and premises, with the stock thereon, unto the faid J-n S-te, for the several uses, intents, and purposes aforefaid, according to the true intent and meaning hereof. And lastly, for the true performance of all and every the matters and things herein before mentioned, each of the faid parties bindeth himself to the other, in the penal sum of 3000 l. to be paid on non-performance of any of the covenants herein mentioned. In witness whereof, the faid parties have hereunto put their hands and seals, the day and year within written.

Signed, sealed, and deliver } H. H-k-s-n.
ed, in the presence of } J-n S-te.

(Signed) T-o. B-m-h, *Not. Pub.*
J-n F-e.

COPY

COPY CONTRACT and DEED of EN-
TAIL, betwixt H-L-N-S H--K--s--N
and J—N S—TE.

IT is contracted, agreed and ended, betwixt H-l-n-s
H—k—f—n, Esq; of R-t-l-t, in the county of
F—e, of the one part, and J—n S—te of P—f—f—d,
in the south liberties of the city of C—k, in the king-
dom of I—l—d, Esq; for himself, and as administrator-
in-law for R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te his son, and as
taking burden on him for his said son, on the other part,
in manner following: That is to say, The said H-l-n-s
H—k—f—n, as heritable, sole, absolute and unlimited
proprietor of the lands and others under written, for
the great love and affection which he bears to the said
R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te, and for the other considera-
tions herein after mentioned, but with and under the
conditions, provisions, restrictions, limitations, clauses ir-
ritant and resolute, declarations and reservations after
specified, hath given, granted, alienated and disposed,
and doth hereby give, grant, alienate and dispo, heri-
tably and irredeemably, to and in favours of the said
R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te, and the heirs whomsoever to
be procreate of his body; whom failing, to A—e-Y—g
S—te, sister-german of the said R-c—d-B—j-m-n
S—te, and the heirs whatsoever to be procreated of her
body; whom failing, to the heirs whatsoever to be pro-
created of the body of the said J—n S—te; whom
failing, to C—s H—k—f—n, daughter and on-
ly child of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, and the
heirs whatsoever to be procreated of her body;
whom failing, to the heirs whatsoever to be procreated
of the body of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n; whom
failing, to M—y H—k—f—n, otherwise H-y, sister-
german of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, and spouse
to J—n-G-b-l H-y, merchant in D—z-ck, and the
heirs-male of her body; whom failing, to R-b-t
X T—f-l-n,

T—f—l—n, Esq; of B—l—d—e, in the county of C—k, in I—l—d; whom failing, to T—m—s T—f—l—n, son of the said R—b—t T—f—l—n, and the heirs-male of his body; whom failing, to Captain J—l—s S—ke, of the 10th regiment of foot, and the heirs-male of his body; whom all failing, to the nearest heirs and assignees whatsoever of the said R—c—d B—j—m—n S—te, the eldest heir-female, and the descendents of her body, so oft as the succession devolves upon females, or their descendents; excluding still all other heirs-portioners, and succeeding always without division, throughout the whole course of succession, in all time coming; and the right of primogeniture taking place among the female heirs, in the same manner as it is established by law amongst the male heirs;—all and sundry the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n his lands and estate of R—t—l—t, lying in the parishes of K—m—ny and B—m—r—o, and county of F—e aforesaid, as the same are particularly described in the procuratory of resignation under written; together with the whole writings, title-deeds, and securities, both old and new, as well legal as voluntary or conventional, made, granted, or conceived, or which can be anyways interpreted in favours of the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, his ancestors or authors, of or in relation to the said lands and estate; with all right of property, possession, or otherways, which the said H—l—n—s H—k—r—f—n has, or can anyways claim or pretend thereto, any manner of way, and whole rents, profits and duties, issues and casualties of the same; in which lands and others before and after mentioned, the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n binds and obliges himself, his heirs and successors whomsoever, to invest, vest and seise the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and the other heirs and substitutes before specified, to be holden, either immediately of and under the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, and his forefairs, or from him or them, of their superiors thereof, as freely and fully as they, or either of them, held, hold, or might have holden the same themselves; but always with and under the burdens, conditions, provisions, restrictions,

restrictions, exceptions, irritancies, declarations and reservations under written. And for accomplishing the same by resignation, the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n does hereby constitute and appoint

and each of them, jointly and severally, his lawful and irrevokable procurators; with full power, warrant and commission for him, and in his name and behalf, to compare before his immediate lawful superiors of the lands, and others foresaid, or their commissioners, having power from them to receive resignations, and grant new infeftments thereon; and then and there, with all due reverence as becometh, by staff and baston, as use is, to resign, as he, by these presents, resigns, surrenders, overgives and delivers, all and whole the said lands of R—t—l—t, with the manor-place thereof, houses, biggings, yards, orchards, mill, mill-lands, brew-lands, parts, pendicles and pertinents of the same, with the astricted multures of the lands of M—d—c—n—e and S—r, and of the said lands of R—t—l—t, and whole pertinents thereof, lying within the late stewartry of F—e, parish of K—m—y, and sherrifdom of F—e, with the privileges, rights of servitude, commony, or otherwise, pertaining and belonging, or anyways known to pertain and belong to the lands and others foresaid, or any part thereof. As also, all and whole that four acres of arable land, two whereof ly nigh the toft at the south rivulet, betwixt the lands of G—ge J—k at the west, and the lands of the proprietor of N—t—n at the east; and the other whereof, commonly called the D—l A—s, ly between the lands of D—v—d J—k at the west, and the lands of the proprietor of N—t—n at the east, with the houses, biggings, yards, tofts, crofts, and whole privileges and pertinents thereof, being part of the abbacy of B—m—r—no, lying within the lordship and barony thereof, parish of B—l—m—r—no, and sherrifdom of F—e afore said, with the whole other houses, biggings, yards, tofts, crofts, mosses, muirs, parts, pendicles, privileges, pertinents, or others, anyways belonging, or known to belong to the lands and others foresaid, or any part thereof, any manner of way

X 2

whatsoever;

whatsoever ; with all right of property, possession, or otherwise, that the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n has, or can anyways claim or pretend thereto, in the hands of the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n his immediate lawful superiors, or of their commissioners, having power from them to receive resignations of lands and heritages, and grant new infeftments thereupon, in favours, and for new infeftment of the lands and others foresaid, to be made, given and granted to the said R-c-d-B-j-m-n S-te, and the heirs whatsoever to be procreate of his body ; whom failing, to the said A-ce-Y-g S-te, and the heirs whatsoever to be procreated of her body ; whom failing, to the heirs whatsoever to be procreated of the body of the said J-n S-te ; whom failing, to the said C-s H-k-f-n, daughter and only child of the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, and the heirs whatsoever to be procreated of her body ; whom failing, to the heirs whatsoever to be procreated of the body of the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n ; whom failing, to the said M-y H-k-f-n, otherwise H-y, and the heirs-male of her body ; whom failing, to the said R-b-t T-f-l-n ; whom failing, to the said T-m-s T-f-l-n, and the heirs-male of his body ; whom failing, to the said Captain J-l-s S-k, and the heirs-male of his body ; whom all failing, to the said R-c-d-B-j-m-n S-te, his nearest heirs and assignees whatsoever, the eldest heir-female, and the descendants of her body, so oft as the succession devolves upon females or their descendants ; excluding still all other heirs-portioners, and succeeding always, without division, throughout the whole course of succession, in all time coming, and the right of primogeniture taking place among the female heirs, in the same manner as it is established by law among the male heirs : But with and under the burdens, provisions, restrictions, limitations, exceptions, clauses irritant and resolute, declarations and reservations under-written, viz. With and under the burden of the payment of a free liferent annuity of 500 l. Sterling to the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, during all the days of his life, and of the like annuity of 200 l. money

money foresaid, to the said C-----s H--k--f--n, daughter and only child of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, during all the days of her life, after the death of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n her father, in case she shall happen to survive him, or a provision to her of 1000 l. Sterling, in the option of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, and, failing thereof, in the option of the said C—s H—k—f—n his daughter, in the events after-mentioned ; which respective annuities, and eventual provision of 1000 l. are hereby declared a real and preferable burden and incumbrance upon the lands and others foresaid, and are to be payable at the terms, with annual rent, and in manner herein after specified. And in case of non-payment of the said respective annuities, within the space of twenty-one days after the same shall become due, it is hereby declared and agreed, and specially provided, that it shall be in the power of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, and the said C—s H—k—f—n his daughter, not only to sue for, levy, and uplift the said respective annuities, so oft as the same shall so become due, out of the first and readiest of the rents, mails and duties of the lands and others foresaid, or any part thereof, but also to distress, or otherwise attach the said lands themselves, in any manner competent in law, not only for payment of the said respective annuities and eventual provision of 1000 l. but also for payment of the annual rents thereof, and of all costs and charges attending the recovery of the same ; and with and under these conditions, that the said R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te, and the whole heirs and substitutes afore said, who shall succeed to him in the said lands and estate, shall, and by acceptance hereof, become hereby bound and obliged to use, bear, and constantly retain, in all time after their succession, the surname of H—k—f—n, and arms-bearing, and coat-armorial of that family ; and the husbands of all the female heirs succeeding to the said estate, shall also be, and do, by acceptance hereof, become hereby bound and obliged to assume, use, bear, and constantly retain the said surname and arms : As also, that the said

R-c—d-

R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and the whole heirs and substitutes aforefaid, fucceeding to the faid lands and eftate, fhall be obliged to poffefs and enjoy the fame, in virtue of thefe prefents, and the infeftments, rights and conveyances to follow hereupon, and by no other right or title whatever, which may be inconsistent herewith, or prejudicial hereto: As alfo, to caufe ingrofs, and *verbatim* insert, the forefaid courfe and order of fucceffion, and the feveral conditions, provifions, limitations, reftriCTIONS, claufes irritant and refolutive, and declarations herein contained, in the instruments of refignation, charters and infeftments to follow hereupon, and in all the fubfequent procuratories and instruments of refignation, charters fpecial, retoured fervices, instruments of feifin, and other transmissions and inveftitures of the faid lands and eftate. And in like manner, the faid R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and whole heirs and substitutes aforefaid, fucceeding to the faid lands and eftate, fhall be bound and obliged to fatisfy and pay all real, legal and public burdens, wherewith the fame may or can, by law, be anyways affected or made liable, at any time hereafter, from and after the date hereof, and with and under the reftriCTIONS and limitations under-written; as it is hereby exprefsly conditioned and provided, that the wives and husbands of the feveral substitutes and heirs fucceeding to the lands and others forefaid, fhall be, and are hereby debarred and excluded from all right of courtefy or terce, to or upon the fame, or any part thereof, any law or cuftom to the contrary notwithstanding. And further, it is hereby exprefsly conditioned and provided, That it fhall not be in the power of the faid R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, or any of the heirs or substitutes aforefaid, fucceeding to the faid lands and eftate, to fell, alienate, impignorate or difpone the fame, or any part thereof, either irredeemably or under reversion, or to burden the fame, in whole or in part, with debts or fums of money, infeftments of annualrent, wadsets, provifions to wives, husbands or children, or any other burden or fervitude whatever, directly or indirectly,

directly, to the prejudice of the full, free, and absolute possession of the immediate succeeding or any remoter heir or substitute; it being the true meaning and intention hereof, that the surname of H—k—f—n, and lands and estate thereof, shall never be disjoined or separated, or the lands burdened, or in any degree affected, to the prejudice of the heir or substitute in possession thereof at the time, or of any heir or substitute who may afterwards succeed: And with and under this restriction and condition also, that the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and all the other heirs and substitutes, succeeding to the lands and others before disposed, are, and shall be hereby limited and restrained from being guilty of treason, or any other crime, from doing or committing any act civil or criminal, and granting any deed, directly or indirectly, in any sort, whereby the lands and estate before disposed, or any part thereof, may be affected, apprised, adjudged, forfeited, become escheat, or confiscated, or be any manner of way evicted from the said heirs or substitutes, or this tailzie hurt, or in any degree prejudged; nor shall the said lands and estate be affected or burdened with, or be subjected or liable to be apprised, or any other way evicted, either in whole or in part, for or by any such debts or deeds. And it is hereby specially provided and declared, That it shall not be in the power of the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, or any of the other heirs or substitutes succeeding to the said lands and estate, as said is, to grant tacks or leases of the whole, or any part thereof, for a longer space than nineteen years; and which lease or leases shall or can be only granted for an adequate value: And with and under this irritancy, as it is hereby expressly conditioned and provided, That in case any of the heirs or substitutes, succeeding to the lands and others foresaid, shall contravene the before-written conditions, provisions, restrictions or limitations herein contained, or any of them, that is, shall fail or neglect to obey or perform the said conditions and provisions, and each of them, or shall act contrary to the said restrictions

strictions and limitations, or any of them ; then, and in any of these cases, the person or persons so contravening, shall, for him or herself only, *ipso facto* amit, lose and forfeit all right, title, and interest which he or she hath to the lands and estate before disposed. And, as such right shall become void and extinct, so the said lands and estate shall devolve, accresce and belong to the person in the course of succession, although descended of the contravener's body, in the same manner as if the contravener was naturally dead, and had died before the contravention : And, upon every contravention which may happen, by and through any of the heirs succeeding to the said lands and estate, their failing to perform all and each of the conditions, or acting contrary to all or any of the restrictions before written, it is hereby expressly provided and declared, not only that the said lands and estate shall not be burdened with, or liable to the debts and deeds, crimes and acts of the heirs and substitutes contravening, as is already herein provided, but also, all debts contracted, deeds granted, and acts done contrary to the conditions and restrictions before written, or the true intent and meaning hereof, shall be of no force, strength, or effect, and shall be ineffectual and unavailable against the other heirs called to succeed, and who, as well as the said lands and estate, shall noways be burdened therewith, more than if such debts and deeds had not been granted or contracted, or if such acts, crimes, or omissions had never been done or happened. And also, it is hereby expressly provided and declared, That it shall be free and lawful to every heir and substitute, who shall have a title by and through any contravention, or the incapacity of any former heir, and though minor at the time, to sue and obtain declarator of his own right, and of the irritancy of the former heir's right, or to serve heir to the person who died last vest and seised in the lands and estate before disposed, preceding the heir's becoming incapable, or contravening, as said is ; and thereby, or by adjudication, or any other form,

form, or legal way or method, to establish in his or her person, the right and title of and to the said lands and estate; and that without being subjected or liable to the debts or deeds of the person or persons becoming incapable, or contravening, and without regard to their neglects or omissions, or any other alteration made or intended, or acts done by them, contrary to the conditions and restrictions hereby prescribed; but all the heirs and substitutes succeeding upon any incapacity or contravention, and heirs succeeding to them, shall be subject and liable to the same conditions, restrictions, and irritancies, throughout the whole course of succession: And also, the person becoming incapable, or contravening as aforesaid, shall from thenceforth be excluded and debarred from the administration and management of the lands and estate before disposed, during the pupillarity and minority of the next heir succeeding thereto, and also, during the minority of any nearer heir, who shall thereafter exist and succeed to the same; and that notwithstanding, such former heir may, by law, be entitled to be tutor, curator, or administrator-in-law to the said succeeding heir; and it shall be free and lawful to any person, other than such former heir, to obtain gifts of tutory-dative, or curators-bonis, to or of such next heir so succeeding, and to any nearer heir afterwards existing, successively; and also, free and lawful to the said succeeding heirs themselves respectively, after elapsing of their pupillarities, to choose curators, one or more, for the management of the said estate, and to declare said curators free from all omissions in their management. But provided always, as it is hereby expressly provided, That although the next heir of tailzie existing at the time, may, upon the death or contravention of the former heir, have obtained the right and title of and to the lands and estate before disposed, established in his or her person, yet, notwithstanding thereof, in case a nearer heir shall afterwards exist, or shall be called to the succession, that then, and in that event, not only the person who had succeeded upon the

Y

failure

failure or contravention of a former heir, and thereupon had established a right in his or her person, and the heirs who may have succeeded to him or her, shall be bound and obliged to denude and divest themselves of the said lands and estate, to and in favour of such nearer heir, but also, their right and title shall cease, and become void and extinct; and that, so soon as such nearer heir shall have executed a summons of declarator of his right; and the lands and estate shall descend and belong to such nearer heir, who would have succeeded if he had existed at the time of the failure or contravention of the former heir, or if the event which calls such nearer heir to the succession had then happened; and such nearer heir, so existing or called to the succession, shall have access to establish a right to the said lands and estate in his or her person, by the same way and method which was competent upon the failure or contravention of the former heir, or by adjudication, declarator, or service, or any other way, method, or manner which shall be judged legal and proper for that purpose, so that the right of succession shall always and unalterably devolve to the nearest heir, according to the order hereby appointed, and never be further diverted, than to exclude only the contraveners, or persons rendered hereby incapable to succeed or hold the estate, and without prejudice to the next heirs in order: Reserving nevertheless to the person who shall succeed, upon the death or incapacity of the former heir, the whole rents and profits of the said lands and estate, due at and preceding the term of Martinmas or Whitsunday immediately before the date of citation to be given to such remoter heir, upon a summons of declarator to be raised at the instance of the nearer heir, and without prejudice to the remoter heir to succeed afterwards to the said lands and estate, in the order and course of succession, upon the failure of the nearer heir called thereto; and declaring, that such nearer heir shall have right only to the rents, issues and profits payable at the first term of Whitsunday or Martinmas immediately

mediately preceding the date of citation upon the aforesaid summons of declarator; and with and under these conditions also, that all the heirs who shall succeed to the said lands and estate, shall be holden and obliged to obtain themselves timeously entered with the superiors thereof, and infest therein; and that action and process shall ly and be competent at the instance of every heir succeeding to the said lands and estate, against the heirs of line, and other representatives of the preceding heirs who possessed the same for relief of all legal and public burdens affecting the said lands and estate, which became due and payable during the possession of such preceding heir, and shall not have been satisfied and paid by him or her during that time; acts, instruments and documents upon the premises, one or more, to ask, take, and cause extend, and generally every other legal and necessary thing thereanent to do, that the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n could do himself, if personally present, or to the office of procurator, in such case is by law competent; promising to hold firm and stable whatever shall be so done, without revocation. As also, the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n does hereby assign, transfer, and make over, from him, his heirs and successors, to and in favours of the said R-c—d-B--j-m---e S—te, and the other heirs and substitutes before-mentioned, but with and under the burdens, conditions, restrictions, and other clauses before-written, not only the whole progress of writs, title-deeds, and securities both old and new, made, granted, or anyways conceived in favours of the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, or his ancestors, predecessors or authors, of, or in relation to, or anyways concerning the lands and others before disposed, but also, the whole rents, mails, duties, kains, customs, profits, and casualties thereof, from and since the 16th day of January last, and in all time thereafter, with full power to call, sue for, uplift, receive, and discharge the same: But, notwithstanding thereof, reserving always the possession of the said lands and estate, for the space of seven years from the said 16th day of January last, to

Y 2

the

the said J---n S---te: And full and ample power is hereby given to him, to levy, uplift, sue for, receive, and discharge the rents, mails, duties, profits, and issues thereof, for the said space of seven years, and no longer; which rents and issues, are hereby declared to belong to him, in consideration of certain improvements, which he has become bound to make upon the said lands; and for which rents, duties, and issues, falling due, or uplifted during the aforesaid space, he shall not be accountable to the said R-c---d-B--j-m-n S---te, or any person whatever; and declaring the possession of the said R-c---d-B---j-m-n S---te, or the other heirs of tailzie, or their right to the issues and duties of the lands, to commence only at the expiration of the said seven years. And the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n binds and obliges himself and his forefairs, to free and relieve the said R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te, and the other heirs before written, of all feu, blench, teind, and other duties, ministers stipends, and schoolmasters salaries, cess, supply, and all taxations, private or public, due, payable, or exigible out of the lands and others foresaid, at and preceding the said 16th day of January last, which is hereby declared to have been their entry to the same; the said R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te, and the other heirs and substitutes before specified, being obliged to free and relieve the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, and his above-written, of the like burdens, duties, and exactions in all time thereafter. And further, the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n binds and obliges him, his heirs and successors, to warrant this present disposition, lands, mill, and others herein contained, infestments to follow hereupon, with the progress of writs, and title-deeds of the same, to be free, safe, and sure, from all perils, dangers, evictions, and burdens whatsoever, that may, or can anyways affect the same, preceding the date hereof, at all hands, and against all deadly, as law will: Excepting always from such warrandice, all feu, and other subaltern rights granted by him, or his predecessors or authors, of parts of the lands and others foresaid: And the

the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n has instantly delivered up to the said J-n S-te, for behoof of the said R-c-d-B-j-m-n S-te, and the other heirs and substitutes before specified, the said whole progress of writs and title-deeds; but which shall always be forthcoming to the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, and his forefairs, when they shall have use for the same, to defend against incumbrances or evictions, if any be, upon receipts and obligations to restore the said writs, in as good case as they receive them. For the which causes, and in implement of the said J-n S-te's part of the present contract, for behoof, and on account of his said son, the said J-n S-te has instantly advanced and paid to the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, the sum of 4000 l. Sterling: And the said J-n S-te, for himself, and as taking burden on him for his said son, bind and oblige themselves, conjunctly and severally, their heirs, executors, and successors, to satisfy and pay to the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, or his assignees, during all the days of the lifetime of the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, a free life rent annuity of 500 l. Sterling yearly; and, after his death, to C-s H-k-f-n, his daughter, or her assignees, during all the days of her life, in case she shall happen to survive her father, a like free life rent annuity of 200 l. Sterling; both the said annuities by half-yearly payments, and by equal portions, viz. upon the 16th day of January, and 16th day of July each year; beginning the first term's payment upon the 16th day of July next, and the other half year's payment upon the 16th day of January next 1773, and so forth by equal portions at said two terms, during the subsistence of the said several annuities; with a fifth part more of penalty, in case of failzie, and annual rent of the said several annuities, from the respective terms of payment thereof, yearly, termly, and proportionally thereafter, during the not-payment. And further, declaring and consenting, that, in case of not punctual payment of the said respective annuities, within the
space

space of twenty-one days after the same become due, it shall thereafter be in the power of the said H-l-n-s and C---s H-k-f-n, or either of them, or their assignees, to recover the said respective annuities, by diligence against the said J-n S-te, personally, or against his separate estate, real or personal, or to sue, levy, uplift, distrain, or otherwise attach the said lands and estate of R-t-l-t, for payment thereof, and of the annualrents and charges attending the recovery of the same, in manner before provided, the one without prejudice of the other, as the said H-l-n-s and C---s H-k-f-n, and their forefairs, shall find proper and necessary: Which annuity of 200 l. provided to the said C---s H-k-f-n, is hereby declared to be in lieu and place of, and which she shall accept of, in full of the provision of 1000 l. Sterling, formerly provided to her by the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n her father, payable to her at the first term of Whitsunday or Martinmas after his decease, or his marrying a second wife, conform to a contract and agreement, entered into betwixt him and B-b-a M-l-d his spouse, dated and registered in the commissary-court books of St. A-d-s, the 22d day of March 1769: * *But reserving always power to the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, by a deed or writing to be execute by him, at any time in his life, to retract the foresaid annuity of 200 l. and repone the said C---s H-k-f-n to her former provision of 1000 l.; and failing thereof, declaring, that it shall be in the power of the said C---s H-k-f-n herself, to take, or accept of the said annuity or provision before mentioned, as she shall think proper; and in both, or either of these cases, the said annuity or provision, are hereby declared a real and preferable burden upon the said lands and estate*

* This is the clause for which Miss H-k-f-n afterwards contended so much to take away her f-t-r's life.—Surely, when a man makes a donation, he has a right to make the terms of it also. Let the impartial world now judge, whether it was prudent and proper in a parent, to keep this check over a child of such a disposition.

estate of R—t—l—t. And the said parties consent to the registration hereof in the register of tailzies, or in the books of C—c—l and S—f—n, or others competent in S—l—d, or in any competent register in I—l—d, or elsewhere, for preservation; and, if needful, that all execution of the law may pass on a decret to be here-to interponed, in form as effeirs. And thereto constitute

our procurators for that purpose. And, to the end that the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and the other heirs of tailzie before specified, may be presently infeft and seised in the lands and others before disposed, I the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n hereby desire, constitute, and require you

and each of you, conjunctly and severally, my baillies in that part, hereby specially constitute, that, upon sight hereof, ye pass to the ground of the lands and others before disposed, and give heritable state and seisin, real, actual, and corporal possession thereof, to the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, and the heirs whatsoever of his body; whom failing, to the other heirs of tailzie before specified; but with and under the conditions, provisions, restrictions, limitations, clauses irritant and resolute, burdens, declarations, and reservations before written, which are here holden as repeated, *brevitatis causa*, and that by delivery to him or them, or their attorney or attorneys, in his or their names, bearers hereof, all symbols necessary; and this in noways you will leave undone. For doing whereof, I commit to you, and each of you, my baillies foresaid, my full power, by this my precept, directed to you for that effect. In witness whereof, these presents, wrote upon this and the twenty-two preceding pages of stamped paper, by A—x—d—r G—t, clerk to I—c G—t writer to the signet, are, with another duplicate of the same, subscribed by the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n and J—n S—te, at R—t—l—t, the 29th day of April 1772 years, before these witnesses, J—n M—v—le, Esq; of C—n—e, M—u—r—e T—t of P—c—lo, A—x—d—r B—l—e of P—r—b—th,

b—th, and the said A—x—d—r G—t, witnesses also to the parties signing the addition on the margin of the 18th page. (Signed) H. H—k—s—n, J—n S—te, J— M—v—le, witness, M—r—e T—t, witness, A. B—l—e, witness, A—x. G—t, witness,

Copy REGISTERED OBLIGATION by
J—n S—te, Esq; to H—l—n—s H—k—s—n,

AT E—b—h, the 24th day of August 1773 years, in presence of the L—ds of C—c—l and S—f—n, compeared Mr. D—v—d R—e a—v—c—e, as procurator for J—n S—te, after designed, and gave in the obligation under written, desiring the same might be registered in their L—sh—s books, conform to the effect therein mentioned, which desire the said L—ds found reasonable, and ordained the same to be done accordingly; whereof the tenor follows: I J—n S—te of P—f—f—d, Esq; in the fourth liberties of the city of C—k, in the kingdom of I—l—d, in respect that H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, Esq; of R—t—l—t has disposed and devised his lands and estate of R—t—l—t to R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te my son, by a contract and deed of entail, executed and delivered to me, of this date, and that it hath been covenanted and agreed betwixt the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n and me, that I should become bound to improve, within the space of seven years from and after the 16th day of January last, the aforesaid lands and estate of R—t—l—t, according to, and in the way and manner marked out and specified in a plan thereof, signed by the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n and me, of this date, as relative hereto; and that, for the better enabling me to perform the same, the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n has disposed and made over to me, for behoof of my said son, giving me
the

the use of the same for the foresaid seven years, the whole corns, cattle, labouring utensils, and other stocking upon the foresaid lands, that did belong to him, upon the sixteenth day of January last, and binding me, in testimony of my acceptance of the foresaid disposition, to make over to the said R—c—d-B—j—m—n S—te my son, the whole stocking that shall happen to belong to me upon the foresaid lands, at the expiration of the said seven years: Therefore, in implement of the foresaid covenant and agreement, I, the said J—n S—te, hereby bind and oblige me, my heirs and successors, within the space of seven years, from the said sixteenth day of January last, to improve the foresaid lands and estate of R—t—l—t, according to, and in the precise way and manner marked out and specified in the foresaid plan referred to: That is to say, to erect and build the mansion-house of R—t—l—t, and the other houses, ditches, fences, and inclosures, marked out thereon, of the several dimensions, and in the form and manner particularly specified in said plan; and labour, manure, and dress the fields, so as the same may be in the best order and condition at the expiration of the foresaid seven years, and as near as possible in culture, as follows, *viz.* 70 acres under wheat, 70 acres under barley, 70 acres under oats, 60 or 70 acres under pease or beans, 60 or 70 acres under sown grass, fit for cutting, one year old; 60 or 70 acres more under sown grass, for cutting, two years old; 70 acres under sown grass for pasture, three years old; 70 acres more, under sown grass for pasture, four years old; 70 acres in fallow ground, under turnip; and the remaining 46 acres, for garden and orchard ground, planting, feeding, and pasturing sheep, swine, and other like bestial, all in the way and manner specified in the foresaid plan; agreeable to which, in all respects, I bind and oblige me, and my forefairs, to perform the haill premises, within the time limited, under the penalty of 500 l. Sterling, over and above performance. But declaring, nevertheless, that in place of erecting and building the foresaid mansion-house and

office-houfes, I bind and oblige me, and my forefaids, to make payment to the faid R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te, whom failing, to the other heirs of entail, contained in a contract and deed of entail, execute betwixt the faid H-l-n-s H—k—f—n and me, of this date, of the fum of 1500 l. Sterling, at the first Whitfunday or Martinmas after the faid R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te shall arrive at the age of twenty-one years, with annual-rent thereafter till payment, and penalty in cafe of failzie. Further, in terms of the forefaid difpofition, by the faid H-l-n-s H—k—f—n to me, of the ftocking on the faid lands of R-t—l-t, I hereby bind and oblige me, my heirs, executors, and fucceffors, to convey and make over to the faid R-c—d-B-n-j-m-n S—te, my fon, his heirs and affignees, the whole moveable fubjects and ftocking of whatever kind, that fhall happen to belong to me upon the forefaid lands at the expiration of the faid feven years. And laftly, as, by the aforefaid contract, it is exprefly ftipulated and agreed, that the faid H-l-n-s H—k—f—n fhould have the management and education of the faid R-c—d-B-n-j-m-n S—te, from and fince the faid 16th day of January laft; therefore, the care and fuperintendency of the faid R-c—d-B—j-m-n S—te his education, and the cuftody of his perfon, during his minority, are hereby totally devolved upon the faid H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, but at the fole expence of me the faid J—n S—te; and which I do hereby become bound and obliged to pay, as the fame fhall be drawn for or demanded by the faid H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, or any perfon authorized by him, not exceeding the fum of 200 l. Sterling yearly, and that under a fuitable penalty, over and above performance. And I confent to the registration hereof, in the books of C—c-l and S-f-n, or others competent, in S—l—d, or in any competent register in I—l—d, or elfewhere, that letters of horning on fix days charge, and all other execution of the law may pafs hereon in form, as effeirs: And thereto conftitute Mr. D-v-d R-e advocate, my procurator, &c. In witnefs whereof, thefe presents, wrote upon this and the

the preceding two pages of stamped paper, by A--x--d--r G--t, clerk to l--c G--t, writer to the signet, are subscribed by me, at R--t--l--t, the 29th day of April 1772 years, before these witnesses, J--n M--v--e, Esq; of C--n--e, M--e T--t, Esq; of P--c--l--o, A--x--d--r B--l--e, Esq; of P--b--h, and the said A--x--d--r G--t, witnesses also to my signing the addition on the margin of the second page. (Signed) J--n S--TE, J--. M--v--e, witness, M--e T--t, witness, A. B--e, witness, A--x--d--r G--t, witness. Extracted upon this and the five preceding pages, by

(Signed A--H. C--B--L.

COPY REGISTERED BOND, J--N
S--TE, Esq; to H--L--N--S H--K--S--N.

AT E--b--h, the 15th day of September 1773 years, in presence of the L--ds of C--c--l and S--f--n, compeared Mr. D--v--d R--e advocate, as procurator for J--n S--te after designed, and gave in the bond under-written, desiring the same might be registered in their L--sh--ps books, conform to the clause of registration therein contained. Which desire the said L--ds found reasonable, and ordained the same to be done accordingly; whereof the tenor follows:—I J--n S--te of P--f--d, Esq; in the south liberties of the city of C--k, in the kingdom of I--l--d, for myself, and as administrator, and taking burden upon me for R--c--d--B--j--m--n S--te my son, do hereby acknowledge, that I am justly addebted, resting and owing to H--l--n--S H--k--f--n, Esq; of R--t--l--t, the sum of 4000 l. Sterling, renouncing all objections to the contrary; which sum of 4000 l. Sterling, I hereby bind and oblige me, my heirs, executors and successors, to satisfy and pay

to the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, Esq; his heirs, executors or assignees, at the term of Whitsunday next, with a fifth part more of penalty, in case of failzie, and the due and ordinary annualrent of the said principal sum, from the 16th day of January last, notwithstanding the date hereof, to the foresaid term of payment, and yearly, termly, and proportionally thereafter, during the not-payment. And I consent to the registration hereof, in the books of C-c-l and S-f-n, or others competent, in S-l-d, or in any competent registers in I-l-d, or elsewhere, that letters of horning on fix days charge, and all other execution of the law, may pass on a decret to be hereto interponed, in form as effeirs: And thereto constitute Mr. D-v-d R-e advocate, my procurator, &c. In witness whereof, these presents, wrote upon this and the preceding page of stamped paper, by A-x-d-r G-t, clerk to I-c G-t writer to the signet, are subscribed by me, at R-t-l-t, the 29th day of April 1772, before these witnesses, J-n M-v-e of C-n-e, M-e T-t, Esq; of P-c-l-o, A-x-d-r B-l-e, Esq; of P-b-h, and the said A-x-d-r G-t. (Signed) J-n S-te. *J. M-v-e*, witness, *M-e T-t*, witness, *A. B-l-e*, witness, *A-x-d-r G-t*, witness. Extracted upon this and the preceding page, by
(Signed) J. P-g-e.

COPY REGISTERED COMMISSION,
by J--N S--TE, Esq; to Mr. S---G--R,
and others.

AT C-p-r, the 2d day of March 1773.—In presence of Mr. J-s D-g-h of S-c-g, advocate, sheriff-depute of F-e, compeared P-r-e R-m-r writer in C-p-r, as procurator for J-n S-te, Esq; after designed, and gave in the commission underwritten,

written, desiring the same might be insert and registered in the sheriff-court books of F—e, in terms of, and conform to the clause of registration therein contained, after insert. Which desire the said sheriff-depute judging reasonable, he ordained the same to be done accordingly; of which commission, the tenor follows:—I J—n S—te, Esq; of P—f—f—d, in the south liberties of the city of C—k, in I—l—d, considering that H—l—n—s H—k—f—n of R—t—l—t, in the county of F—e, has, by contract with me, settled and entailed his lands and estate of R—t—l—t, upon R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te my son, giving me the possession thereof for seven years, from the 16th day of January last, and binding me to execute sundry improvements upon said estate during that period, whereby it will be necessary and proper for me, not only as administrator-in-law for my son, but also for my own private concern, to nominate and appoint proper persons for the management of my affairs in S—l—d, during my absence; therefore, I do hereby nominate and appoint Major J—n M—v—e of C—n—e, A—x—d—r S—g—r, Esq; younger of B—kh—l, advocate, the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, and I—c G—t writer to the signet, to be my commissioners and trustees, for managing my whole affairs in this country, anyways regarding me or my son, during my absence; giving and granting full power, warrant and commission to my said commissioners, or any two of them, to do every thing they shall think necessary or proper, for the right management of my affairs, in my absence, in the same manner as I might or could do myself, if personally present; and, particularly, without prejudice of the foresaid generality, to uplift, receive, discharge and pay away all sums of money due, or falling due to me, or by me, to any person or persons whatsoever; as also, to clear and discharge, so oft as they shall think proper and necessary, the accompts of my steward and overseer upon the estate of R—t—l—t, and the accompts of the factor appointed by me for uplifting and collecting the yearly rents of said estate, and to pursue and defend, in
my

my name, in any action or subject-matter of litigation that may concern me, or the affairs of me or my son, or enter into submissions regarding the same, binding us to the performance of any decrees to be thereupon pronounced, and to homologate, if necessary, every particular transaction to be done or entered into by them, or any two of them, which I hereby promise and become bound to ratify and homologate accordingly; and declaring, that my said commissioners shall only be accountable to me, each of them for his own actual introductions, and not *in solidum* for each other, and for no omissions whatsoever. And, lastly, That the present commission shall stand good, and be effectual, until recalled by a writing under my hand; consenting to the registration hereof in the books of C—c—l and S—f—n, or others competent, for preservation; and, if necessary, that all execution of the law may pass hereon, in form as effects: And thereto constitute P—r—e R—m—r, writer in C—p—r, my procurator. In witness whereof, these presents, wrote upon this and the preceding page of stamped paper, by A—x—d—r G—t, clerk to the said I—c G—t, are subscribed by me, at E—b—h, the 15th day of May 1772 years, before witnesses, J—s B—e, son to Mrs. B—e in M—l—d's Land, C—n—g—e, and the said A—x—d—r G—t. (Signed) J—N S—TE. A—x—d—r G—t, witness, J—s B—e, witness. Extracted upon this and the two preceding pages, by

(Signed) J—. H—B—H, clk.

INVEN.

INVENTORY of the STOCKING upon
the Estate of R-T--L-T, delivered over to
J---s T---s-N.

Work Oxen as follows.

			L.	s.	d.	L.	s.	d.
1.	1	called Buckie	—	5	10	0		
2.	1	ditto, Gardiner	—	5	5	0		
3.	1	— Serjeant	—	5	10	0		
4.	1	— Major	—	3	10	0		
5.	1	— Francis	—	6	10	0		
6.	1	— Whitie	—	7	10	0		
7.	1	— Slutcher	—	6	0	0		
8.	1	— Baldorras	—	5	0	0		
9.	1	— Michael Brocky	—	8	8	0		
10.	1	— Marr	—	5	10	0		
11.	1	— Aitken	—	5	10	0		
12.	1	— Bouter	—	5	5	0		
13.	1	— Belton	—	5	10	0		
14.	1	— Crack Yoke	—	6	6	0		
15.	1	— Flether	—	5	5	0		
16.	1	— Provost	—	6	6	0		
				<hr/> 92 15 0				

Work Horses as follows.

1.	Donald	—	—	5	0	0		
2.	Mare Katy	—	—	10	0	0		
3.	Cloverous	—	—	7	0	0		
4.	Mare Ribbons	—	—	10	0	0		
5.	Mare Busk	—	—	10	0	0		
6.	Gray Horse	—	—	10	0	0		
7.	Diamond	—	—	10	0	0		
8.	Black Horse	—	—	10	0	0		
9.	Mare Baby	—	—	10	0	0		
				<hr/> 82 0 0				

Milk

Milk Cows as follows.

			L.	s.	d.	L.	s.	d.
1.	1	Whittingham	—	—	8	0	0	
2.	1	Roffie	—	—	6	0	0	
3.	1	Cunningham	—	—	7	0	0	
								21 0 0
4.	4	calves at	—	—	8	0	0	
	3	year-old queys	-	-	9	0	0	
	1	ditto stot	-	-	3	10	0	
	2	2 year-old queys	-	-	8	0	0	
	2	ditto stots	-	-	6	0	0	
	27	oxen feeding on turnip	126	0	0			
	4	Highland cows	—	—	8	0	0	
								201 0 0
	24	pieces of unblocked wood	2	8	0			
	2	fir-trees	—	—	0	6	0	
	22	plough beams	—	—	1	10	0	
	1	ditto	—	—	0	2	6	
	5	cart trams	—	—	0	12	6	
	11	ash planks	—	—	1	2	0	
	66	elm ditto	—	—	8	3	0	
	3	planks of ash	—	—	0	6	0	
	6	fillies for cart-wheels	-	-	0	4	0	
	8	plough-heads	—	—	0	6	0	
	3	sheaths for ditto	—	—	0	1	6	
	7	plough-stilts	—	—	0	7	0	
	4	harrow bulls	—	—	0	1	0	
	2	pieces of plane-tree wood	—	—	0	3	0	
								15 12 6
	3	pieces of coarse wood	-	-	0	1	0	
	2	stoops for a horse traves	-	-	0	1	0	
	4	fir joists	-	-	0	8	0	
	7	pick shafts	-	-	0	3	6	
	1	flake fold	-	-	4	7	6	
	1	turnip drill	-	-	1	5	0	
	6	horse ploughs completely mounted	-	-	9	0	0	
	4	cattle ditto	-	-	6	0	0	
		Carry over	L.	21	6	0		

			L.	s.	d.	L.	s.	d.
	Brought over		21	6	0			
5	cart saddles mounted	-	2	10	0			
4	iron rigwoodies	-	0	10	0			
12	leather brachams	-	1	16	0			
5	wheel-barrows	-	2	12	6			
4	flails	-	0	4	0			
5	riddles and sieves	-	0	4	2			
9	corn weights	-	0	4	8			
8	plough-foams, 10 yokes, 14 bows		3	12	0			
12	muzzles for the ploughs	-	0	12	0			
						33	11	4
4	mounted close carts, with wheels		24	0	0			
2	mounted wains, with wheels	-	8	0	0			
2	corn carts, and a brake without wheels	-	1	10	0			
2	pair of old wheels	-	1	10	0			
1	pair of nave wheels	-	5	0	0			
9	cut woodies for the harrows		0	9	0			
3	ditto	—	0	3	0			
3	small harrows	—	0	15	0			
4	large harrows	—	1	0	0			
8	common harrows	—	2	0	0			
7	iron grapes	—	0	8	0			
4	iron shovels	—	0	4	0			
6	wood shovels	—	0	3	0			
						45	2	0
2	quarry wedges	—	0	1	0			
2	hand-barrows	—	0	2	0			
2	iron pinches, one large and the other small	—	0	19	4			
3	meal stands	—	0	18	0			
1	meal chest	—	0	5	0			
1	hay knife	—	0	2	6			
12	swivels for horse tethers		0	4	0			
8	spades	—	1	4	0			
11	turnip hoes	—	0	3	6			
1	whin hoe	—	0	1	0			
1	pair of fanners	—	2	2	0			
A a	Carry over		L. 6	2	4			

((187))

			L.	s.	d.	L.	s.	d.
3 bars of iron	—	—						
1 manger	—	—	0	1	6			
1 hake	—	—	0	1	6			
1 brake for the land	—		2	0	0			
12 wedders at 12 s.	—		7	4	0			
2 pair of scissars for sheep			0	1	0			
						9	8	0
Tiles	—	—						

COMPUTATION of Crop 1772, as given
in by D-v-D H-L-Y, at Michaelmas last.

			L.	s.	d.
600 bolls oats, at 12 s.	—	—	360	0	0
400 bolls barley, at 16 s.	—	—	320	0	0
40 bolls wheat, at 20 s.	—	—	40	0	0
Pease and hay reckoned worth	—	—	100	0	0
Turnip worth	—	—	100	0	0
Nurseries, at the market prices, worth 1000 l.—but say only	—	—	500	0	0

R-t-l-t, 29th December 1772. What is wrote up-
on this and the preceding five pages, is the inventory
referred to in the contract executed betwixt us, of this
date. (Signed) Jo. M-v-le, H. H-k-f-n, J—s
T—f-n.

Copy REGULATIONS to be observed by the Steward on the Estate of *R-t--l--t*, contrived by Mr. *H--k--f--n* for the ease of Mr. *S--te*'s Commissioners, and as checks upon the Servants in Mr. *S--te*'s absence.

1. **T**HE estate of *R-t--l--t* is divided into two large farms, each consisting of ten inclosures; nine of which inclosures in each farm are to be cultivated in a constant rotation as below, conform to a contract betwixt *H-l-n-s H--k--f--n* of that ilk, and *J--n S--te* of *P--f--f--d*, Esq; and agreeable to the plans, copies of which are given to the steward and to the clerk.

2. Each farm is to revolve annually in the under-written course, *viz.*

Each inclosure, first crop in oats, from grass; second crop, drilled beans, pease, potatoes, or the like; third crop, barley or wheat; fourth crop, fallow in turnip; fifth crop, barley, with grass seeds; the remaining four crops in hay and pasture, and so begin again with oats.

3. The tenth inclosure of the east farm, called *F--d-l P--k*, to be dressed in high order, to be let with houses.

4. The tenth inclosure of the west farm, called *A--g--e P--k*, to be divided into four equal parts, and to go successively in a rotation of four courses, for the purpose of raising seeds for the farms, as below, *viz.*

The whole of it to be oats in 1773, oats again in 1774; the whole of it fallow in 1775; these, for the purpose of breaking the sward of it, being strong land. After which, to be put into its courses, thus:—first, fallow; second, wheat; third, drilled beans or cabbage; fourth, barley; and so fallow again for wheat, —thus:

1. Wheat in 1776, &c. in its cour- ses.	2. Drilled beans or cabbage in 1776, &c. in its cour- ses.	3. Barley in 1776, &c. in its cour- ses.	4. Fallow in 1776, &c. in its cour- ses.
--	---	---	---

5. The

5. The steward and clerk to make an exact and regular inventory of the whole stock upon the estate, once every six months, charging therein the particulars of which it consists at the time, at a fixed or computed value, and stating the same in the books.

6. The steward to keep a regular journal or day-book, wherein to be inserted all the daily transactions or occurrences which have any relation to, or concern with the farms; such as, buying, selling, working, reaping, change of servants, times of servants entry, number of day-labourers, and how employed, and all such transactions and occurrences:—A copy of which journal to be given in weekly to the clerk, signed by the steward, and attested by two of the principal servants.

7. To keep a regular book of charge and discharge, wherein to be inserted all articles of deburment, or of money received on any account whatever, to be regularly and daily carried from the journal to the book of charge and discharge, as the same will be done by the clerk;—these books to be examined and compared once every three months.

8. The books and accompts to be examined, compared, and cleared every six months.

9. The steward to superintend the gardeners in laying out their grounds; and particularly, in taking from them an account of the nurseries, and directing the management of them.

10. The steward to carry on the management and improvement of the estate, in every respect conform to the plans and regulations put into his hands for that purpose.

11. The names and places of abode of the persons to whom any thing is sold, or from whom any thing is bought, to be regularly inserted in the books on the day of such transaction.

12. The number of ploughs, harrows, days, carts, hands, &c. &c. employed in the culture of each field, to be regularly marked; so as that, by inspecting the books at any time, it may be seen exactly, what expence

pence of time, labour, or money has been bestowed upon any inclosure or division of the estate.

13. The number of reapers to be stated daily, and the number of threaves cut down by these reapers; taking special care, never to allow them to make large sheaves;—the number of threaves to be noted again at leading, and compared with the former.

14. The corns of each field to be put up distinctly by themselves, proofed at taking from the fields, and proofed again at taking in from the barn-yard, to be compared with what is dighted up when the whole is threshed.

15. The hay of each field to be put up by itself, and numbered in cart-loads, at leading; the carts to be filled, as nearly as possible, to the same computed quantity of hay in each cart, and booked, in order to make an estimate of the quantity produced by the field. The stack to be measured when completely put up and settled, and measured again before cut for sale, or for any other purpose; that the steward may be able, with time, to ascertain the difference of profit and loss between old and new hay.

16. The steward to assist, when necessary, in sowing the corns, and especially the drilled crops, and grass seeds.

17. The steward to attend the reapers and leaders, to number the threaves, &c. &c.

18. The steward to be particularly attentive to calculate his marketing, so as to be as little from home as possible; his presence being at all times of the highest importance at home, to observe the hours at which his servants yoke and loose, and that they are busy when at work; no article being so valuable to a farmer, as his time, and the watching the seasons.

19. The steward to take care, at all times, that the horses be regularly dressed and fed in the mornings, before working hours, and in the evenings, after working hours, and to keep an accurate accompt of the corn given to the horses. When he is at home, he ought
always

always to see the horses fed himself; and when he is abroad at any time, to appoint another proper person in his place, to measure out the corn, and see it given to the horses.

20. The steward to be watchful, at all times, in examining the straw of the threshers, and looking after the security of the barns.

21. The steward to take special care, at all times, to clear his fields and corns of all stones and weeds at laying down, and to roll them in the autumn, as well as in the spring, when proper or necessary.

22. The steward to take special care, at all times, to prepare manure timeously for all the fields, as they shall want it; lime, when lime is proper, and composted middens, duly turned and prepared, when lime is not so proper.

23. The book for buying and selling all sorts of beasts, to be kept in manner after written; so that, at one view, at any time, it may be seen at what price any beast is bought, and at what price the same beast is sold again:—Thus,

	L. s. d.		L. s. d.
Bought at Cupar market, 20th May 1773, from Mr. R. tenant in L. M. an ox, called or marked P. Q. at - -	L. 5. 11 6	Sold again the 20th Feb. 1774, to A. B. butcher in P. R. for L. 12 5 0	
Bought from J. M. at R. S. 16th June 1773, a cow, called Light-foot, for -	4 15 0	Sold again 20th March 1776, to B. C. butcher in Cupar, for - - -	9 12 6
Bought at Linlithgow market, 15th August 1773, from M. N. farmer in O. P. a black horse, named B. - - -	15 0 0	Died the 20th of October 1779, of the batts - - -	0 0 0
Expences - - -	0 5 0		

N. B. When

N. B. When the steward buys a number of oxen, &c. at a time, from one person in a slump way, he must, when he comes to book these beasts, divide the price amongst them, according to their different sizes and value, and so state them separately in his book by their names or marks, with their different prices.

24. The steward to keep a small book, to be made out at the end of each year, shewing the state of each field for that year, the quantity of seed which was sown therein, and the product at the different proofings thereof.—Thus :

	<i>B. f. p. l.</i>		<i>B. f. p. l.</i>
Sown in R--1-0		Reaped at lead-	
park, in the wester		ing, by proof of	
farm, in spring 1773,		barley - - -	300 1 0 2
containing 27 acres		By proof at tak-	
3 roods barley -	20 2 3 1½	ing into the barn	280 3 2 0½
Rye-grass, at 10s.		Dighted up for	
per boll - - -	14 0 0 0	sale, when threshed	
Cloverseed, 400lb.		out - - -	285 2 1 0½
at 3 d. per lb. -		Light corn given	
		to the beasts - -	1 1 2 1

	<i>L. s. d.</i>		<i>L. s. d.</i>
Sown in R--1-0		Reaped in sum-	
park, in the west		mer 1775, by com-	
farm, along with		putation at leading,	
barley, in spring		9000 ft. of hay—	
1773, containing 27		By measure of the	
acres 3 roods, 14		stack, after it was	
bolls, rye-grass, at		put up and settled,	
10 s. per boll - -	7 0 0	8500 fold off the	
400 lb. clover-		year 1777, 8000 ft.	
feed, at 3 d. per lb. -	5 0 0	at 6 d. per ft. -	200 0 0
	<u>L. 12 0 0</u>		<u>200 0 0</u>

25. A small book to be kept apart for day-labourers, ditchers, tradespeople, &c. &c. in which, to be inserted their payments carried over from the journal every night

night that they are paid, the same to be always inserted in the journals sent to the clerk, and attested as the others.

26. The steward to send, at least once every summer, a carriage to D—l—hill, by the road through the lands of L—n—l—y, in order to preserve the privilege to that road to the top of the said hill and quarry thereon.

27. The steward to have a constant eye to all the marches, against the encroachments and depredations of neighbouring tenants and cottars.

28. The ditch on the farthest side of A—g—e park, where it marches with the lands of C—n—e, is seven feet wide, the sole property of R—t—l—t; that is, six feet of a ditch, and one foot of a bank, at the bottom of the dyke upon the R—t—l—t side.

29. Whenever the steward has more than 10 l. Sterling in his hand at one time, he is to carry the overplus to the cashier, with whom to lodge it till it is called for.

30. And, in general, the steward to be attentive and distinct in the conducting of his whole business, as well in regard to such articles as are not particularly specified, as to those which are.

31. As the after-crop depends greatly on the ploughmen's hands, it is of the greatest consequence, that the stewards and under-stewards be constantly watchful over the ploughmen, that they make good work, and especially when they are breaking up grass fields. If the steward know any thing of husbandry at all, he must know, that if one ridge is well ploughed, and the next ridge to it is ill ploughed, and afterwards both are sown and harrowed equally; when harvest comes, the ridge that was properly ploughed will yield perhaps double the other.—Thus, a farmer may soon be ruined by bad ploughing: The greatest attention must therefore at all times be paid to the ploughing. Let it be given in particular charge to the under-stewards, to have an eye constantly on the other ploughmen, to see that their ploughs are properly trimmed, and that they make good work; when they see it otherwise, let the plough be im-

B b

mediately

mediately examined by the steward, and if the fault is in the plough, let it be instantly laid aside, till it is rectified ; if the fault is in the ploughman, let him be immediately dismissed from that work ; for on no account are they ever to suffer a ridge to be mislaboured.—The same attention to be given by the stewards and captains over the harrowers.

32. Whenever the steward gives out orders for any work to be done, in which two or more of the servants or day-labourers are to be employed, such as ploughing, carting, harrowing, turning of dunghills, &c. &c. let it be a constant rule, that there be always one or more of the stewards or under-stewards upon their head, to work along with them, and to direct them ; in such case, the steward first explaining how such work is to be done ; after which, the steward to whom the directions are given, to be answerable for the performance of the work ; the servants and day-labourers being always absolutely under command of whatever steward is with them at the time.

33. No steward to be excused from working himself, it being a duty of the stewards to encourage the servants by example, as well as to call them out regularly to work ; it being to be particularly attended to at all times, that no article brings more certain loss to a farmer, than the embezzlement of his time by his servants, losing, perhaps, a quarter of an hour, or half an hour of each yoking, by an indistinct and careless way of going to work.

E—b—h, 15th November 1773.—What is contained on this and the ten preceding pages, are the regulations, thirty-three in number, to be observed and implemented by me, in the management of Mr. S—te's farms of R—t—l—t, as steward thereon ; which I oblige myself to implement, attend to, and fulfil accordingly. In witness whereof, the preceding articles, and this doquet, wrote by A—x—d—r G—t, clerk to Mr. I—c G—t, writer to the signet, are subscribed by me, day
and

and place foresaid, before witnesses, the said A—x—
 —d—r G—t and J—s B—l, governor to R—c—d—
 B—j—m—n S—te—H—k—f—n. (Signed) W—L—M
 T—s—N. A—x—d—r G—t, witness, J—s B—l
 witness.

COPY of an ESTIMATE of the Estate of
 R—T—L—T, by the Steward who undertook
 to execute the Plan of Improvements, as a-
 bove; the original of which Estimate was
 sent to I—l—d to Mr. S—T—E.

THE whole estate is a deep, dry, loamy soil, all now
 brought into culture, near 4000 l. having been
 laid out upon it for that purpose within these six years,
 and contains about 670 acres English, or little more.

CALCULATION made by J—s T—s—N the
 steward, of what 630 acres of the estate may be
 supposed to yield, in their annual revolutions, when
 brought into the course of husbandry prescribed
 by the entail, that is, within seven years, comput-
 ing from January 1772;—and this calculation, any
 farmer will perceive, is very low.

70 acres wheat—Say only 6l. <i>per</i> acre	-	L. 420
70 acres oats - - 5l.	- - -	350
70 acres drilled beans - 4l.	- - -	280
70 acres turnip - 4l.	- - -	280
70 acres hay - 4l.	- - -	280
70 acres hay - 4l.	- - -	280
70 acres pasture - 1l.	- - -	70
70 acres pasture - 1l.	- - -	70
70 acres barley - 6l.	- - -	420

630

Carry over L. 2450

	Brought over L. 2450
Deduce expence of servants wages, feed, labour, buying of lime, making and turning of compost middens, &c. &c. which ought to be great—	
Say	800
	—
	Annual profit L. 1650

N. B. Unless compost middens are prepared, and plentifully applied to the second (the pease) crop, and again to the fourth (the turnip) crops, which precede the barley and grass feeds, no good is to be expected:— But, if this is done, the profit will most certainly exceed the above computation.

C—n—e now raised a sham counter-proceeds: But, conscious, as would seem, of the injustice of his cause, at same time pressingly solicited a submission to country gentlemen.—Mr. H—k—f—n absolutely refused to submit, and ordered the following answers to C—n—e's false libel.

COPY ANSWERS to the REASONS of REDUCTION made use of by Mr. S—te.

“ *Imo*, **T**HAT the said J—n S—te, being a native of I—l—d, and a total stranger in this
 “ country, was seduced, by false suggestions and misrepresentations of the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, when
 “ he was in I—l—d, and made by him to believe, that
 “ the rents of his lands of R—t—l—t was upwards of
 “ 1000l.

“ 1000 l. Sterling *per annum* : That he having prétend-
 “ ed the greatest friendship for him the said J—n S—te
 “ and his family, and particularly for his son, who was a
 “ young boy at school, offered his whole estate in S—
 “ l—d to him, to take charge of his education, and a-
 “ dopt him his son.”

Answer—While the bargain was in speculation, that is,
 before and after the contract was wrote in I—l—d (till the
 time when the entail was extended at R—t—l—t) Mr. H—k—r-
 f—n took every occasion (a thousand times over) to repeat
 to Mr. S—te, that the estate would be of small value, till
 the improvements were finished ; and, particularly, that
 it would be so far from yielding any profits to him, dur-
 ing the years which he was to reside upon it and enjoy
 it, that he must lay his account to lay out money, as he
 had done for several years before ; he being out of
 pocket (as he told him) about 3000 l. Sterling. He told
 him also, that he had offered to let it, and had not been
 offered more than 500 l. or 600 l. and where a long
 lease was demanded. This was by a substantial farmer
 from C—d—e, whom the Lady W—f—w sent him.
 Further than this, Mr. H—k—f—n never did put any de-
 finite value upon the estate, as it was then. But, when
 Mr. S—te flourished to him, what a house, gardens,
 orchard, &c. (besides the other improvements) he was to
 make upon it, he often answered him, that, when all
 these were finished, the estate would be worth 1000 l.
per annum ; and that, if he was alive at the end of the
 seven years, he would be happy to take it himself at
 that.—Was it necessary, this could be proved by the
 oaths of Mr. S—te, Mrs. S—te, and Miss S—te. But
 Mr. S—te’s steward afterwards put a much higher va-
 lue upon the estate ; and Mr. S—te’s son was in S—t-
 l—d at the time, under Mr. H—k—f—n’s care, at the
 earnest entreaty of Mr. S—te, a year before that ; at
 which time, and upon every occasion after, Mr. H—k—r-
 f—n stipulated with Mr. S—te, that he should see his
 son little, or not at all, for ten years, because he would
 spoil

spoil him, as he had done in his infancy, and render it impossible for him, or any body else, ever to make a man of him.—The correspondence by letters, betwixt Mr. S—te and Mr. H—k—f—n will fully evince all this; and Mr. H—k—f—n craves the permission of the court to exhibit that correspondence.

“ *2do*, And the said J—n S—te being an entire stranger, had no person who could inform him, either of
 “ the real value, or public burdens affecting the said
 “ lands of R—t—l—t; and the servants on the farm, and
 “ other persons who came to the family, or were witnesses to the transactions, were instructed, in case
 “ the said J—n S—te should ask questions, to avoid
 “ giving any answer, and refer entirely to him the said
 “ H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, as to every particular: That Mr.
 “ H—k—f—n employed his own doer or writer at
 “ E—b—h, to execute the foresaid whole writings,
 “ under his special and sole direction, without any instructions or directions from the said J—n S—te, and
 “ in a manner different from the articles executed by
 “ them in I—l—d, and under the same injunctions against giving any opinion with respect to the value of
 “ the estate, or rationality of the bargain.”

Answer—What hindered Mr. S—te to ask any person any question?—He often wandered in the fields alone, from morning to night; visited, and received visits, daily, from all the neighbourhood, to whom he declared himself to be enraptured with R—t—l—t, and vaunted to them the great things he would do about it; told them, he would buy another estate in the country, and entail it, for the provision of widows and younger children, &c.—Besides, Mr. H—k—f—n, who was anxious upon the account of his health in this climate, had asked him, daily, to look into the business, to examine his rights, and, particularly, to examine his steward's books, which would shew him the proceedings of the estate, for sundry years back; suggesting to him the necessity of husbanding time; putting him in mind, that it was
 already

already towards the end of April, the term of Whitsunday fast approaching, at which time debts were to be paid, expensive works to be carried on in summer, the king and college to be paid at Lammas, &c.; and Mr. S—te had to go to L—d—n, to procure the money necessary for all these purposes. Mr. S—te put off from day to day, till, after several weeks spent in this manner, a day was, at length, fixed for Mr. S—te and Mr. H—k—f—n to go to E—b—h together, in order to have the entail extended. When the day came, Mr. S—te proposed, that it was not necessary for both to go to E—b—h; but that Mr. H—k—f—n should go alone, and cause the scrolls to be made out, which afterwards might be sent over to R—t—l—t, to be executed; saying, at same time, That he would take that opportunity, when left alone, to examine the steward's books; which, he said, would amuse him till his return. Accordingly, Mr. H—k—f—n ordered his steward to carry in his books to Mr. S—te, which was immediately done; and Mr. H—k—f—n set out alone for E—b—h: And, when Mr. H—k—f—n returned, both Mrs. S—te and Mr. S—te told him, that he had gone through the books, during his absence; and, when Mr. A—x—d—r G—t went over to R—t—l—t, to extend the entail, the first thing which Mr. H—k—f—n employed him about, was, to assist him in searching his charter-chest, for a sufficient progress of writs; and they took out of the chest, Mr. H—k—f—n's grandfather's charters, and his father's charters. Mr. G—t had in his custody, at the time, Mr. H—k—f—n's own charters; which, altogether, made a clear progress, for near 100 years back: these are the charters which are now missing, but which can be easily supplied.

When Mr. H—k—f—n got to E—b—h, a scroll of the entail was made out and laid before a lawyer; who observed, that it appeared *ex facie*, that the principal object of the entail, was, the perpetuating the representation of the family of H—k—f—n: That, for such purpose, the list of heirs named was too limited; and therefore advised, that an augmentation of heirs of entail should

should be nominated. This, Mr. H—k—f—n said he would not do, but leave that entirely to Mr. S—te; and therefore, ordered the scroll to be carried over to R—t—l—t, by the gentleman who afterwards extended the deed of entail at R—t—l—t, when Mr. S—te alone named all the heirs of entail.

“ 3th, That, by the obligation above narrated,
 “ the said J—n S—te is further bound to improve
 “ the estate for seven years; the expence of which,
 “ has hitherto amounted to more than 400 l. *per annum*,
 “ above the produce of the estate; and likewise there-
 “ by bound to build a house, agreeable to the plan re-
 “ lative thereto; the expence whereof, cannot come
 “ to less than 1500 l. Sterling: That, by the foresaid
 “ obligation, the said J—n S—te was divested of the
 “ parental power over his own son, which was devolved
 “ on him the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, which he turn-
 “ ed entirely to his own emolument; and sent him to
 “ a foreign country, among strangers, where he ne-
 “ glected his education, and denied him even decent
 “ cloathing; and maltreated him in such a manner,
 “ that the said J—n S—te was under the necessity of
 “ applying to the British ambassador at P—r—s before he
 “ could get him back again.”

Answer—The whole country is judge and evidence of the falsity of this assertion.—Mr. S—te admits, that the estate yields him 200 l. *per annum* of free rent, after paying all burdens; and asserts, that he has laid out annually 400 l. more, in all 600 l. Sterling *per annum*.—It seems to have been Mr. S—te’s study, all along, to sink the value of the estate, and destroy the improvements which Mr. H—k—f—n had made, before he got the possession of it. And Mr. H—k—f—n now remembers, that Mrs. S—te, who, doubtless, knows the nature of the man, once told him, before she left S—l—d, where she had remained, with her daughter, in Mr. H—k—f—n’s family above a year, waiting Mr. S—te’s

S—te's return, that she had wrote to Mr. S—te, that she saw his intention was, to ruin her son's estate; and that she had expostulated much with him upon that head. The fact is, that Mr. S—te has given up all fallowing, all drilling and improving crops, such as turnips, beans, and the like; all making of compost middens, &c.; and, in place of building new houses on the farms, which he stands bound to have done, has let even the old ones go to ruin; insomuch, that, at this moment, for want of houses, he is put to the shift of converting Mr. H—k—f—n's kitchen to a stable, the servants house to the same use, &c.; and the whole farm is managed in such a way, as cannot fail soon to reduce it to a *caput mortuum*. Mr. S—te had repeatedly, a hundred times over, taken occasion to tell Mr. H—k—f—n, before the contract was writ in I—l—d, and after, till the day on which the entail was signed at R—t—l—t, that he would not grudge to lay out 5000 l. Sterling on the house, gardens, orchard, &c. and that these would be the first things he would set about, as he was to live at R—t—l—t with his family, during the years in which the improvements were to be made.

Such was the manner in which Mr. H—k—f—n was cajoled and wheedled, while the bargain was in speculation; and, by such means, was Mr. H—k—f—n prompted to strike 100 l. out of his own and his daughter's annuities, having no other return to make for such great advantages as were to accrue to his name and representation. But, alas! Mr. H—k—f—n had not then heard of, or formed any conception, much less had Mr. S—te hinted or explained to him, as he has done amply since, what it is to enter into dealings with an *I—f—b—e*. (See Mr. S—te's letters upon the text.) Notwithstanding of all these things, Mr. S—te, to Mr. H—k—f—n's great surprise and astonishment, when the entail was read over to the company, before signing, objected against building an house at all: Which shocked Mr. H—k—f—n so much, that he instantly desired to annul the bargain; and would have seen the

papers put in the fire, the I-sh contract not being at that time recorded. But the gentlemen present, interfered in the dispute, and proposed an alternative; which they at last prevailed with Mr. H-k-f-n to accept of.

“ 4to, That the said J-n S-te, being a native
 “ of I-l-d, and altogether a stranger to the value of
 “ property in this country, and knew nor heard no-
 “ thing of the real rent of, or public burdens affect-
 “ ing the said lands, was furnished with no rental, or
 “ any evidence of the same; and knew nothing more
 “ than what he was informed of by the said H-l-n-s
 “ H-k-f-n, who did so far grossly impose upon him,
 “ by telling him the yearly rent was upwards of 1000 l.
 “ Sterling; whereas, the truth is, that the real rent of
 “ the forefaid lands is only about 300 l. *per annum*,
 “ whereof near 100 l. *per annum* is paid for feu, teind-
 “ duties, and other public and legal burdens, affecting
 “ the said lands: That the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n
 “ did employ his own doer to execute the deeds a-
 “ bove-mentioned, and furnished him with the heads
 “ thereof in writing, or gave him directions there-
 “ anent; and did revise, correct, and alter the same en-
 “ tirely in his own way, and according to his own
 “ pleasure, without the knowledge, consent, or appro-
 “ bation of the said J-n S---te; and desired his doer,
 “ and his clerk, or others, not to enter into a dis-
 “ cussion of the value of the lands, or nature or mean-
 “ ing of the deeds above-mentioned; the nature or
 “ meaning of which, the said J-n S---te knew nothing
 “ of more, than that he understood the lands were
 “ or should be his own property; and which deeds
 “ bear, *in gremio*, eternal marks of imposition and cir-
 “ cumvention.”

Answer—The public burdens are, *communibus annis*,
 (as the prices of victual rise and fall, they cannot be
 taken at the highest or the lowest year) about 50 or
 60 l. Sterling. Can it be supposed or believed, that the
 same

same man, who, generously and freely, unasked, struck 100 l. *per annum* out of his own and his daughter's annuities, was, at the same instant, cheating for 50 or 60 l.? In fact, Mr. B—m—sh had the note of the public burdens, along with the minute, when he drew the contract; but said, it was needless to insert particulars, as there was a general reference of every thing in that contract to be explained in the after deeds; and the rights of holding would show these much better to Mr. S—te when he went to S—l—d. Can it be believed, that Mr. H—k—f—n could conceive or utter such nonsense, as to say, that Mr. S—te knew nothing more, than that the lands should be his own property? Surely, it could not enter into any body's head, that Mr. S—te could be deceived in this, when he came to read and sign the deeds. Besides, had not Mr. S—te always his double of the L—sh contract in his hand? and, is not Mr. S—te well known to be a man versed in business, who had carried on a very extensive trade in C—k, upwards of twenty years, in which he had gained money, and made other purchases before this? How absurd and risible is all this? Alas! it appears too evident, by this transaction, who best understood bargain-making; —Mr. S—te, who has been in business all his life; or, Mr. H—k—f—n, an entire stranger to business, who has spent most of his life amongst his books.

“ 5to, And failing of him the said R—c—d—B—j—
 “ m—n S—te, and his said sister, the lands descend, by
 “ the foresaid destination, to the said C—s H—k—
 “ f—n, &c.” *

Answer—By Mr. S—te's own nomination, and in preference to her father.—Mr. H—k—f—n values his integrity, and the discharge of human and social duties
 C c 2 upon

* See Mr. S—te boasting, in his letter to Mr. R—b—f—n, (page 37.) of this nomination being his own, though he now calls it an imposition of Mr. H—k—f—n's.

upon all occasions, infinitely above any fortune, and was so far from having any fraudulent intention, that, on the contrary, he cheerfully tenders to their L—sh—ps the forfeit of his head and his fortune, if it does not appear to their L—sh—ps, that he shewed, in this transaction, the greatest marks of generosity, humanity, and benevolence towards Mr. S—te's family, which indeed, upon many occasions, had moved his and his family's compassion to the highest degree.

Mr. H—k—f—n will not take up their L—sh—ps time, by advancing things new, or foreign to the point. The cause has long since been fully litigated, by private letters betwixt the parties, and wherein Mr. S—te never had the effrontery to deny any one of the facts appealed to his own conscience by Mr. H—k—f—n : And, without more, Mr. H—k—f—n rests upon what will appear *ex facie* from Mr. S—te's letters under his hand, trusting, that no fictitious proof, which Mr. S—te may now propose to adduce, only to amuse and put off time, by which he means to destroy Mr. H—k—f—n's life and fortune, can ever be sustained, to extenuate or invalidate his own holograph letters.

“ Their L—sh—ps will see, that the great object of “ Mr. S—te's aim from the beginning, was, and still is, “ the acquisition of Mr. H—k—f—n's annuity, by his “ death.”—Mr. S—te knew, that what suggested to Mr. H—k—f—n the idea of forming the entail, was the bad state of his own health, and the situation his family and representation would be in, if he died. Mr. S—te had seen and read D—ct—r C—ll—n's opinion, (which shall likewise be produced) declaring, that Mr. H—k—f—n's life depended upon his leaving the climate of Britain, at least for some years. Mr. S—te read this at E—b—h, before he set out for L—d—n, in his way to I—l—d ; and, upon that occasion, made Mr. H—k—f—n the most solemn protestations (as he had often done before) that so soon as he got to L—d—n, he would settle a credit for him there, by which he should have it in his power to go abroad wherever he pleased, and to draw on L—d—n

at all times for his annuity, from any part of the world,
 “ Their L—sh—ps will see, that this, however, was the
 “ furthest thing in the world from Mr. S—te’s real in-
 “ tention ; on the contrary, their L—sh—ps will see Mr.
 “ S—te cajoling and flattering Mr. H—k—f—n to re-
 “ main in S—l—d, begging him to direct the opera-
 “ tions at R—t—l—t, and to consider it as his own, no
 “ less, or rather more than ever ; and, at same time,
 “ making sure of him, by withholding his credit.—Their
 “ L—sh—ps will see him afterwards compelling him to
 “ stay at home, by absolutely refusing to pay him any
 “ thing ; in all this time (three years) not one word of
 “ this new-invented and pretended fraud about the
 “ public burdens.—Their L—sh—ps will see him after,
 “ by the same means, compel him to return from
 “ F—ce, though in a dying way.—Their L—sh—ps will
 “ see him, with the same view, since Mr. H—k—f—n’s
 “ return, rejecting the most reasonable terms proposed
 “ by him, and commencing a litigious process against a
 “ man whom he has long since reduced to be without
 “ subsistence and without credit, trusting that, during
 “ the dependence of the process, Mr. H—k—f—n being
 “ compelled to remain in this climate, Mr. S—te cannot
 “ fail to gain his cause, by Mr. H—k—f—n’s death.

“ Indeed, Mr. S—te has but too good reason to
 “ think, that he is playing a sure game: For, should
 “ Miss H—k—f—n (after her father’s death) cast Mr.
 “ S—te, yet he will, in fact, have gained his cause, by
 “ Mr. H—k—f—n’s death.”—At same time, as Mr.
 “ S—te, ever since he has been in possession of the estate,
 “ has done every thing possible to sink its value, by mis-
 “ labouring the fields, destroying the nurseries, the poli-
 “ cy, the houses, &c. should he, by continuing the same
 “ plan, and spinning out the litigation, in the end cast
 “ Mr. H—k—f—n ; in that event, Miss H—k—f—n also
 “ would be totally ruined, would be reposed to her fa-
 “ ther’s estate, reduced to a *caput mortuum*, and in ruins ;
 “ which would not sell for as much as would pay the debts,
 “ and defray the expence of process.

On

On the contrary, should he be cast in the end, being possessed of a large fortune, he is able to launch out, and soon recover the estate, and bring it to value.

These are the true reasons why Mr. S—te refuses a just and amicable accommodation.

C—n—e now threatened Mr. H—k—f—n's lawyers with the weight of S—te's purse ; and told them, he would appeal every point that should be given against him, and litigate *ad infinitum*. Upon this, Mr. H—k—f—n's lawyers advised, nay, forced him to agree to a submission.

Copy C A R D, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h.

December 25th, 1775.

Mr. H—k—f—n's compliments to Mr. W—h ; could he go abroad at the time when it is not public hours with Mr. W—h, would call upon him, to know what has passed betwixt him and Mr. C—n—e. If Mr. C—n—e is amicably disposed, as Mr. W—h seems to think he is, what hinders Mr. W—h and Mr. C—n—e to frame an agreement to be proposed to the parties themselves, which, upon their signing, will end all ? and Mr. C—n—e might send it directly to Mr. S—te for that purpose. Or, Mr. W—h and Mr. C—n—e may name their arbiters to one another ; and, upon their agreeing upon those, adjust matters in that way : but, in any event, the recorded entail must be supported as incontrovertible. Mr. W—h says, the minorities secure this point : But, should he fall into a trap, without
foreseeing

foreseeing another danger, what, if, upon the absurd point of the public burdens, arbiters may be influenced to take upon them to reduce the entail, upon the pretended footing of a fraudulent deed, and so, at one stroke, not only ruin Mr. H—k—f—n, by reponing him to the estate, which Mr. S—te has ruined, but, what is of infinitely more consequence, by that means, also deprive him of the name and character of an honest man?

Mr. C—n—e will probably leave the town in a few days; and Mr. W—h should never lose sight, that every week, perhaps every day of delay, is worth 100l. gained to Mr. S—te, and as much loss to Mr. H—k—f—n, who is deprived of peace, of subsistence, and every comfort, while things are agitating. Mr. C—n—e says, and perhaps believes, that Mr. S—te will come into reasonable terms in a friendly way; but Mr. H—k—f—n inclines to think otherways: Therefore, not a moment should be lost, in applying to the L—ds for subsistence to Mr. H—k—f—n, which should not stop till the agreement is signed by Mr. S—te.

Mr. W—h seems to build upon the arrestment of the barn-yard; but the experience which Mr. H—k—f—n has had of E—w—d B—e's method of doing business, leaves him no confidence of that kind. In almost all the steps in which he was employed in these matters, it always turned out, that he had conducted them in such a way, that, in the end, they were found to prove abortive as to the purposes intended by them; witness the way in which he let the cattle, &c. escape.

N. B. Unless the stacks of corn were turned over, and cast to proof at the time of the arrestment, which is the usual way in regard to corns, nothing ever can be ascertained as to the corns. It is the same in respect to the hay, which should, at same time, have been submitted to the judgment of men of skill, called for that purpose, who should have attested and ascertained the quantity of it. Besides, the beasts are eating both these articles every hour, while we are sleeping. Mr.
H—k—f—n

H—k—f—n doubts not, that, was Mr. W—h to interrogate E—w—d B—e, whether these things were done or not, he would find they were neglected; and that the arrestment and inventory would not be worth twopence to any but E—w—d B—e himself, who had his expences borne, and large payment for his pains; which seems, indeed, to have been the chief object of his attention.

Copy C A R D, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h.

January 4th, 1776.

Mr. H—k—f—n, with best compliments to Mr. W—h, has returned the memorial, which he was prevented, by company, from reading, till just now; begs to know the intention of it; if for the lawyers only, or if for the court:—has made no remarks on the margin, having no alterations to propose, but such as he gave Mr. W—h in writing, to be inserted in the book, and that will serve for the lawyers; but if it is for the Court, begs this memorial may be suppressed, and the other substituted in its place;—because, this memorial bears a very material conclusion, which the lawyers desired Mr. H—k—f—n not to insist for; and because Mr. H—k—f—n apprehends, with great concern, that bad consequences might result, from his defences being so much weakened to the Court, as they seem to be, by this memorial.

Copy

Copy LETTER, Mr. W—h to Mr. H—k—f—n,
and Mr. H—k—f—n's Answer, with Plan of Sub-
mission with Mr. S—te.

DEAR SIR,

January 9th, 1776.

I am expressly forbid to go abroad, and have there-
fore wrote the inclosed, and beg to have your opinion,
if I shall send it or not. In haste, Dear Sir, yours,
(Signed) J. W—h.

Copy Mr. H—k—f—n's ANSWER to the above
LETTER.

I am in the midst of dinner with company:—You
are much better judge than I, in such matters; and I
have no objection to the method you think best. Dear
Sir, yours,
(Signed) H. H.

Copy LETTER, Mr. W—h to Mr. C—n—e.

DEAR SIR,

January 9th, 1776.

I am at present confined to the house, otherways I
should have had the pleasure to wait of you, and talk
over the affair between our clients; but, as I am uncer-
tain, if I shall be abroad all this week, and the session-
time draws near, I should be glad, if we could fall upon
some method to bring our friends to an amicable settle-
D d ment,

ment, and to prevent the law-suit's going any further.—
 I have, in order to this, sent you a plan for a submission,
 as it occurs to me, and shall be glad to know if it is to
 your mind ; or, if you propose any other article, when
 I have your answer, I shall wait of Mr. H—k—f—n,
 and procure his final resolution, which I shall directly
 communicate to you ; and, if the plan I propose is agree-
 able to you, I do assure you, I shall urge Mr. H—k—r-
 f—n to agree to it, in the strongest manner I am able.
 I wait your answer. And am, respectfully, &c.

(Signed) J—N W—H.

A Copy PLAN for SUBMISSION, between
 Mr. H—k—f—n and Mr. S—te.

That Mr. H—k—f—n and his daughter, on the one
 part, and Mr. S—te, for himself, and as taking burden up-
 on him for his son and daughter, on the other part, shall
 submit all their mutual claims whatever, to two lawyers
 of eminence, with power to them, or their overman,
 to be mutually chosen by them, to pronounce decreets
 partial and final, &c. And that, in respect Mr. S—te
 is a native of I—l—d, and does not reside in this coun-
 try, and has nothing but the estate of R—t—l—t in it,
 liable to be affected for implement of whatever decreet
 may be pronounced, and which estate, too, may happen
 to be appointed to be restored to Mr. H—k—f—n ;—
 that Mr. S—te shall, therefore, have some gentleman of
 this country joined with him, in the submission, as cau-
 tion that Mr. S—te shall implement the decreets that
 shall be pronounced, if such decreets shall happen to be
 awarded against him.

Copy

Copy LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h.

MY GOOD SIR,

January 12th, 1776.

You may know me for one of those people, that cannot allow myself to run precipitately into any step of great consequence. The more I reflect on your conversation of this morning, I find myself the more lost in the labyrinth. You know there were certain questions to be resolved by my lawyers, in order to enable my weak judgment to form a resolution; without which aid, I could not move at all. You told me, that you had missed an opportunity of procuring me that aid, and that, therefore, I must proceed without it, to run into the submission immediately, &c. This is, indeed, a hard case; and, for any judgment that I can make upon the consequences for want of that light, I cannot see; but it may produce the effect, that, by a single dash of my pen, I may totally ruin myself; at same time that my daughter may be reduced to a single thousand pounds for her whole provision, and that, too, depending on the precarious footing of my dying worth as much, which also appears to me no less uncertain than any other point. In short, all is become a chaos to me; all is darkness (shall I say?) from my lawyer's withholding the information I wish to have, in order to assist my judgment. I should think, in such a dilemma, it were prudent, not to conclude with C—n—e, till I get an answer to my questions. If my lawyers will not answer them, possibly other lawyers may. At any rate, I do not see how we can proceed with any degree of prudence, without first suggesting to them, besides the old points, those new ones which we talked of this morning. I should like to have your sentiments on all this; not in a hurry, but with deliberation; for I cannot act hurriedly in any matter of importance. I am, &c.

(Signed) H. H—k—s—n.

D d 2

P. S. There

P. S. There has been a point in view with some people, which has misled them to very wrong steps. It is but fair in me, to caution you to beware of falling into that error. It is an infallible method to baffle the thing intended ; because I am a man to be come at only in one way, that is, by reason ; but by no means to be either forced or trepanned into any thing. This will fall to be discovered too late, if they should only come to repent the error, when they see it past remedy, which would infallibly be the case.

N. B. Long before this, Mr. H—k—f—n had drawn out of P—g—y M—t—d, the plan in agitation, which was to draw Mr. H—k—f—n in, to agree to an arbitration, that arbiters might have it in their power to break the entail, which the judicatories could not do, and thereby throw back Mr. H—k—f—n's estate into his own hand ; the conspirators trusting to their own industry, after that, to prevent Mr. H—k—f—n from making a new entail, in which, too, the former entail being upon record, would be a bugbear to any body to whom he should make such a proposal ; and besides, his life was in their hand, and that was a point settled amongst them. Thus, the scheme was to bring Mr. H—k—f—n's estate into the possession of his daughter, in spite of him, and even at the expence of his life. The question so long suppressed by Mr. W—h was, " Should arbiters
 " break the entail, which, perhaps, might be a safe thing
 " for Mr. S—te, but will it be equally safe for Mr. H—
 " k—f—n ? will it put him in as free possession of his
 " own estate, as he was at the beginning ? and will it
 " be as safe for his friends to enter upon a new entail
 " with him, as it would have been before the other en-
 " tail was made and recorded?"

Copy LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h.

SIR,

January 13th, 1776.

Distressed as I am, I am not able to write, but must employ my daughter. My physicians have found out, that I have been labouring under an intermitting fever for a month past; which, by neglect, and want of attention, has now come also to an intermitting pulse; all which has been greatly aggravated, no doubt, by the treatment I have met with, within that period, on the subject of my business, and the vexation that that treatment occasioned to me. You know, it is above that distance of time since I told you, that, before I could form any judgment, it was necessary to have certain questions resolved; some of which I gave you at that time, and added others in course since that. You know these things were postponed from week to week, and reserved, at last, for a day of consultation, when the three lawyers were convened for that purpose; and that day also, when it came, they were still suppressed. I have told you again and again, that, without these lights, I am unable to form a judgment, or give an advice. I wrote you also, that, if our own lawyers positively refused to answer these questions, I hoped others would be found that would answer them. In return to this, you now require, that, without these lights, I shall send a positive order, in writing, what you are to do. I need not repeat to you, in this case, what you know so well, that I have been disqualified, in this manner, to judge or determine at all upon the subject; and can only say now, that, since I have lost my life by it, the fortune may go also, in any manner that may have been, or not have been projected; as to which, the thing is as dark to me as the rest. I am, Sir, &c.

(Signed) H. H—k—s—n.

P. S. To

P. S. To advise or determine in any point, wanting proper information to direct my judgment, is what I never did in my life, and never can do.

Copy CARD, Miss H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h,
dictated by her Father.

15th January 1776.

I have read your notes to papa ; and he perceives by them, that you have got answers to some queries, of little importance, which he had never heard of till now ; but he has great cause to regret, that he did not get answers to the important questions suggested in his letter of Saturday se'ennight ; and particularly to that one in which he asked, " Whether a sentence-arbitral, " (which, it is self-evident, would be not only safe, but, " possibly, highly advantageous to Mr. S—te and his " heirs) would be equally safe for Mr. H—k—f—n and " his heirs, as, he apprehends, a decreet-arbitral will " not be sufficient security for them against any of Mr. " S—te's future heirs, who may please to claim upon " the entail?—He is particularly anxious to know, " whether you have set aside Lord C—'s week or not ; " or if the cause is inrolled."

Copy LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h.

SIR,

January 16th, 1776.

I have been in anxious expectation of what you said you was to send this morning, but in which I have been disappointed.

disappointed. There was, you know, only one question; the answer to which, was necessary to enable me to form my resolution; and which question was stated in the letter you got to shew to the lawyers the week before last, as also in the memorandum which I sent you long before that; both which, *viz.* the letter and memorandum, my daughter sent you back upon Sunday night last, for the same purpose. You will please send me, *per* bearer, these two, as also one of the copies of the entail, of which you have two copies: The bearer will attend you to receive them: I only beg you will not return him without them. As it has been put entirely out of my power to take any step in the way of submission, I hope you have taken care to prepare the lawyers for the other step which has been substituted in the place of that. You know, last time I heard of that subject, they were still uninformed as to what both you and I thought the most material part of my defences. It is not to be doubted, that I have much to say to my agent, on the subject of the business; but, as I am just only recovered from a fainting fit, of which I have had three this morning, I am not in a condition to write; and, as you and I will never have it in our power to meet, in all probability, I must only say, on that head, that you know your duty; and I hope, and doubt not, that you will do it. That Heaven may take you, and this business, under its peculiar protection, is the prayer of your, &c.

(Signed) H. H—K—S—N.

Copy CARD, Miss H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h,
dictated by her Father.

January 16th, 1776.

Papa is in bed, and not in a situation that he could write queries, either to-night or to-morrow. The queries

ries are those which he gave you note of a month ago, and which, you said, you had prepared for putting to the lawyers at the consultation, but which you was prevented from doing, by their breaking up abruptly. And you may remember, that you told papa, upon that occasion, that you would call upon the lawyers, and put the queries; in consequence of which, he wrote you a letter on Saturday se'ennight, in order to be shown to the lawyers, at the same time that you put the queries. We cannot doubt, that you have the queries which you had prepared for putting to the lawyers at the consultation. Inclosed we return you also the letter and memorandums from which you had extracted these queries. There will, besides all these, naturally occur to you some queries, with regard to Mr. C—n—e's new proposal, of restricting all within the compass of 2000*l.* upon the footing of a submission. Papa has repeatedly told you, that the answers to these queries were absolutely necessary, in order to enable him to form any judgment at all; and the being deprived of that light, distressed him in the hardest manner, as he could not conceive from what motives he had met with such treatment. He is still in the same situation; and can say nothing but what he said at the beginning to you, that he put his life and fortune, with confidence, into your hands, and, as I wrote you last night, the life being now lost, the fortune may go also, if neither his own, nor any other lawyers, can be found who will answer your questions. *

You

* Observe, that the one who wrote this card for Mr. H--k--f--n, and saw him reduced to this extremity of distress, was the same person who was the cause of it all, and who lay under infinite obligations to him. One, to whose welfare he had paid twenty years of unwearied attention, at the hazard of his life, and the expence of his fortune, merely because Heaven seemed to exact that duty at his hand, and for no other reason: yet, so far was this from exciting any sense of gratitude, that it produced not the smallest compunction upon this occasion. On the contrary, the same plan was obstinately persevered in, and the same crimes carried to a much greater height after this.

You said you was to get the opinion of all the lawyers: You now confine that to Mr. C—b—l alone, in regard to the queries.—Papa suggests to your consideration, whether it would not be very proper, that Mr. M^cQ—n see the letter at least: But, what is of most importance to us now, is, to know, whether there is time to determine upon any thing, so as not to lose the opportunity of this week.

Copy LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h.

SIR,

January 17th, 1776.

Finding myself a little more at ease at present, and knowing how precarious this sort of interval may be with me, I wish to avail myself of the occasion, to look a little into my business. I desire you will, therefore, send me, *per* bearer, the bag, with all my papers. Was it convenient for you, and practicable, you need not doubt that I would wish also to see yourself: But this, I am sensible, will be to presume too far. The process, you have told me, is laid to sleep with Lord C—v—t—n; there let it rest. Let nothing more be done in my name, till I give further directions. It has become matter of strange reflection to me now, that a cause, which, you so often told me, was so just, so clear, &c. even the length of dissuading me to think of a submission, has, all of a sudden, become so much the reverse, and so shameful a one, (shall I say?) that, as you told me yesterday, *my lawyers declare they will not appear in it.* This gives me small concern. Conscious of my own rectitude, Heaven knows, I, for my own part, am neither ashamed nor afraid. Since my lawyers will not appear, S—te's process of reduction may go on without opposition, I suppose; the Court of S—f—n may break the entail,

E c

tail, and the House of P—s may, in like manner, confirm their sentence. This, I presume you think, would be distressing to me. So it would, in point of fortune ; but that is a point I never set a value upon. Poverty is no bugbear to me ; nor can it ever make me blush. I should blush, indeed, to employ gentlemen, were they so disposed, (which, however, you have told me they are not) to contend for me in so rascally a cause as, it seems, this of mine is now judged to be, or to ensnare my antagonist into a submission ; with a view, by that means, of, perhaps, obtaining some iniquitous advantage over him, under the specious name of damages, &c. I desire nothing that is unjust. Let me perish, rather than take any share in such a step, or desire any man to aid me in it, if unjust. Riches I always held in contempt, and always will. This point, therefore, and all that relates to it, is trifling in my eye ; and so I drop it, to go to another, which touches me more.

What has affected me in quite a different manner, what I felt severely, what I still feel, and never can forget, is the treatment which I have received on the subject of the questions ; or, to speak more properly, the one single question ; the solution of which, I have been so often promised, during the course of a month, and which was absolutely necessary to enable me to form any resolution upon the point which was all that time in agitation. The peremptory demand, or rather, I should say, order sent me, at last, to go into the submission, without that light, and the torrent of abuse with which I was deluged, because I refused to obey, and that at the critical moment of a distress, when it was expected that such reiterated abuse could not fail to destroy me, my physicians, who were almost always constantly with me, are witnesses how nearly that happened. That affair is now like a dream to me. I was at that time not able to defend myself, but employed my daughter to do it. It is of great importance to me, to have a distinct view of that matter : You will, therefore, be pleased to send all the cards, letters, &c. (or exact copies of them) which

which were sent to you, particularly since Thursday last, whether wrote by the hand of myself or my daughter, from, Sir, &c.

(Signed) H. H—K—S—N.

Copy L E T T E R, from Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h.

SIR,

January 22d, 1776.

I am now perfectly sensible, that you wantonly retarded the progress of my business, for above a month past, by your foolish project of proposing to yourself, that you could make me proceed in it as you pleased, without the information which I required of you; and, as you have, by your card of Friday evening last, now also given it up, as I think, conscious that, but for your conduct, it might have been totally settled long before that, I desire that you will instantly send me all the papers, cards, letters, and the power with which I vested you, for the management of that business; as also your accompt.—*N. B.* As I have had sufficient experience already of your insolence and folly, not to doubt that you may be capable of carrying both to the most absurd length, I caution you not to think of presenting yourself in my house upon this, or any other occasion. Send the things which I have asked, without more delay, by your clerk, or whom you please. Let your accompt be discharged, and the money shall be paid to the bearer of it, by

(Signed) H. H—K—S—N.

N. B. In consequence of the above, Mr. W—h sent a copy of his accompt for Mr. H—k—f—n's examination, desiring him to send the money, and that then he

E c 2

would

would discharge the accompt, and fend the papers called for. Mr. H—k—f—n accordingly sent the money, and Mr. W—h returned him the accompt discharged, but retained the papers.

Copy C A R D, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. W—h.

January 27th, 1776.

Mr. H—k—f—n once more requires J—n W—h to fend him his papers ; does not understand by what authority J—n W—h pretends to have given any of them into any third hand. If J—n W—h does not now fend Mr. H—k—f—n every paper which he delivered to him, together with those which have, in the course of the business, been added to the number since, and particularly, the different proposals made by Mr. S—te's agents, on the head of a submission ; Mr. H—k—f—n is determined instantly to apply to the L—ds, to compel J—n W—h to do him justice on this head ; a method which Mr. H—k—f—n would have taken before now, had it not been for other considerations, than such as J—n W—h merits at his hands.—Mr. H—k—f—n will delay two hours, and no more.

Some days after this, Mr. H—k—f—n being informed that J—n W—h's servant was in his kitchen, and had been there for some time, called for his wife, and asked her what that servant was doing in his house? she told him, he had brought a letter to her, and waited for the answer, which she had been prevented from writing by company drinking tea with her, and who were not yet gone. Mr. H—k—f—n desired to see that letter, and she gave it him. Here it is copied *verbatim*.

MY

MY LADY,

Saturday.

I have a cousin-german, a young man, going out to his father at J—m—a just now, and, among other recommendations, I should esteem it as a particular favour, if your Ladyship would procure him one from the Miss K—hs to their brother the governor. The young man's name is J—s—H—l—L—d—n of P—t—R—y—l, J—m—a, who was son of J—n L—d—n of M—f—n in the west country, my grandfather, whose wife was a sister of the Mistress of E—p—f—n, and daughter to Sir A—b—d F—m—g of S—m; and consequently the adventurer is related to many good families. My cousin does not want any thing of the governor, but that he may know who he is, and may tell any enquirer that he had a recommendation of the young man, at his return from Britain, if there should happen to be occasion for mentioning any thing about him. I beg pardon for giving your Ladyship this piece of trouble, and beg leave to present you, and Miss H—k—f—n, with the best wishes of my wife and self; which likewise please to make acceptable to Miss M—t—d.

We wonder much, we never have the pleasure of seeing you. I am, most respectfully, my Lady, your most obedient and faithful servant, (Signed) J—N W—H.

After reading the above letter, Mr. H—k—f—n discharged that ever his wife or daughter should set foot within the house of a v—l—n, who thus showed himself base enough to propose to keep up a faction, and divide the family of another man; and, at same time, gave orders to dismiss the servant instantly, with this sole answer, That if ever he, or the p—py his master, dared to set foot within his house again, they might depend upon being horse-whipt down stairs.

Meantime, Mr. H—k—f—n had wrote to all his lawyers, on the subject of what W—h had told him formerly,

formerly, that they refused to appear for him, in his cause with S—te, before the L—ds, and received answers from them as follow :

Copy LETTER, from Mr. M'Q—n to Mr.
H—k—f—n.

SIR,

Feb. 1st, 1776.

I have just now the favour of yours. It is a gross falshood, that I said I would not plead your cause : On the contrary, if the cause goes on, I shall do all in my power on your behalf ; but I always did say, since ever a submission was mentioned, that it was the wisest course for you to follow, and I still remain of that opinion. If a submission can be accomplished, the tailzie's being recorded does not, in my apprehension, afford any solid reason against the submission ; and, on your account, I shall be very sorry, if the submission does not take place, as it will involve you in a litigation, which, in all probability, will not end soon. And I am, Dear Sir, your most obedient humble servant,

(Signed) R-B. M'Q—n,

Copy LETTER, from Mr. S-l-t-r M—r-y to Mr.
H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

E—b—h, 2d Feb.

I do not recollect that I ever said, I would not plead your cause ; and, as I never thought of declining to
plead

plead it, I am positive you must be misinformed in what you say was told you on that head.

I gave my opinion some time ago, on a memorial with respect to your cause; and I do not see any reason to alter that opinion; particularly, in so far as it recommends a submission. But if you insist on going on with the law-suit, I shall certainly discharge my duty, by pleading it to the best of my abilities.—Such being my resolution, I suppose you will not desire to have your memorial returned: If you do, you shall have it immediately. I have the honour to be, Dear Sir, your most obedient, and most obliged humble servant,

(Signed) A—X. M—R—Y.

Copy LETTER, Mr. I—y C—b—ll to Mr.
H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

When I received your letter, I was just going out to the Court, and have been taken up till now. The contents of it surprised me very much; and I can assure you, that what is there said, about my refusal to appear for you, never had any authority from me, directly or indirectly. I should have been unworthy of my gown, had I formed such an idea, after taking your fees, and engaging in your cause; and, therefore, let the submission go on or not, you may depend upon any assistance I can give you, as a counsel, to extricate you and your family out of the present disagreeable scrape. I only call it disagreeable, because, from the intimate connection which once subsisted between the parties, and the very different situation on which they now stand, together with the perplexed state of the transaction itself, you naturally must feel some uneasiness about it, till matters are settled;

settled. But when you talk, in your letter, of ruin and poverty, &c. you must permit me to say, that you have conceived, by much, too strong an apprehension of your danger. I remain of the same opinion that I did before, that a submission is the most proper way of ending this dispute; and, I dare say, the other party will see it in the same light.—The registration of the tailzie makes no difference upon the case.

Along with the papers which you sent me this morning, I return you the memorial I had from Mr. W—h, as you seem desirous to have it.—You can send it back again when necessary. I am, Dear Sir, your most obedient servant,

(Signed) I—Y C—B—L.

=====

Copy LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. I—Y
C—b—ll.

DEAR SIR,

February 3d, 1776.

I am to acknowledge your obliging and friendly favour of last night, for which I return you my most sincere and grateful thanks.—Receive also the memorial again, by which I see that W—h had not furnished you with any hints of defence against S—te's summons of reduction, though he had given me to understand, that he had furnished my lawyers also with memorials on that subject.—This it was, which made me desirous to see these memorials.

I am perfectly sensible to the humanity of your intention, where you kindly express yourself in these words: "But when you talk, in your letter, of ruin and poverty, &c. you must permit me to say, that you have conceived, by much, too strong an apprehension of your danger."—Alas! Sir, that ruin is too evident to be mistaken. You know, that the design of the sub-
mission

million is for the purpose of breaking the entail, and reponing me to my estate: It is also proposed to be qualified with a restriction to 2000 l. on S—te's side, as an equivalent for all the damage that he has done to it. I can easily prove, that, six months before S—te got my estate, one farmer had offered me 600 l. a year for a tack of it, and another farmer had offered me twenty-seven shillings Sterling *per* acre for one half of it; which, rating the other half at the same value, and which, by the by, is the best land of the two, would amount to more than 700 l. a year. If you will have the goodness to take the trouble to cast your eye upon the memorial and notes, herewith sent, which, it seems, had not been shown to you, though I was told otherways, you will see under what losses it is now proposed to return me my estate, and whether I am well founded in foreseeing my ruin in that project; and, as my life now draws very near an end, I cannot help being inclined to think, that it is better for me to let things alone as they are, than to put my hand to a thing so much contrary to my judgment, and the opinion which I have always entertained of right and wrong. I shall, however, pay great deference to your opinion of the matter, after you have considered it in this point of light.

Had it been agreeable to the laws of the country, or rather to the ideas of those about me, that the interim subsistence, which I have been soliciting for upwards of six months past, could have been obtained from the man who has r—b—d me of my estate, and of my l—e, in so t—c—r—s a manner, no doubt, these my last moments would, by that means, have been rendered more comfortable, and, perhaps, even my l—e might have been preserved. But, in this, as in every thing else, I am resigned to the will of Providence;—and ever am, with most grateful acknowledgements, Dear Sir, your most obedient, much obliged humble servant,

(Signed) H. H—k—f—n.

F F

P. S. I see,

P. S. I see, by a scroll of submission, just now sent me, that S—te's caution, even to the extent of 2000*l.* is withdrawn. I have sent it to you, and you may return it.

ADIEU.

Copy SUBMISSION betwixt H—L—N—s
H—K—s—N and J—N S—TE.

IT is contracted and agreed between the parties following, *viz.* J—n S—te of P—f—f—d, Esq; in the fourth liberties of the city of C—k; in the kingdom of I—l—d, for himself, and as taking burden on him for R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te his son, and the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, for himself, with consent of his said father, as his administrator-in-law, and J—n B—r—y, factor and attorney for the said J—n S—te upon the estate of R—t—l—t, upon the one part; and H—l—n—s H—k—f—n of that ilk, Esq; for himself, and as taking burden upon him for Miss C—s H—k—f—n, his daughter and only child, of the other part: That is to say, The said parties have submitted, and hereby submit and refer to the final sentence and decreet-arbitral to be given and pronounced by H—y D—d—s of M—v—l, Esq; his M—y's a—e for S—l—d, and R—b—t M'Q—n of H—d—t—n, Esq; a—e, all disputes, claims, questions and demands, which either party could have with or against each other, for any cause whatever preceding the date hereof; and particularly, without prejudice of the said generality, all claims and demands arising to either party, in virtue of certain articles of agreement executed in I—l—d between the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n and J—n S—te, dated the 16th January 1772 years, and of a contract
and

and deed of entail executed betwixt the said parties upon the 29th of April, and registered in the register of tailzies the 19th of June, and in the books of C—c-l and S—f—n the 10th of July, all in the year 1772; and of an obligation relative to the said contract and deed of entail, and of even date therewith, granted by the said J—n S—te to the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n; and of an bond for the sum of 4000 l. Sterling, of even date also with the said contract and deed of entail, granted by the said J—n S—te to the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n, and in virtue of the disposition of the stocking and effects upon the farm of R-t—l-l-t, granted by the said H-l-n-s H—k—f—n to the said J—n S—te, for behoof of the said R-c—d-B-n-j-m-n S—te his son, dated the

day of 1772 years: As also, the process brought before the sheriff of F—e, in name of the said C—s H—k—f—n, for herself, and as trustee for her said father, against J—n B—r-y, factor for the said J—n S—te, for sequestrating the stocking and effects upon the farm of R-t—l-l-t, and advocacy thereof to the court of S—f—n, and the whole steps of procedure had therein; as also, the process instituted by the said C—s H—k—f—n, for herself, and as trustee foresaid, before the L—ds of S—n, against the said J—n S—te and his said son, for implement of their part of the said contract and deed of entail, and other writings above mentioned; as also, the process of forthcoming raised before the Court of S—f—n, at the instance of the said C—s H—k—f—n, for herself, and as trustee foresaid, against the said J—n B—r-y, for making forthcoming to her the foresaid stocking and effects, or value thereof, which had been arrested in his hands, in virtue of the foresaid depending process; as also, the process of reduction and improbation of the foresaid contract and deed of entail, and other writings, in part above narrated, relative thereto, raised before the L—ds of S—f—n, at the instance of the said J—n S—te and R-c—d-B-n-j-m-n S—te his son, with consent and concurrence of his

said father, as his administrator-in-law, and the said J—n
 B—r—y, factor for the said J—n S—te and his said son;
 and also, at the instance of his M——'s a—v—c—e, a—
 gainst the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, and C——s H—k—
 f—n, and others therein-mentioned, and whole steps of
 procedure taken, or competent to be taken in the fore-
 said process, with power to the said arbiters to cognosce
 and decide in the premises, any time betwixt and the
 day of next, or any other
 day to which the present submission shall be prorogated,
 which they are hereby empowered to do, and to take
 all necessary probation anent the premises, either by the
 oaths of parties, or any other method by law compe-
 tent; and in case of variance, to name an oversman,
 with power to the said arbiters or oversman, from time
 to time, to pronounce partial and interim decreets-arbi-
 tral, which shall be binding on, and effectual against the
 said parties; and whatever the said arbiters, and, in
 case of variance, the oversman to be named by them,
 shall determine in the premises, the said parties-submit-
 ters bind and oblige them, and their heirs, executors,
 and successors, to abide by, implement and fulfil, the one
 to the other, under the penalty of 500 l. Sterling, to be
 paid by the party failing, to the party performing, or
 willing to perform, by and attour performance. And it
 is hereby expressly provided and declared, that the pre-
 sent submission shall remain and continue in full force,
 ay and until the final determination of the matters here-
 by submitted; and that notwithstanding the death of
 all, or any of the said parties; and that any decret or
 decreets-arbitral that shall be pronounced after the death
 of all or any of the said parties, shall be equally bind-
 ing upon their heirs and representatives, as if signed in
 their own lifetime: And further, that any proof to be
 taken in the course, or in virtue of the present submis-
 sion, shall be held, admitted, and received, as legal evi-
 dence in any after judicial proceedings or suits that may
 take place, or be brought in relation to the matters
 hereby submitted, in the same manner as if taken and
 led

led under the authority of the court or courts before which such suit might be brought ; any law or practice in the contrary notwithstanding. Lastly, the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, with consent of his said father and administrator-in-law, and the said J—n S—te, as taking burden on him for his said son, hereby bind and oblige them, jointly and severally, that the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, upon his arrival at the years of majority, shall ratify, confirm, and implement the decree or decreets-arbitral, to be pronounced by the said arbiters or overfman in the premises. And the said parties consent to the registration hereof, &c. Dated at C—k, the 17th June, and at E—b—h, the 26th and 28th of June, 1776.

COPY REPORT by the Visitors appointed by the Arbiters, in the Submission between J—N S—TE of P—f—f—d, and H—L—N—S H—K—S—N of that ilk, Esq;

WE, M—j—r J—n M—v—e of C—n—y, J—f—h R—f—n, tenant in H—h—h—d, J—n S—t, tenant in C—g—L—h—t, and J—n S—s, tenant in B—l's—m—s, visitors appointed by the right honourable H—y D—d—s of M—v—e, Esq; his M—'s a—v—c—e, and Mr. R—b—t M—Q—n, a—v—c—e, arbiters in the submission betwixt J—n S—te of P—f—f—d, Esq; in the south liberties of the city of C—k, in the kingdom of I—l—d, for himself, and as taking burden on him for R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, his son, of the one part, and H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, Esq; of that ilk, for himself, and as taking burden upon him for Miss C—s H—k—f—n his daughter, on the other part ; having visited, inspected, and perambulated the whole lands of R—t—l—t, and carefully considered

considered the soil, situation, and present crop, are unanimously of opinion, That the said whole estate is presently worth, and might be set at 400l. Sterling of yearly rent, payable by the tenant to the master, and the master to pay all public burdens; and that, by information from the servants, there was sown this crop, 85 bolls oats, and 38 bolls of barley, and all the rest of the estate in grass, whereof 37 acres cut for hay; and no fallow, excepting 16 acres of the muir: That we the said J—n S—s and J—n S—t, had occasion, in the month of August 1766, to visit the said lands, with an intent of taking the same; and we are of opinion, that the lands would not have set at the same rent then, that they would now, and that the crop was not then so good as at present, particularly on the easter side; and that the wester side, which was in corn at the time we saw it, is now in pasture grass, and was then the best part of the crop: That such of the hedges as were planted when we saw the lands, in the 1766, are not now in so good order as then; but that there are several additional inclosures of hedge and ditch made since that time: That I the said J—f—h R—f—n had occasion to examine the said estate of R—t—l—t in the month of July 1768, with a view to take the same; and that, all circumstances considered, I am of opinion, that the estate was worth as much then as now; and agrees with the above report as to the fences.—“ That I “ the said M—j—r J—n M—v—e had several times occasion to see a great part of the above estate of R—t—l—t, in the year 1772, and am of opinion, that the “ grounds* were considerably of more value at that “ time

* Had the arbiters been disposed, from this information of M—j—r M—v—e's, to call for more proof, it could have been proved, that the estate was worth 100l. perhaps 150l. *per annum* more in 1772, than it was either in 1768 or 1776; the year 1768 being anterior to the improvements made by Mr. H—k—f—n, which had cost him 3000l.; and the year 1776 being posterior to the deteriorations made by Mr. S—te, which, it seems, in the opinion of these farmers, had already reduced the estate to the same value that it was

" time than at present ; as, since that time, they have
 " not been properly cropt, nor sufficiently manured,
 " and the hedges much neglected." In witness where-
 of, we have signed this report, at R-t—l—t, the 13th
 day of August 1776 years. (Signed) J— M—v—e,
 J—n S—t, J—n S—s, J—f—b R—f—n.

Copy DECREET-ARBITRAL, betwixt
 H-L-N-S H-K-S-N and J-N S-TE
 and others.

WE, H—y D—d—s of M—v—le, Esq; his M—'s
 a—e for S—l—d, and R-b-t M'Q—n of
 H-d-t—n, Esq; a—e, arbiters mutually elected and
 chosen by J—n S—te of P—f—d, Esq; in the south
 liberties of the city of C—k, in the kingdom of I—l—d,
 for himself, and as taking burden on him for R-c-d-
 B-j-m-n S—te his son, and the said R-c-d-B-j-m-n
 S—te, for himself, with consent of his said father, as his
 administrator-in-law, and J—n B-r-y, factor and attor-
 ney for the said J—n S—te, upon the estate of R-t-l—t,
 on the one part, and H-l-n-s H-k—f—n of that ilk, for
 himself, and as taking burden on him for Miss C—s
 H-k—f—n his daughter and only child, on the other
 part, conform to submission, dated the 17th, 26th and
 28th days of June last, having considered the deed of
 entail, and mutual contract therein mentioned, executed
 by the said H-l-n-s H-k—f—n, of his lands and estate
 of R-t-l—t, lying in the parishes of K-m-y and B-m-
 r-o, and shire of F-e, in favours of the said R-c-d-
 B-j-m-n S—te, and the heirs of tailzie therein named,
 . dated

was of before the improvements were made : But, apparently, this
 was not necessary ; as the proof already adduced, was sufficient to
 support the entail in all its points.

dated the 29th day of April, registered in the register of tailzies the 19th day of June, and in the books of C—c-l and S—f-n the 10th day of July 1772 years, charter of resignation under the great seal thereon, dated the 23d day of February, and sealed the 3d day of May 1773 years, with the instrument of seisin following thereon, dated the 3d day of June, and registered in the general register of seisins at E—b—h, the 16th day of July 1773 years; and having also considered the memorials and claims given in by the parties, with the answers thereto, and whole writs and obligations therein referred to, produced, report of the visitors appointed by us to inspect and value the said lands and estate of R—t—l—t; and having heard the parties doers, *viva voce*, upon the matters submitted; and having also considered the state of accompts, and claim made by either party against the other, relative to the balance due upon the bond of 4000 l. Sterling, granted by the said J—n S—te to the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, mentioned in the foresaid mutual contract and deed of entail, and relative to the balance due by the said J—n S—te, of the annuity of 500 l. Sterling *per annum*, which he became bound to pay to the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n during his lifetime, by the foresaid deed of entail and mutual contract, and also relative to the claim made by the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n against the said J—n S—te, for and on account of the said R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te his son, and to the claim made by the said J—n S—te, against the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, on account of money advanced by the said J—n S—te for him, and relative to every claim competent to either of the said parties against the other, on any account whatever, preceding the date of the said submission; and having considered the facts and circumstances, situation of the parties, and value of the estate, and having God and a good conscience before us, we do give furth and pronounce our final decret-arbitral in manner following, *viz.*
1mo, We find, That there was due by the said J—n S—te to the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, upon the 16th day

day of July last, on account of the foresaid bond of 4000 l. Sterling, and of the foresaid bond of annuity for 500 l. Sterling *per annum*, and in full of his claim on account of the said R-c-d-B-j-m-n S-te, and after taking into consideration the claims of the said J-n S-te against the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, a balance of 1740 l. Sterling; which balance of 1740 l. Sterling, we decern and ordain the said J-n S-te, and his heirs and successors whatsoever, and Sir W-l-m F-b-s, J-s H-t-r and company, his cautioners, to the amount of the cautionry-obligation by them granted, for him, conjunctly and severally, to pay to the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n, his heirs, executors, or assignees, and that against the term of Martinmas next, with 348 l. Sterling of liquidate penalty in case of failzie, and the legal interest of the said principal balance, from the said 16th day of July last to the foresaid term of payment, and yearly, termly, and proportionally thereafter, while the same remains unpaid. 2do, We find, That the said annuity of 500 l. Sterling shall continue to be paid yearly to the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n during his lifetime; and we decern and ordain the same to be paid to him by the said J-n S-te and his forefairs accordingly, at two terms in the year, viz. the 16th day of January, and 16th day of July yearly, beginning the first half year's payment thereof on the 16th day of January next, in the year 1777, and the next term's payment on the 16th day of July thereafter, in full of the first year's annuity, and so forth half-yearly, during his life, with interest after the respective terms of payment, till payment thereof. 3tio, We find, That the said H-l-n-s H-k-f-n is bound, and we discern and ordain him, and his forefairs, to purge the foresaid lands of R-t-l-t, of all incumbrances affecting the same, due or contracted by him, or his predecessors and authors. 4to, We find, That the destination of succession, and whole restrictions, limitations, clauses irritant and resolute, contained in the foresaid tailzie, are void and null; and that the said lands and estate of R-t-l-t, with the parts,

G g

privileges,

privileges and pertinents thereof, belong to the said J—n S—te, his heirs whomsoever, and assignees, in fee-simple. And, therefore, we decern and ordain the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, his heirs and successors, to disincumber the said lands and estate of R—t—l—t, of all incumbrances, as aforesaid, affecting the same, as they shall appear on a search of the registers; and, out of the first and readiest of the said sums decerned for, the said J—n S—te, and his forefairs, and his said cautioners, shall, at the sight of the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, or his doer, pay and extinguish the debts and incumbrances affecting the said lands and estate of R—t—l—t, contracted by him, or his authors or predecessors, as the same shall appear by an authentic search of the records, as aforesaid, and register the discharges thereof in the proper registers; the one half of the expence of all which, shall be discounted out of the sums hereby found due to the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n; and shall make payment of the balance to the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n and his forefairs. And, *5to*, We find, That the foresaid C—s H—k—f—n, only daughter and child of the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, in case she shall survive her said father *, is a just and lawful creditor on the foresaid lands of R—t—l—t, for the principal sum of 1000 l. Sterling. And we decern and ordain the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, when required, and before payment

* Mr. H—k—f—n does not pretend to the smallest knowledge in jurisprudence; but a question offers here to common sense, which he has not been lucky enough, hitherto, to meet with any lawyer who could answer; it is this:—Mr. H—k—f—n had entailed his estate upon his adopted son, &c. and provided his daughter in an annuity of 200 l. *per annum*, or 1000 l. in her option, payable at his death. It is evident by this, that, in the event of Miss H—k—f—n's dying before her father, it was intended, that this 1000 l. should fall to Mr. H—k—f—n's adopted son and representative; who, being her brother, became likewise her heir by this clause: But, by this decree, the entail was broken; the connection dissolved; the estate was given to J—n S—te, an alien; Mr. H—k—f—n was totally cut out of this 1000 l. though a part of the price of the estate; and J—n S—te was also made *heir to Miss H—k—f—n* in this 1000 l.

payment to him of the foresaid sums, and J—n S—te, and R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te, with consent of his said father, as his administrator-in-law, to grant, subscribe, and deliver, a formal, valid, heritable and irredeemable possession of the said lands and estate of R—t—l—t, with the mill, mill-lands, multures and sequels thereof, and parts, privileges and pertinents belonging to the same, to and in favour of the said J—n S—te, his heirs whomsoever, or assignees; but that with and under the burden of the payment to the said H—l—n—s H—k—f—n of the foresaid annuity of 500 l. Sterling during his lifetime, at two terms in the year, beginning the first term's payment thereof on the 16th of January 1777, and the next term's payment on the 16th of July thereafter, in full of the first year's annuity, and so forth half-yearly thereafter, during his lifetime, with annualrent, from and after the respective terms of payment, till payment thereof. As also, with and under the burden of the payment to the said C—s H—k—f—n, in case she shall survive her said father, her heirs, executors or assignees, of the foresaid principal sum of 1000 l. Sterling, payable at the first term of Whitsunday or Martinmas after her said father's death, with the due and ordinary annualrent of the said principal sum, from and after the foresaid term of payment, till payment thereof; and which annuity and 1000 l. Sterling, payable to the said C—s H—k—f—n, we decern and ordain to be real burdens, and preferable debts, upon the foresaid lands and estate of R—t—l—t, and shall be so declared by the said disposition. And upon the said disposition being so granted, we decern, ordain, and declare the said mutual contract, and deed of tailzie, destination of succession, and whole restrictions, limitations, clauses irritant and resolute therein contained, and whole clauses, tenor, and contents of the same, and all that has followed, or is competent to follow thereon, null, void, and of no avail, and to bear no faith in judgment, or outwith the same in time coming. And upon payment of the sums hereby decerned for, and performance of the other ar-

cicles herein contained, we discern and ordain the said parties mutually to discharge each other of all claims and demands either of them may have against the other, for any cause or occasion, at and preceding the last date of the foresaid submission. And, *lastly*, We discern and ordain the said parties-submitters, and their foresaids, to abide by, implement and fulfil this our decreet-arbitral, under the penalty of 500 l. Sterling, to be paid by the party failing to the party observing, or willing to observe, over and above performance. And we ordain this our decreet-arbitral to be registered along with the said submission, in terms of the clause of registration therein contained, and that execution pass thereon, for implement of this our decreet-arbitral, conform thereto. In witness whereof, these presents (wrote upon this and the seven preceding pages of stamped paper, by R-b-t P-t-n, clerk to J-s N-b-g-g writer in E-b-h) are subscribed by me the said H-y D-d-s, at M-l-y-e, the 26th day of September 1776 years, before these witnesses, W-l-m B-l my clerk, and R-b-t M-f-t my servant; and by me the said R-b-t M-Q-n, at G-ge's S-e, near E-b-h, the said 26th day of September, and year foresaid, before these witnesses, W-l-m C-n-e my clerk, and the said R-b-t P-t-n. (Signed) H-y D-d-s, R-. M-Q-n. R-b-t M-f-t, witness. W-l. B-l, witness. W-l. C-n-e, witness. *

The

* One of the visitors offered Mr. H-k-f-n twenty shillings Sterling *per* acre, for every arable acre in the estate, (in 1768) upon a tack of nineteen years. This offer is still in Mr. H-k-r-f-n's possession, under the farmer's hand.

The arbiters now broke the entail, and ordained Mr. S—te to pay an annuity of 500 l. *per annum* to Mr. H—k—f—n; which, at six years purchase, the common price of annuities, is - - L. 3000

But, in the state of health that Mr. H—k—r—f—n then was, his annuity would not have sold at one year's purchase.

By bond - - - - 4000
To Miss H—k—f—n, but not till after her father's death - - L. 1000

L. 7000

The estate was worth, in *anno* 1772, at least L. 15,000
Stock, nursery, &c. &c. - - 2000

L. 17,000

Deduce the price actually paid - - 7000

Balance L. 10,000

Thus, in a very singular and most astonishing manner, Mr. H—k—f—n lost 10,000 l. and saw the axe laid to the root of his family.

N. B. C—n—e now also acknowledged the writs which had been so confidently denied (see S—te's letters) to have been all along in their possession, as Mr. H—k—f—n had averred.

Copy C A R D, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. D—d—s.

Mr. H—k—f—n of H—k—f—n presents most respectful compliments to his cousin Mr. D—d—s, for whom he
has

has a very just esteem: will beg leave, by and by, to appeal from the judgment of his M——'s A-v-c—e, by which he lately lost 10,000 l. to the judgment of the k—p—r of his M——'s f—n—t, better informed; by which, however, he cannot now expect to recover it.

Cases will occur, sometimes, where it is absolutely necessary to descend to *minutiae*, in order to expiscate truth, and to do material justice. There can be no doubt, that, when his L—sh-p finds leisure to revise that process, he will easily perceive, that no less attention was exerted, no less artifice was used, to deceive the arbiters, than to injure Mr. H—k—f—n, who has been stripped of his paternal inheritance, and seen the axe laid to the root of an ancient family, by a very singular combination.

Mr. H—k—f—n, however, flatters himself, that his L—sh-p will be induced, at last, to do him the justice to believe, that a man who sets no value upon money, and who has actually given proof, in more than one instance, that he would give up his life, sooner than give his assent to an unjust transaction, is incapable of projecting a f—d, and has a just claim to possess his integrity, along with his poverty.

His L—sh-p is entreated to observe, that, though the first part of the anecdotes, which Mr. H—k—f—n now presents to his L—sh-p, has been sent to sundries of his friends, yet the second part has been sent to none, excepting to L—d B—f—d, and possibly may never go farther. The letters of correspondence, also, betwixt Mr. H—k—f—n and the v-l—n S—te, and the different branches of his family; the entail, which was the consequence of Mr. H—k—f—n's connection with him only; and the breaking of that entail, to the ruin of Mr. H—k—f—n's family, will be sent to none on earth, till Mr. H—k—f—n first has an opportunity of laying them before his L—sh-p, and L—d B—f—d; for, such is his confidence in both their L—sh-ps, that he would always wish to submit himself to their L—sh-ps opinions, where his interest is at all concerned.

P. S. A print-

P. S. A printed copy of the whole is in the hands of L—d B—f—d, for his and your L—sh—p's perusal.

Copy LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to L—d
B—f—d.

MY L—D,

I do not offer an apology, for giving your L—sh—p this trouble : I rest that upon your L—sh—p's candour, and the justice of my request. My L—d, since the date of your L—sh—p's decision upon my entail, public fame has denounced me a v—l—n, and makes use of your L—sh—p's authority for it.—They say, That the arbiters were men of such known integrity, and such adepts in jurisprudence, that it is not to be imagined, that they would have broken an entail upon any other footing, than the single one on which an entail can be broken, viz. a transaction being fraudulent ; much less would they have adjudged the estate to Mr. S—te, at an under-value, had they not been well satisfied, that the fraud was upon Mr. H—k—f—n's side.

My L—d, I must beg of your L—sh—p to consider, that my life, my fame, and my fortune, were, at that time, all equally committed in trust to the arbiters. Heaven was pleased, beyond all human expectation, to preserve my life ; my fortune, your L—sh—p knows, was then also decided upon ; my fame, it seems, still remains languishing under a recent wound from the hands of the arbiters ; and, in this, as in the others, I still desire no favour, but only a decision, and upon the principles of the strictest equity. Am I v—l—n ? Then let it be so declared. Am I an honest man ? Then let me bear a testimony of it along with the extirpation of my family,
when

when I go to join a race of ancestors, whose integrity never yet suffered an impeachment, so far as I know.

My L—d, as I am conscious of the integrity of my intentions, from the beginning to the end of that affair, and still altogether unconscious to any error in my conduct, through the whole of it, excepting a misplaced confidence, and an overstretched generosity, which I never conceived to be in the catalogue of crimes, I must entreat your L—sh-p to revise the proof, to condescend upon the fraud with which I am charged; and, if I have been so guilty, let me be convicted and execrated, as every v—l—n ought to be. I shall then acquiesce, without murmuring. But if, upon a mature revisal, no such fraud shall appear, I rely upon your L—sh-p's candour, to wipe off so cruel an imputation, and grant me to possess my honesty in my poverty. My L—d, weak as my discernment has been in some cases, it was sufficient, long ago, to enable me to discover, in the course of my correspondence with your L—sh-p, that you possess, in an eminent degree, the only quality that is truly estimable in the human character—integrity. From this conviction, I cannot doubt that your L—sh-p is sensible to what I now feel; and, from the same conviction, I subscribe myself, with real esteem and respect, &c.

(Signed) H. H—k—s—n.

=====

N. B. To the above, Mr. H—k—f—n received no answer, but only verbally, That there was no room for any body to impute any thing like fraud to him, upon the matter.—Thus, Mr. H—k—f—n saw himself stript of his paternal inheritance, his family razed from the future annals of his country, and his reputation mangled, butchered by the dash of a pen, and all explanation, all redress, refused when asked.

LETTER,

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to his adopted Son. *

E—b—h, February 11th, 1773.

MY DEAR R—C—D,

I have sent you, along with this, a book for the fiddle, also a book for drawing, and some China ink. I know, I need not tell you, that these are things about which you are not to employ much of your valuable time:—Music and drawing are innocent amusements when only used as such, but are by no means to be made a business of by you.

The acquiring of knowledge in the Latin tongue is also a pretty accomplishment, which will be useful to you in life, and is absolutely necessary for you: Yet neither is this to be considered as your chief business; *your great business is, to learn to be a man.* Know, my dear, that one may be a Latin or Greek scholar, and be at same time a disgrace to humanity.

My dear boy, what calls chiefly for your attention at present, is, to guard against contracting mean sentiments and narrow prejudices; a contagious distemper, which prevails in all little towns, and stamps the indelible characteristic of a vulgar mind: Should this infection seize you, you are undone.

Never suffer yourself to make ludicrous or satirical remarks upon the errors or foibles of others: When you perceive such in any person, mark them, only to

* So soon as the boy's preceptor read this letter, he locked it up, and never would let his pupil see it again; till a long time after, that the boy one day told the thing to Mr. H---k---f---n, who immediately sent for the pedagogue, reprimanded him for his conduct, ordered him to produce the letter, and to make his pupil copy it, and get it by heart.——Alas! what do the dutiful intentions, and distant correspondence of parents avail, when they are often so counteracted?

correct or avoid them in your own character ; but never comment upon them, or make them the subject of conversation.—Consider, my dear, at all times, that every boy and girl, every man and woman on earth, are your brothers and sisters : when you see them fall into error or folly, compassionate their misfortunes.—They have fallen into bad hands, when at your time of life ; and, for want of being conducted to proper distinctions at that period, have been led insensibly, through neglect, or perhaps by example, to a wrong judgment of things.—What a dreadful misfortune ! Better, far better they had died in their cradles ; and less, much less criminal would it have been in their parents, their tutors, or whoever had the charge of them, to have strangled them in their infancy, than to have trained them up with such dispositions.—Beware of the danger of conceiving prejudices (before you are capable of distinguishing) ; especially for or against *any person, any country, any church, or any government*. When you hear foolish people descanting upon such topics with rancour and passion (for none but fools will do so), say to yourself, What is this, that, or the other little corner in the globe, or the low prejudices of any of its inhabitants, to me, who am a citizen of the world, the friend of every good man, a professed disciple of JESUS CHRIST, and, like him, submissive to the political regulations of the country where I live, and of every society of which I am a member?—I repeat it, my dear child, be watchful to preserve the freedom of your mind. Avoid, as you would destruction, every person whom you discover to be disposed as I have described above, lest they infect you with their malice or their folly : Fly from them, and read the New Testament, as an antidote to their poison : Read also, upon such occasions, Antoninus's meditations, till they are engraved upon your heart ; especially the first book, which I read with you the other day. Learn to imitate that great and good man, in acquiring knowledge, in forming steady principles, and regulating your passions. Observe how he learned

to make proper distinctions, to avoid mean prejudices, and to become a man; for, by such means, you also must become a man such as you ought to be.

Ever since you became my son, by adoption, and the direction of your education and custody of your person became my charge, it has been my wish, to make it my only business to attend to these, and to discharge the duties which I have subjected myself to, in the character of a parent to you, to be ever near to you, to watch over you, to guard you from harm, from error, from vice, from folly, and especially from that dangerous leprosy of the soul, mean prejudices; which, if once contracted, will, for ever after, shut out the light of reason from you, deprive you of noble sentiments, and deface that likeness to God, which he, in peculiar favour, has stamped upon the human race above the rest of our fellow-creatures.—Remember then, my dear child, and never forget, one moment, that, upon the preservation of this likeness, depends all that is valuable to you: This, and this alone, is the passport which must procure you favourable re-admission to Him who has sent you out upon probation, stamped with a likeness to his own image, that is, endowed with reason. Should you appear, at the end of this short life, without that likeness, your conscience bearing witness against you, that you have entirely rubbed it off, by giving way to your passions upon every occasion; that, in place of regulating your conduct by the dictates of reason, whose harbingers are benevolence, good-nature, civility, justice, charity, calmness, and moderation, you had given up yourself to caprice, anger, mean prejudices, and suffered yourself to outrage, with censure, with calumny, with opprobrious language, with brutal insolence, contempt, or injustice, your friends, your companions, and all who presented themselves to you when in your capricious fits:—Alas! what then must become of you? You must acknowledge it just, to be cast out from the society of God, and the intercourse of all good men.

Do not then, my dear, delay one moment to begin this important work : Learn to consult with reason ; study Antoninus ; learn from him to regulate your passions, and to preserve yourself from low prejudices : Learn to be a philosopher, that is, to be a man ; to make reason your guide.—Dreadful must be the punishment of him who makes himself a brute, in contradiction to God, who designed him a man !

It grows late.—Good night to you : And believe me, with all the regard and attention of a parent, my dear boy, yours,

(Signed) H. H—K—S—N.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to his adopted Son.

E—b—h, March 22d, 1773.

My dear R—c—d,

I desire always to correspond with you by letters, when I am at a distance from you, to know how you go on in the different branches of your education ; and particularly, as the study of languages is dry, and little instructing, in a moral sense, to know what books you read in the mean-time, in the English language, for the purposes of acquiring sentiment, and forming principles, which, at your time of life, is always to be considered as the most essential part of education. I hope, by this time, you have got a copy of Antoninus's meditations, which I ordered Mr. B—n to commission for you, and which Mr. B—n promised me he would read with you. In reading books of that kind, I shall be glad that you will sometimes communicate to me any of the beautiful passages which strike you most ; and I shall do the same to you, when, in the course of my reading, I meet with
any

any thing particularly *à propos* to your instruction : And shall begin just now, by setting you the first example, in transcribing the following excerpt from a modern philosopher, who has lately made a tour through some of our British colonies.—This gentleman regrets much the want of proper seminaries for education in these countries; and, what is still worse than that, the mistaken indulgence and bad example of parents to their children; which often makes so deep an impression in their infancy, that when they are sent over, afterwards, to the mother-country, to be educated, it is found that there is no possibility of reclaiming them.—The dreadful consequences of which, to themselves, and to society, he exhibits in masterly colours, as follows :

“ There is (says he) a species of fruit, not seldom to be met with in England, but found, in its most exalted state, only amongst the English colonists in the West Indies, in America, and in Ireland, where it is cultivated most.—This fruit is fair to the eyes, and delicious to the palates of children ; but, when they are long indulged in the eating of it, it produces the same effects upon the habits of their minds and bodies, that the eating of the forbidden apple had upon those of the first parents of mankind, in opening to them a new scene in turpitude, and inspiring them with the ideas of vice and folly, hardly to be conceived by the rest of mankind. An individual, who has been accustomed to the use of this fruit in his state of infancy and puberty, acquires a dissipation of sentiment, and an eccentricity of imagination, which becomes incorrigible, and makes him that he differs scarce any thing from an absolute bedlamite, through the whole conduct of the remainder of his life. With him, the government of reason is totally unhinged ; his ideas deranged ; and the reins entirely given up to the direction of caprice and passion. It often strikes visibly in his countenance ; in his eyes, particularly, you see the same irregular motions, and often as strongly expressed, as in those of the inhabitants of bedlam.—His
“ adolescence

“ adolescence and earliest state of manhood (if he has a
 “ fortune) is dedicated to the squandering of that for-
 “ tune, which is often exhausted in games of hazard,
 “ even before he arrives at the age of majority. What
 “ hours he can spare from the gaming-table, for the
 “ purposes of recreation, he employs in what (he calls)
 “ hunting a steeple, a tree, a distant mountain, or some
 “ such object; in galloping up towards which, he is the
 “ greatest hero who can ride hardest, and in his way
 “ contrive, at same time, to encounter the most hazards
 “ of breaking his neck; and, in the night, in the in-
 “ dulgence of sensuality, with a depravity of sentiment,
 “ a want of delicacy, and with a brutality beyond what
 “ is described to us in the fabulous history of the satyrs.
 “ In his more advanced state (if any fortune remains to
 “ him) ostentatiously given to hospitality; without distinc-
 “ tion in his choice of his company; extravagant and
 “ stingy, by turns; often in the greatest extremes of
 “ both; complaisant and insolent, benevolent and brutal,
 “ alternately, to his guests, whom he has pressingly in-
 “ vited: In nothing rational or consistent, perpetually
 “ abusing and neglecting the true interest of his family;
 “ cursed in and by the children whom he has trained
 “ by example to tread in his own steps: Unfeeling and
 “ insensible amidst all this, amusing himself with a whore,
 “ a garden, a bubble, a rattle, or any such hobby-
 “ horse; to which he obstinately and tenaciously sacri-
 “ ficeth the existence, moral and physical, of all who
 “ depend upon him. At last, he drops from the stage
 “ of this world as he came upon it; with this difference
 “ only, that he entered a maniac, but in his progress
 “ acquires the character of a demoniac, in which he
 “ descends.”

What a life, my dear R—c—d, has such a man to
 account for! does not the idea of it make one tremble?
 I hope Mr. B—n has no such fruit in his garden: And,
 that it may be your fate never to taste any such, is, my
 dear boy, the sincere prayer of your affectionate

(Signed) H. H—K—S—N.

LETTER

LETTER from Mr. H—k—f—n to his cousins,
the Messrs. M——s, when leaving the college of
St. A—d—s, and which he ordered his adopted son
to take a copy of, for his own instruction.

DEAR GENTLEMEN,

R-t—l-t, May 1765.

It is the greatest disappointment to me that I am deprived of the pleasure of seeing you here, as I flattered myself with the expectation that you would have passed some part of this summer with me, before you make the *grand pas* of launching into the ocean of this world, where your first voyage is likely to take up so much time, as must (I fear) cut me off from all prospect of seeing you again for some time. Let me entreat, however, to be at all times reckoned amongst the number of your friends and correspondents, and that you will not, when absent, forget one who will ever remember you with particular affection, and whose attachments you have rivetted to yourselves, by that sweetness of disposition, generosity of sentiment, and affectionate benevolence, which I have so often remarked in you, with the highest pleasure.

And since, it seems, I am no longer to flatter myself with the hopes of a visit at this time, give me leave, dear gentlemen, now that you are about to enter into a world that is new to you, (a world, which too sure you will find to be poisoned with vice, and perplexed with error), to warn you to keep a strong guard at your first setting out. Sternly reject the solicitations of the votaries of Bacchus, and boldly despise the allurements of those who are devoted to Venus; for by such, you will see your companions every day seduced to ruin, and miserably plunged in utter perdition. Reflect, with constancy, on the precepts which have been so carefully inculcated to you by the best of mothers; and know, for certain, that the preservation of your innocence, which must determine your happiness or misery, both here and hereafter,

hereafter, depends entirely upon the choice which you are to make amongst your books and companions. Hitherto, both of these have been chosen for you; but soon, now, you are to begin to choose for yourselves; and important is the choice, since in it you must also unavoidably choose your fate.

Next to those I have mentioned, let me warn you to avoid, as the greatest pests of society, as well as reproach of Christian humanity, enthusiasts and zealots in particular systems of religion and politics; who, attaching themselves to one small sect, revile, abuse, or give over to the devil, all the rest of the human race, who happen to differ from them in opinions. You will find, in truth, that no particular system established, wants its errors; and that universal charity and benevolence, will be at once your most useful and most amiable recommendation to the favour of God and man.

If, at any time, you cannot find an agreeable companion abroad, you have it always in your power to ensure one at home.—Read Epictetus, Plato, Seneca, Cicero de officiis, Antoninus, Hutchison's Ethics, and, above all, the New Testament. (I leave the naming of the Christian divines to your mother.) These will guide you in the paths of virtue, enlarge your minds, and teach you to become good and useful citizens of the world, and brothers of all mankind.

You have had the happiness to be educated in the principles of what, I am convinced, you will find, upon examination, to be the best, upon the whole, of all the Christian churches. Here I speak, without regard to the political distinctions of high or low, juring or non-juring. Christianity has nothing to do with such distinctions; and, as it is absolutely necessary that you be in communion with some one Christian church, you cannot, I think, do so well otherwise, as by continuing steadfast with her.—Yet, even she is not without her dogmas:—And, besides some articles which want explanation, it is the unhappy error of her children, in North and South-Britain, to tack their political to their religious

religious creeds; so that you may generally know a man's political principles, by the church he frequents.—Presumptuous union! as if there could be any affinity between a pure, unalterable, heaven-born faith, and the fluctuating systems of human policy. Poor short-sighted mortals cannot dive into the secrets of Providence.—We cannot, often, so much as guess, why it pleases God to bring about revolutions of states: But this we know, that the same God, who has brought about so many, can, and will, when he pleases, bring about more. When, or how, belongs not to individuals to enquire, much less to determine: *Non nostrum est tantas componere lites*. Our Saviour never so much as made it a question, whether Cæsar or the commonwealth had the right; well knowing, that neither had any but a temporary one, as it pleased God to allot them.

Happy had it been for me, happy for many of my ancestors and yours, happy for this poor country, that her sons, in general, had seen things in this light, and not been impatient for changes, which they have often and vainly attempted to force, when such was not the will of Heaven.—This much my affection for you has extorted from me; and remember, *Felix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum*.—But my pen runs beyond the bounds of a letter.

I ever am, with the most fervent wishes for your welfare and happiness, dear gentlemen, yours, &c.

Another LETTER of ADMONITION,
from Mr. H—K—S—N to a Friend (a young Man)
recommended also to the Attention of his adopted
Son.

I make a blank at the top of my letter, when I address myself to you; and for this I have many weighty reasons.

reasons. It is a proof of my complaisance : It is to show the sense I have of your dignity : It is to put my confidence beyond doubt, in thus leaving it to you to fill up the blank, just as you please.—You know, I can adduce the testimony of no mean judge, that I have some share of the grace * of God : and who would not avail himself of so singular a blessing ? You know, likewise, that the divines have long since taught us, that this is not one grace, but many graces. It is then deducible, clear as any sophism in Aristotle, that, with the aid of versatile grace, I can be just what I please, and that is, at present, what you please ; and, upon proper application, at any time, what any body pleases. If you think this grace too metaphysical, I am ready to grant it ; and, *entre nous*, was I dubbed Doctor, I would make no hesitation to amputate the two first syllables, and so ply it with the three last, as should reduce it to the moderate size of right reason. Meantime, and while I wander on this pilgrimage, without band or surplice, that is, without magic † lantern, or Will wi' the wisp ‡, to conduct my steps, I must take it as it is, and be contented, with other unenlightened mortals, to make the best I can of it, and, with them, also, turn it to my own purposes §, how and when I think proper so to do. Can we not, under favour of this same comfortable grace, change our principles in religion or politics, as often as we please ; nay, and not blush even to do it with éclat ? ¶ And, what is almost as good, is it not also by the help of versatile grace, that we are enabled to reform our errors, when we find out that we have any ? But, as this is commonly a difficult point with us, I am afraid versatile grace is seldom employed in this way.

But,

* This alludes to a joke of a Lady.

† Party zeal.

‡ Enthusiasm.

§ Fanatics of every kind.

¶ The young man had left the church, and openly declared himself a zealous methodist.

But, though I have enlarged so much upon blanks, I would not have you think that I am fond of blanks : On the contrary, I disapprove of all blanks, especially blanks in human life. Witness the Epigoniad ;—witness Doctor Reid's voluminous blank ; and thousands of such fine volumes, neatly bound, which contain nothing but blanks between their boards. But I fear you begin, by this time, to suspect, that I, too, am a blank. Give me leave, then, and, before I go further, to clear up this matter, by repeating my catechism, and my creed : They are both very short, and will not detain us.

What is scholastic science?—Nonsense.—What is school divinity?—Me-ta-phy-si-cal jargon?—What is all our specious wisdom?—Absolute madness.—What then is real knowledge?—Let me think—have patience a moment, till I consider the simple doctrine of JESUS, without the commentators.—Is it not human feelings?—Is it not the language of nature?—Is it any other than the right use of reason (that grace of God) stamped upon the soul by our bountiful Author, our tender Parent?—In fine, What is it else, but *moral rectitude, and social love?*

Well, but what says Socrates, Epictetus, Plato, Seneca, Antoninus, Cicero, &c. &c. ?—Hah!—the very same.—What then would we more? What distraction leads us from all this?

—When a man of genius has finished his course of liberal education, and sees it fit to produce himself upon the stage ; the public, ever hasty, is apt to determine him either a fool or a philosopher, for life, according as it conceives of his first exhibition there.—This, indeed, is too precipitate, and a cruel way of judging. Yet, it must be acknowledged, that a man has studied to small purpose, who has not found out, that, to please one's self, is the meanest of all gratifications ; that, to please others, yields a real satisfaction ; and that a mutual exchange brings the highest felicity which we are capable of enjoying. This is true happiness :—This pleases in

the retrospect :—This spreads a secret charm over the heart :—This, alone, produces that delightful tranquillity, which we vainly seek for under the banners of pride, pedantry, ambition, envy, jealousy, avarice, and all the passions by which we are industrious to deprave our sentiments, and deform the works of God in human nature.

I am still directed with high expectations, and most fervent good wishes towards you : And am, &c.

R—t—l—t, April 1st, 1768.

Copy LETTER from Mr. H—k—f—n to ———.

MY DEAR SIR,

I forgot yesterday to present you with a copy of the first part of the Anecdotes, which I now send to you. I know you disapprove of my conduct in this point. I am sorry for it : But, I was too far engaged to retract. And besides that, what a *lache* world terms *prudential considerations*, weigh little with me in any case. Habits, too, are stubborn things. I have long accustomed myself, upon all occasions, to take my directions from truth and justice, so far as my weak judgment enables me to investigate these points : That done, I stand in awe of none but Heaven ; fearless, I commit consequences to Providence. Should I again be called upon to expend my last shilling, or my last breath, in defending myself from further injustice ; with absolute tranquillity, I will submit to the dispensation, and take up the task. As to myself, I never set any value upon money, even when I had some fortune ; and I have less reason to regard it now, that, since I was deprived of my daughter, I have no other to leave it to. I beg you will believe me, however,

however, to be, at all times, sensible to your good intentions ; and that I am, with great regard, dear Sir, &c.

April 24th, 1777.

Copy LETTER, from Mr. H—k—f—n to ———.

May ———, 1777.

Give me leave to assure you, that it is not my fault that I have been later than usual in sending you this small sum, and that you have my good wishes at all times ; though sorry I am to inform you, that I am afraid it will not be in my power, for the future, to be of the same assistance to you as formerly. You know I have lost my estate : I have likewise lost much the greatest part of the price which I should have got for it.

* * * * *

All this, by virtue of some caballistical words, which, I thank God, it is not incumbent upon me to interpret, especially, as, it seems, they do not always admit of a literal interpretation in our language.—It will always, however, be a satisfaction to me, that I made a shift to assist you, even when I was distressed myself, at a time when you stood more in need than now, when you have got other rich friends, who are both able and willing to do it.

* * * * *

1875

Received of the Treasurer of the County of ...

the sum of ...

for ...

in full for ...

... of ...

... of ...

... of ...

... of ...

... of ...

... of ...

... of ...

... of ...

... of ...

A P P E N D I X.

A N E C D O T E S.

A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

Mr. H—K—S—N having been long and much urged by many of his friends, at last wrote this letter, to gratify one to whom he could not well refuse any thing ; and now gives it to all his friends, without alteration, in the same familiar style in which it was written.

A N E C D O T E S.

DO not tell me your opinion of any person: But tell me how that person lives; what books they have a taste for; and what company they choose to associate with.—By these I shall judge with certainty.

*Qualis erat mater, filia talis erit :
Casta refert castæ genetricis filia mores ;
Lascivæ nunquam filia casta fuit.*

Example will always carry it over precept with the young: We also often see it defeat principles in more advanced stages of life. The books we read, and the societies we frequent most, never fail to influence our morals and our manners.

Infandum! amice, jubes renovare dolorem.

You desire a genuine account of the unhappy differences which have taken place in my family, because (you say) “you have heard me very much blamed, and “you wish to do justice,” &c.—That you have heard me much blamed, and much injured, is, no doubt, in a great measure, owing to the silence which I have observed upon the subject, whilst others have been indus-

K k

trious

trious to slander me. You know I am naturally taciturn ; and, besides that, I was not able to talk upon a subject which hurt me so much : Add to these, the consideration, that a person is always liable to be suspected of partiality, in telling one's own story.—For the same reasons, I must beg that you will excuse me now from telling you any story of mine, whilst, at same time, to gratify you in your request, I only send you copies of cards, letters, &c. the originals of all which are preserved in my custody, so that you may see the evidences in holograph when you please.

You know, that, upon almost every topic relating to the private affairs of individuals, which becomes the subject of public conversation, there are two kinds of language commonly made use of: The language of prejudice, supported by falshood, by envy, and by a certain propensity which the vulgar, in all ranks of society, have to malevolence ; and the language of judgment, supported by benevolence, by truth, and a candid disposition to search for information founded on facts, before proceeding to censure or condemnation.—The difference, as to numbers, betwixt these two classes of mankind, is often as one to a hundred, sometimes as one to a thousand, or perhaps as one to ten thousand.

And though, in my opinion, the first class can only excite the contempt of conscious innocence ; yet, I must confess, the candour and humanity of the second class give them a just claim to all the deference and respect which can be shown them. And it may be said, that a man who omits this, becomes not only deficient in an essential point of duty towards the respectable part of society, but towards himself, and that interest which it is also his duty to support and maintain with every society of which he is a member.

From a sense of this last duty, then, I send you these anecdotes.—There are, however, other anecdotes, of a date much prior to these, and which were the original foundation of all : But these I should be sorry to be obliged to speak out at this distant æra.—Let, therefore,

fore, the f—ll—s and v—c—s of a W— W—, at that time not above forty, sleep in oblivion, tragical though they have been in their consequences ever since to a misfortunate strippling, whom unhappily she then fixed her eyes upon ; and who, most assuredly, had nothing to recommend him to her, but only that he had the misfortune not to be deformed in his person : For, had she ransacked the globe, she, surely, could not have found, upon the whole face of it, one more opposite to herself, in taste, in sentiment, and in every principle, and especially in ignorance, at that time, of the ways of life, in which she had acquired the greatest experience.

There is nothing more certain, my good friend, than, *that every history has a key* : But often it happens, that the key being lost, or, what is also a very common case, artfully mislaid and concealed ; society, too apt otherwise to be rash in its speculations and decisions, is often, by such means, led into very illiberal and uncharitable abuse.

The last of these has been, I believe, particularly the case here. A G—e C—p—r, and a J—n W—h and his wife, and other such weak people, who, it seems, neither having integrity enough to prompt them, nor sense enough to enable them to investigate the truth on any subject, were cull'd out, and found to be very fit tools to be misled, and worked upon to mislead others, by propagating falsehood and nonsense upon a subject, the true circumstances of which lay altogether hid from them.

These people, to my no small grief and astonishment, I found, upon my return from F—ce, to be the most intimate, and almost only companions whom my daughter had made choice of in my absence. And, seeing them admitted to a degree of intimacy and familiarity in my family which I could not approve of, I admonished my daughter to begin, by degrees, to set them at their proper distance, and to associate with some whom she had neglected, and who were more upon a footing with her-

self. And I at same time desired her mother and her aunt to advise her in like manner.

This subject was much canvassed in my family, and gave rise to no small altercation.—Till in the end, my daughter gave me to know, in plain terms, one day, that she would break with me, rather than break with these people; in which her mother seconded her also, both scolding outrageously at same time.

At this time I was confined to bed, in the fifth week of an intermitting fever; by which I was reduced so low, that my pulse was then also intermitting, every third pulsation. In that weak condition, the thing shocked me so much, that I fainted away; from which, probably, I had never recovered, none of them offering me any assistance. But, by the providence of God, Dr. R-b-t-f-n came in at the instant; and, seeing me dead, called my servant up to assist him; and, after a long time, and with difficulty, recovered me; of which, he said, he had, for some time, despaired.

About a week after this, the fever began to abate; and, though there was still very small hopes that I could recover, my physicians (for there were two attending me,) agreed with me, that my convalescence absolutely depended upon my removing to other lodgings. Accordingly I was carried out; and, at quitting my own house, I left a card for my daughter, bidding adieu, and admonishing her to amendment; believing, that I had then but few days more to live: nor did I obtain any degree of health or strength till nine months after, though I am now (thank God) in pretty good health.—That card to my daughter was conceived in strong terms, but such as became a parent to a child, in such circumstances, and only fit for her to see.

Some time after, I received the following card from my daughter.

Copy C A R D from Miss H—k—f—n to her Father.

* “ C——s H—k—f—n, this moment come in, understands from her mother, that Mr. H—k—f—n sent for her.—As John said, it was upon business, she judges, it is to sign the submission : If that is the case, she hopes Mr. H—k—f—n will send it her this night, that she may read it with deliberation.—Mr. R—— B—— being out of town, (but to return early to-morrow morning,) is another reason for her wishing to have it, as she would like to have his opinion.”

Friday, eight o'clock.

The

* A scroll of the submission had been sent to Mr. H—k—f—n some days before, for his and his daughter's perusal ; and he took a chair, and went to M—l—d's Land, where he and M-j-r B—ll—e read and compared the submission and entail together ; found them perfectly corresponding ; and informed Miss H—k—f—n so, who then silently acquiesced ; and the scroll was returned to the agents, with orders to extend the submission.—Nothing had ever passed betwixt Mr. H—k—f—n and his daughter before this, upon the subject of this submission ; nor had she given him the smallest hint of the intention she had, of making the use of it which she afterwards did.—The subjects he had formerly expostulated with her upon, were, *1mo*, Her disobeying some orders which he had sent her from F—ce, relating to his business ; which, if she had executed, would probably have prevented all the trouble he has met with since upon that head. Before this, it seems, the scheme had been laid : how, otherwise, could this wilful treachery and disobedience be accounted for ? *2do*, The use which she made of the farewell letter which he wrote her from F—ce. *3tio*, Sundry parts of her conduct, as they daily fell under his notice ;—upon all which occasions, she treated him with amazing insolence and contempt ; which hurt him so much, that he had, for some time, given up speaking to her at all upon these subjects ; but often made his complaints to her mother and her aunt.

The submission being afterwards extended, Mr. H—k—f—n sent it on an evening to his daughter to read, with a letter, acquainting her, that he would call in the forenoon of next day, that he and she might sign it together. Accordingly he did call, carrying M—j—r M—v—le along with him, to sign as one of the witnesses; and then it was that Miss H—k—f—n presented them with the following note, which she had slipped into the folds of the submission. Mr. H—k—f—n finding it there, read it, almost petrified with horror. After recovering a little, he read it to the company; and then, turning to his daughter, said, This is a strange note: The true language of it is,—“ Sir, I know the distress you are “ in; and am so far from being disposed to relieve you, “ that I am, on the contrary, determined to plunge you “ into still greater distress, unless you grant me such “ terms as I please to prescribe to you.”

N O T E, slipped into the folds of the Submission, by Miss H—k—f—n.

“ C—s H—k—f—n observes, That, by the deed of entail, she has security for her thousand pounds, or two hundred a-year, at the death of her father, upon the lands of R—t—l—t; as also, the eventual succession of the whole estate, failing two minors: She, therefore, objects to that part of the submission, whereby she is required to take herself to her original settlement, and give up every other security and chance whatever; and she will not sign the submission with this clause in it, unless the arbiters are empowered to give her absolute security upon the lands of ——— for her original provision,

vision *, and to bear interest to her, payable annually, from the date of the submission."

Mr. H—k—f—n answered to this note of his daughter, in presence of the gentlemen, " That she very well knew, that it was to him that she was indebted for the provisional clauses she mentioned ; but that now it was possible that the arbiters might take upon them to set aside that entail, which could not be done equitably, unless all the parties were reponed precisely to the same ground upon which they stood before, without prejudice or advantage to either party concerned, and as if such entail never had existed : That, therefore, this demand of his daughter, even if proposed between man and man, would be highly unjust : But, coming as it does, from a child to a parent, and to whom she was indebted for these very powers she now proposed to take so base an advantage of, it was criminal in a much higher degree ; altogether inconsistent with her duty to ask, and with his duty, as a parent, to yield to : And, therefore, he was, at all hazards, bound to reject it."

† Nevertheless, Miss H—k—f—n continuing obstinate in this unjust demand, on the 22d February, M—— M—— suggested a sort of compromise of the dispute, viz. That in case the contract and entail is sustained by the arbiters, Miss H—k—f—n will be secured in the estate for an annuity of 200 l. Sterling *per annum*,

* The provision here alluded to is 1000 l. provided to her by her father, many years ago (and registered at St. A—d—w's) payable to her at, and to bear interest from, her father's death : But now she proposed to take advantage of his present distress, to force him to pay it during his life.

† At a meeting the day after the former, M—— M—— made this proposal, which Miss H—k—f—n immediately adopted ; upon which Mr. H—k—f—n desired it might be put in writing, saying, That he would consider it, and give it an answer.

annum, payable on her father's death, or to a provision of 1000 l. But as, in the event that the entail shall be set aside by the arbiters, and Miss H—k—f—n reponed to her former provision of 1000 l. payable at her father's death, or second marriage; that as, in this case, if her mother should die, and her father not marry again, Miss H—k—f—n would be altogether unprovided for, betwixt the death of her mother and the death of her father, he therefore proposed, that Miss H—k—f—n should sign the submission as now extended; and that, on her doing so, her father shall, of his own free will, grant to her an obligation for an annuity, not under 40 l. *per annum*, payable to her yearly, from the time of her mother's death, so long as her father shall remain a widower, without marrying a second wife.

COPY LETTER from Mr. H—k—f—n to M—
M—.

MY DEAR SIR,

February 26th, 1776.

" I have examined and weighed, with the utmost attention, this second demand of my daughter; and I can see it in no other light than I did the first:—The difference betwixt fifty pounds and fifty pence, can make no difference in the nature of the thing. This proposal, as suggested by you, was humane and benevolent, upon the footing of a foldinging betwixt two contending parties; but, betwixt a parent and child, it wears quite another aspect. The moment it was adopted by my daughter, it changed its ground; and, in changing that, it changed also its nature, and I am bound in duty to reject it. My daughter is no stranger to the small estimate which I put upon money: In the present case, it can be of none with me. Sorry I am to find, that she
values

values it above her duty. Heaven (to which I here solemnly make my appeal) knows, that what she now demands, is less than what I was, of myself, predetermined to settle upon her *, had she not thrown this bar in my way, by attempting to force it. The experience which I have had of my d——t-r, of late, (for I have found, that I have had no true conception of her character, till it opened to me, since my arrival in this country about seven months ago) had actually rendered it a matter of doubt with me, whether I should any longer, in the present state of my health, venture myself under the same roof with her; and I, at parting, admonished her to repentance, she having actually, before that, carried things so far, as to bring the guilt of p-r--c-de upon herself, when I fainted away with her scolding:—and I, at same time, resolved to make a settlement upon her, greater than this; which it seems she, on her side, had long before determined to extort from me, at the peril of my life. This declaration of hers, when she brought it out, overturned all. She knew also well, before she did it, that it would produce the effect upon me † which you saw it did, when I fainted away with horror, on receiving so brutal and unexpected a shock from the hand of a child. Here, then, you witnessed a wilful repetition on her side, of what had been successfully tried before upon me; and which I had, but three days before, admonished her to repent of. Thus, you must perceive, that she has tied my hands, and forced me to entrench myself within the limits of that duty which Heaven has prescribed to me, and to all parents, not to encourage or yield to the unjust or undutiful demands of our children. She thinks, indeed, and no

* Mr. H—k—f—n's intention was, so soon as he should get his affairs settled, to set aside her 1000 l. and give her a right to the interest of it.

† Mr. H—k—f—n was so shocked with his d——t-r's unnatural behaviour, that he fainted away in his chair; M—— M—— flaying by him, and tending him almost two hours, before he recovered, so as that the M-j-r could leave him.

doubt builds upon it, that my opposing her demand must plunge me into the greatest distress *, and even cost me my life, if I stand to it; and, therefore, persuades herself, that she will compel me to abandon my duty and my right. But you know that I can carry on the submission without her, and would have done so before this time, had I not been prevented, by my delicacy, to expose her to society, so long as I could delude myself with hopes, that there might still be a possibility of reclaiming her to her duty. But even were it otherways, and that I could not have carried on the submission without her, be assured, that I have too high a sense of my duty, and am also too near the verge of the grave, to be conjured by any means, or from any views of present advantage, to offend Heaven in so capital a manner, and in the last act of life. I can part with my life, but cannot part with my integrity. It must be my passport where I am going. If then, I had been to perish, as she thought, for adhering to my duty, it should have been so: to the will of Heaven I am always resigned.— You should certainly have seen a parent expire under the b—c—y of a child; but the whole guilt would have rested, with the blood, upon the head and heart which gave the blow; and she must have answered at the tribunal of Heaven for the fact, as, alas! I fear, she must still do for the intention.

“ This is all the answer left in my power to make to this last proposal of my d—t-r; and which I entreat you (who have given already so many proofs of your humanity and goodness) will also take the trouble of communicating to her. I am, &c.

P. S. I per-

* Miss H—k—f—n knew that her father had received no annuity for some years past, and that he could get none for a long time to come, unless the submission took place; and she availed herself of this critical situation which her father was in, by augmenting his distress, till she should force from him an additional settlement to her former one.

"P. S. I perceive I have expressed myself in strong terms; but the subject is of a nature which calls for such, and has naturally led me into that style. Permit me, then, to add, that I know not what my d——t-r imputes to me, as an apology for herself.—Something, true or false, she must certainly devise, to palliate her conduct to you and others. But, so Heaven deal with me, here and hereafter, as I have very strictly examined myself, and am not yet conscious to have deviated from my duty towards her, as a parent, and as a Christian, in thought, word or deed. And I conjure you, to preserve this my declaration, to bear witness for and against me, here and hereafter, as I have asserted truth or falsehood in this.—Adieu."

N. B. The above letter M—— M—— declined communicating to Miss H—k—f—n, because, he said, he was so much hurt by what he had before heard and seen upon this subject, and was otherwise so fully satisfied that every attempt to bring her to see things in the light proposed by it, would prove abortive, that he could not think of undertaking it.

In the mean time, Mr. H—k—f—n had given orders to extend another submission, independent of his daughter, by which she would have lost her annuity of 200l. *per annum*; of which Mr. S—te would have reaped the benefit. But, meeting with M-j-r B—ll—e one day, the M-j-r (who seemed truly affected with his sister's behaviour) asked him, If he had seen or heard from his d——t-r of late; and how she was behaving? To which Mr. H—k—f—n replying, That she was behaving as usual; the M-j-r said, *That is odd*:—But, cannot you carry on the submission without her?—Mr. H—k—f—n replied, He was doing so; and expected it would be signed that night, or to-morrow. Then, said

the M-j-r, I will go and tell her this, and see what effect it will have.

The consequence was, that Miss H—k—f—n went immediately to M-j-r M-lv—l, and asked him to go to her father, and tell him, that she was ready to sign the submission, *to please him*.—The good M-j-r carried the message with pleasure : but Mr. H—k—f—n undeceived him, by telling what his d—t-r had concealed of the truth ; and then gave him the following answer :—That, notwithstanding what he knew of the truth, in relation to this message, yet he accepted of it, in the light in which his d—t-r was pleased to exhibit it :—That it would have the immediate effect to stop the other submission, by which she was to have lost, irretrievably, 200*l. per annum* ; but that he would otherwise lay no weight upon this seeming condescension of his d—t-r, unless he saw it presently followed by other marks, which might convince him that she was really disposed to return to her duty.

After waiting three weeks for his d—t-r to do this, and in vain, Mr. H—k—f—n proceeded to settle his business, he being in such a state of health as gave him great uneasiness of mind all that time, upon account of the loss some relations, and others, would have sustained, from his having burned a will of his, and in the event that he should die without making another,

Copy of a LETTER from Mr. H—k—f—n to his D—t-r.

“ C—,

March 1776.

“ I have now executed a deed, by which you may see, that it is time for you to desist from adding to the number of crimes which have availed you so little, while
Providence

Providence has been counteracting you. How different this deed is from the one which you lately forced me to destroy, the gentlemen who read it before I put it into the fire, in your presence, can inform you.

“ In contemplating this new deed with your adviser, I am willing to hope, that you cannot fail to perceive and acknowledge the justice of Heaven, in prolonging my life, so much beyond your wishes; opening my eyes, at the same time, to what had been so long carrying on against me, and finally frustrating these expectations, which had been so long plotted, and so steadily pursued, at the hazard of the destruction of me your parent. He also will see, that the whole result of these unhallowed projects has terminated in the ruin of a f-t-r, and depriving a parent of the dutiful attentions of a child who has been so basely corrupted, and by which a fabric has been overturned, which, no body knows better than he, cost me the labour and attention of twenty years of my life to rear up; I mean, the instructing of you in all the relative duties of life. All this it was certainly his duty, as a br-t--r, and as a Christian, to have prevented, to the utmost of his power. You now see also, that the sordid prospects which might have prompted you to such crimes, are vanished and lost, while the guilt remains, the sole portion to you, from all your machinations. Such (as I used to teach you) are the means which we often see Providence make use of for correcting and chastising those who lose sight of their duty. I pray Heaven, that you may profit by this dear-bought example to yourself; that it may serve as a warning to you, and influence you to adopt other principles, in the future conduct of your life. You must now *, when I die, expect to celebrate

* Mr. H—k—f—n had, in spring 1775, when bad of a severe rheumatic fever, from which there was no recovery expected, caused his servant support him, till he wrote two lines to his d—t-r, bidding her farewell. (This was from F—ce.) It would seem, that, long before this time, R— B— had acquired an entire ascendancy

brate the festivity of that event with sentiments very different from those which you so fondly cherished last summer, by anticipation, upon that head.

“ The unhappy influence or example of your imprudent mother, with whom you have been chiefly associated, during seven years past, that my bad state of health obliged me to be mostly absent from you, can be no excuse for you.—She, as you knew long ago, never had any fixed ideas of moral principles, or ever paid any regard to moral obligations, further than as caprice or passion happened to operate with her for the moment; and you had often heard her openly profess her abhorrence and detestation at the very name of moral rectitude, when I was instructing you on that subject. But all this is so far from being any apology for you, that it is, on the contrary, strong evidence against you, whom I had, during the first twenty years of your life, bestowed unwearied pains to teach, to make proper and firm distinctions, at all times, betwixt rectitude and turpitude.—Say, by what strange revolution, then, has it happened, that I have those things to repeat to you at this time of life; and that this task seems to be renewed

ascendency over Miss H—k—f—n; for, as he learned since he came home, his d—t-r concealed this letter from her mother; packed up her harpsichord, carried it to R— B—’s house in the country, and there celebrated a jovial festivity, expecting, as they had good reason, that next post would bring accounts of his death.—Had Mr. H—k—f—n died at this time, this needy adventurer had a pretty certain prospect of getting his m-t-r and f-t-r under his influence, with annuities of upwards of 330 l. *per annum*, 200 l. of which is now cut off.

Mr. H—k—f—n, after having often expostulated with his d—t-r, by herself, on the use which she made of his farewell letter to her, he at last mentioned it again, in presence of her m-t-r and her a-t.—The m-t-r then declared, that she had never heard of it. The d—t-r immediately gave her the lie. The m-t-r retorted; and an altercation ensued between them; till the father (who was extremely hurt by it,) interposed, as he always did, upon such occasions, and commanded them to drop the subject: Nor does he know yet upon which side the truth stands, on this matter; only he inclines to think, that his d—t-r had really concealed that letter from every body, unless, perhaps, from R— B—.

pewed to me now, when the broken state of my health and spirits renders me altogether unequal to it.

“ In whatever shape you invisage the whole tenor of your behaviour, for a long time past, you must be conscious, that, in the eye of Heaven, you stand guilty of the crimes of ingratitude*, rebellion, disobedience, maliciously and falsely calumniating, contempt, and, O Heaven! must I also add, p-r-c-de towards me, though I am still alive; nay, even though I should totally recover of the wounds you deliberately and repeatedly gave me, and under which you saw me several times expire, in the instant of your action.

“ I meant here once more to have painted to you at large, what you know I had so often done before, the parts which you have acted successively, particularly during almost two years past; but the retrospect of that subject fills me with so much horror, that I cannot proceed. I must, therefore, leave you to your own reflections; and pray Heaven to assist you in recollecting and examining your own conduct towards me, and particularly the conversations which I had with you upon these subjects, when obtested Heaven only was witness. I conjure you to set about making your peace with offended Heaven, and seriously to think, (while it may be, perhaps, yet not too late,) what it has at last cost you, to have so repeatedly disobeyed and despised the admonitions, advices and commands of a dutiful and affectionate parent, who was,
at

* Mr. H—k—s—n had, upon his arrival in E—b—h, in August 1775, executed a deed, putting his d——t-r in possession of an annuity of 100 l. *per annum*, out of his; as also, a latter-will, making her his sole heir. But afterwards, upon her behaviour, as above narrated, he retracted the deed (*in terrorem*;) but still reserved the latter-will, till he likewise burnt it, in presence of her and the gentlemen, upon her behaviour in regard to the submission. He, at same time, informed the gentlemen of what he had done, in regard to the other deed, to shew how little he had suspected his d——t-r, and how generously, as well as affectionately, he had been disposed towards her: Nor, indeed, could the loss of his whole fortune have affected or distressed him half so much as the ruin of his d——t-r's principles has done.

at all times, watchful over you for your good; and who (you know) particularly warned you, years ago, against connecting, in any shape, with that man, whose principles were then, as now, well known to me. Dear as it has at last cost you, your neglecting my advice on that head, yet, believe me, your purchase will be cheap, if the reflection can contribute any thing to lead you to remorse and repentance.

“ You told the gentlemen and me, upon a late occasion, *That you acted by your brother's advice* *. You have a brother, whom you, and all who know him, know also, that he never would have given you an advice, or lent you his countenance, in any thing inconsistent with your duty. Whence, then, comes it, that, of choice, neglecting him, and despising me, you have, for a long time past, put yourself solely and entirely under the direction of one, from whom I had candidly and dutifully admonished you to stand aloof, upon every occasion?—I am able to add no more.—

“ That Heaven may so touch your heart, as to give you a due sense of your errors, reclaim you to a proper sense of the relative duties of life, inspire you once more

* The gentlemen present, were, M-j-r M—v—l, M-j-r B—l—e, Mr. S-m—l M—h—f-n, and R— B—. When Miss H—k—f—n told the company, that she acted by her brother's advice; M-j-r B—l—e made haste to reply, *That he never gave such advice.* To which Mr. H—k—f—n immediately made answer, *That he was far from suspecting him of it: That M-j-r B—l—e could not doubt, but that he was no stranger to the true principles and character of the gentlemen then present, whom he had been so long acquainted with; and, consequently, that he could never suspect him of such a thing.* (Here R— B— slunk out of the room, and left the company, without attempting to take off the charge thus brought home to him, by what his brother and his sister had declared to the company.) That, besides, he knew what natural powers Heaven had bestowed on his d—t-r; what pains he had taken to cultivate these powers, during the first twenty years of her life; and therefore, now that she was twenty-seven, she was certainly well qualified to judge for herself, and to distinguish, whether any advice given her, was a proper or an improper one: So that he should blame chiefly herself in this matter.

more with those principles which I formerly taught you, and (which, I think, you cannot have forgotten) gained you so much applause at your first setting out in the world, twelve years ago, (alas! how fallen since!) and bring you to detest and turn away from those who have misled and ruined you, shall ever be the prayer of your disconsolate father."

Copy CARD from Mr. H—k—f—n to his L—y.

"As I find myself now a good deal stronger, and hope, if this continues, to be able soon to return to my own house, you will cause put my bed-room in order; and also, have the accompt ready, which, you know, I was not able to examine at the time when my physicians judged it necessary for me to remove to this house. I propose calling, some day in the beginning of next week, when that accompt may be settled; and will then also give orders about seasoning my bed-room with fire, in order to my going into it."

N. B. Miss H—k—f—n intercepted the above card; and Mr. H—k—f—n does not know whether she shewed it to her mother or not; but he has learnt since, that his wife left her own house in the evening of the day after.

Copy LETTER from Mr. R—— B—— to
Mr. H—k—f—n.

"SIR,

"Upon my coming to town yesterday, I was shown an open note, directed to my mother, but without signa-

M m

ture

ture or address.—The note is your hand-writing, and means to acquaint, that you are soon to return to your own house. As she has been gone to the country for some days, for the benefit of her health, (and intends not to return)—lest you should be under any mistake, I beg leave to inform you, that the late Mrs. M—tl—d's house, where she lived, has, since her (my aunt's) death, become the sole property of my brother and me, and is presently possessed, and fully occupied, by my friends and me*.—I am, Sir, your most humble servant,
(Signed) R— B—."

Copy LETTER from Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. B—.

" SIR,

" I have received your letter, of this date, in answer to a note which I wrote to my wife on the 29th last; to which I expected to have had a return from herself.

" In yours, you say, that my wife has been gone to the country some days, for the benefit of her health. I suppose you have, in this, fallen into a mistake; as I have reason to believe she was at home very lately.—You say, she intends not to return. I hope you are in a mistake as to this also; as I cannot believe she would leave the town, upon being informed, that my health is so far mended, that I have the prospect of being able soon to return to my own house.

" As to the house in M—tl—d's land, I did understand, that it belonged to the late Miss M—tl—d and my wife, jointly, till the term, and consequently to me; and, under that apprehension, it was possessed by me and

* The friends here alluded to, were, his proposed bride, and Mr. H—k—f—n's daughter only, who thus shut her father's door against him, and afterwards plundered the house, when the bride was taken from them.

and my wife, until I became so reduced in my health, that a separate lodging was judged necessary for me.

“ As to my furniture now in that house, I desire you may inform my wife, that I intend to use it in furnishing a lodging in E—b—h, which I have a view of taking, and which will accommodate both her and me ; but, if she insists on living in a separate house, I will not make any objection to her getting the use of such part of my furniture as will accommodate her ; provided she will give me a receipt for it, and a declaration, that it is not to be carried out of E—b—h : For, to your house in F— I will not permit it to be carried.—If a receipt and declaration to this purpose is refused to me, I will, in that case, require delivery of my furniture to-morrow. I am, Sir, your humble servant,

(Signed) H—L—N—s H—K—s—N.”

N. B. Mr. B—— received and read the above letter, and told the servant who delivered it, that there was no answer.—M—j—r B—— having called at my lodgings one day, we had, as usual, a long conversation about his sister's behaviour ; and he left me, as he said, to go and talk to her, and endeavour to bring her along with him to my lodgings, to make acknowledgments, and be reconciled to her father. Upon this occasion, and for the above purpose, I then gave him likewise a copy of the letters, &c. which had passed betwixt me and my daughter ; which, he assured me, he would take care of, and bring back to me.—The day after, I received from him the following card : “ M—j—r B—ll—e's
“ compliments to Mr. H—k—f—n. Having company
“ to dine with him at home yesterday, found it too late
“ to call at M—tl—d's land ; intends being in town to-morrow for that purpose, and will call at Mr. H—k—f—n afterwards.”—Since that, however, Mr. H—k—f—n has never seen or heard from him more ; nor has he ever returned the letters to him.

M m 2

N. B. At

N. B. *At this critical time, R— B— had returned to town, whose interest was too deeply concerned, to prevent the reconciliation proposed by his brother.*

COPY LETTER from Miss H—k—f—n to her Father.

“ DEAR SIR,

May 7th, 1776.

“ I give you the trouble of an epistle from me at this time, as I judge it of consequence to inform you of my intentions with regard to the submission, which I have already signed.—I am now informed, that it was improper in me to sign the submission, with the clause so much against my interest : And I am also well advised, that I can yet retract : which I now do.—I will consent to none, where a clause is insert contrary to my interest : Nevertheless, if that clause, which I object to, is taken out, I will with pleasure submit every claim of mine to the present arbiters.—*I have wrote Mr. S—te to the same purpose ;* and I ever am, dear Sir,

Yours as ever.”

COPY Mr. H—k—f—n's Answer to the above Letter,

“ Confined to my apartment, languishing, and contemplating that grave which you have long been employed in digging for me, my thoughts were not upon worldly pursuits, when yours of the 7th instant presented me with information, that you had wrote to Mr. S—te, recalling the submission,

submission, &c.—To this, you say you have been advised.—The expression is not clear to me,—as, in this case, your own conscience can only advise.—Mine tells me, that I have nothing to answer, nothing to add to what I have already said and done upon this business.—I am therefore done with it.

“ Whether your impatience has prompted you to write this letter, as fearing that the former wounds were not mortal enough; or, if you meant it as a *coup de grace*, is best known to yourself, and little imports me to know: In either case, it was unnecessary.—The immediate, the great, the lasting effect of communicating it to me at this time, and open, (I received it with the wafer wet, and newly put in, though it was wrote and sent from R— B—’s house in the country,) is the wanton accumulation of your crimes, which were, alas! completely great before.

“ There never was, there never could be, any just ground for dispute, betwixt you and me, about money matters; nor will I enter into any. I never could have entertained an idea, that there could be occasion to urge your concurrence in any paper, wherein your interest and mine were concerned; as I was incapable of proposing any thing with an eye to your prejudice, and ignorant and unsuspecting of your forming an interest contrary to mine. The submission, (you know) from the beginning, was not of my proposing, was not of my planning. It was, at one and the same time, proposed to you, and to me; was agreed to and extended, in the just and precise terms of the other papers. *It had, indeed, been schemed, to suppress a clause in it which the others contained.* I knew not then that this proceeded from you: But, as it was unjust, I opposed it; had that clause inserted; and then you unmasked, in refusing to sign it with that clause. *I urged you not. You afterwards asked to sign it: Your request was granted.* You now tell me, *you have recalled it.* I have been sometimes ignorant, sometimes passive, in the whole of all this; and am doomed to remain so.

“ If

“ If you have had it in your power to distress me in this way, the idea of your doing so, never could have entered into my head till it happened. You was conscious, that it was from me you had that power ; and you was old enough to know your duty. I also know mine ; and have, hitherto, acted consistently with it. My conscience tells me so : Yours must bear witness to it ; and Heaven is judge betwixt us.

“ My living or dying, I am sensible, as you are, has long depended upon your choice. You have often made me feel this severely ; but without shaking my principles, or being able to drive me from that duty which Heaven exacts from me, as a parent. To live guilty, or die innocent, is an alternative wherein you cannot deprive me of my choice ; and you likewise know my sentiments upon that head. You have broken my heart ; but my integrity, in the discharge of my *duty*, is still entire, and will, I trust, remain so. The first I am not answerable for : The last only demands the attention of your dying parent, to whose indulgence and dutiful attention, you was infinitely, and uninterruptedly indebted, till the very hour that you threw off your duty.—For this, I appeal to Heaven, to your conscience, and to society :—And here I leave it.

“ When I was forced into this climate last summer, I little imagined that the plot was yours, or that you had any share in it*. The deeds, which I made haste to execute

* The plot, it seems, was this. By blowing the coals, to prevent S—te from making the remittances necessary for Mr. H—k—f—n’s preservation ; thereby, at one and the same time, to cut him off, and to increase the sums which would have been found to have been due after his death. To the same purposes were the delays thrown in by this third party ; by which the decision was kept back a year and a half, after Mr. H—k—f—n’s return to this country.

The issue turned out, at last, very different from what was foreseen or expected, by any of this confederacy, excepting, probably, such of S—te’s partizans, whom they wisely associated to themselves, in the execution.

execute in your favour, upon my arrival, were most convincing proofs of this. It was a singular hardness in you, that you felt no compunction on that occasion; and that you did not then change your system. Much had passed, much, very much, went on after; and late might it have been, before I could have suspected or discovered your invisible hand, in the movements of the drama, had I not gathered it in broken hints, and by piece-meal, from your poor a—t at times, and by chance, when your m—t—r and you went abroad, and left the two invalids to amuse one another: And, when I had learned a good deal of it, and saw it with open eyes, you know the gentle and secret method I took, at first, to lay your duty before you; Heaven only being

1^{mo}, The entail (which, the lawyers had said, the B—t—h parliament could not break) was broken by the arbiters.

2^{do}, Heaven protected Mr. H—k—f—n's life; has restored him to some share of health: an annual subsistence is only allotted for his support, and the estate is lost altogether.

3^{to}, A thousand pounds of the arrears which was due to Mr. H—k—f—n, has been partly cut off by the decision, and partly expended on lawyers and physicians; to defend him in so many attacks made against his life and fortune.—*Query*,—Would not this sum have been better with Miss H—k—f—n, could she have waited patiently for her father's death, in an ordinary course?

4^{to}, Miss H—k—f—n herself shares deeply in all the ruin brought upon her father.

5^{to}, S—te got Mr. H—k—f—n's estate translated from his son to himself, at next to nothing: For, at the time of the decision, no man, well informed, could have valued Mr. H—k—f—n's annuity at six months purchase. *This is an amazing circumstance.*

And, *lastly*, The estate is managed in such a way, (and has always been so) that, assuredly, the profits do not go to S—te.

Query—Who then has benefited from the various machinery, which was, from time to time, invented and played off by this cunning and very honest projector? Surely not Mr. H—k—f—n, nor Miss H—k—f—n, nor her mother, nor Mr. S—te, nor his son. It would have been better for all their interests, to have let a fair bargain have continued as it was made. But, who would have fished up the prize in these troubled waters, had not Providence interposed, and balked the design, by saving Mr. H—k—f—n's life? Here is the key brought out, which was artfully proposed to have been buried in the rubbish of all this general massacre.

being witness to what passed betwixt us. On these occasions, obstinate and contemptuous silence was your only return. With what reluctance did I see myself forced to try a new method, which I had never done before, with you?—I put a constraint upon my attentions towards you :—You still forced me on. I retracted some of my favours :—You threw off the mask, broke out in rebellion, and declared open war. I cannot proceed in the narration of the horrid particulars which followed.—I need not.—You know them well ; and there were too many witnesses, physicians, men of business, friends—What a scene ! We are now, then, in the tenth month, since by you I have been detained, as in a close prison, here. Suffice it, that you have, at last, intimated to me my death-warrant, and freed me from suspense, by fixing the period. I need not endeavour one hour, or take one step, to evade or postpone the execution.—To me, it is welcome ; and I shall wait the hour, undergo the sentence, and meet my fate, in the miserable apartment to which I am confined, and from which my physicians (who are ignorant of circumstances) have long been urging me to remove ; and try to avail myself of the short summer, to recruit a little. I well know, that no prescription of theirs can counteract your operations : Even they have seen the inefficacy of such endeavours, in what has already passed. They have no remedies for a broken heart ; and I shall apply no more. A short time here, will now put an end to my long life of misery :—The manner and method is yours.

“ *You tell me you have wrote to Mr. S—te, to hold relief out of my reach, at this critical season : But you do not vouchsafe to tell me what you wrote to Mr. S—te. Had I wrote to any person, upon any concern of yours, I would not have failed to communicate what I wrote, to you. This, you know, has been invariably my method. But your plans, I am sensible, could not admit of such candour.—It is enough.—Think where we are to meet—The tribunal of Heaven. What a confrontation !*

confrontation!—A m—d—r—d father, and a p—r—c—de child. What could goad you on so blindly? What motives, what views could be equivalent to the expence laid out, to the price you have paid?—Adieu.”

May 11th, 1776.

Mr. H—k—f—n, still anxious to save his D—t—r from ruin, wrote the following Letter to his L—y.

“ May 18th, 1776.

“ A—f—f—n—t—d, Madam, by your malice and instigation, and stepping into eternity, a period where there is no room for false delicacy, in putting a gloss upon the truth, and concealing from the world what you know I have long done, for your and your d—t—r’s sake:—Called upon also, in justice to myself, in consequence of the open rupture you have made in the eyes of society, and the very false and malicious reasons you have assigned for it:—Happy had it been for me, happy for you, that you had never formed any design upon a milkop, such as I was at that time:—Or that, when that honey-moon was long past, and you afterwards became my wife, you had had principles and prudence enough, to have conformed yourself to the duties of that station and character. By this means, you would have escaped adding the crime of m—d—r, at last, to the first crime, which led the way to all the rest, and drawing in your d—t—r to be an accomplice in that guilt:—A guilt, too, which is highly aggravated on her side, by the addition of its becoming p—r—c—de with her.—For, whether she is my natural d—t—r or not, (a point, which, in the extravagance of your follies and passions, you have often, very imprudently, made the subject of

N n

doubt

doubt to others, as well as to me;) yet it is certain, that I am the person to whom she has been indebted, for the discharge of all the duties of a parent towards her; and she could not know any other parent, whom she was bound to regard in that light: It is, therefore, to her, a father's blood, in which you have seduced her to embrace her hands. Behold, Madam, in what progression you have risen, from one crime to another, since the first; and what a horrid train of consequences it has, step by step, amounted to.—How the truth stands, in this matter of your d—t-r's birth, which you have taken very many occasions, most imprudently, to render dubious, is best known to God and your own conscience. But there are many circumstances, which I also have always known; such as †,

* * * * *

* * * * *

* * * * *

&c. What has induced me to shew you, that these circumstances, which you know much more of than I do, did not escape my notice, though, as I had at first resolved with myself, I never mentioned to you before, is, my being informed, that you and she give out, *that I have disinherited my d—t-r, because I have taken it into my head that she is none of mine.* May I beg to be informed candidly, what, at this distance of time, has suggested this idea in your breast? You know, that I was moved to that step by quite different, and much stronger reasons, viz. *Her having thrown off all sense of duty towards me as a parent, or gratitude as a benefactor.*

“ By this you see, that your interest and hers are in your own hands still, and depend upon your answer to this. No doubt, you know better than I do; and it is singularly striking, that, at this period, you should hint, in any shape, *to the world, a dubiety about her birth, which I, to this hour, never have done.* Must your imprudence ever

† There were sundry passages in this letter, only proper to be seen by herself.

ever be the cause of ruin to your nearest and dearest concerns?—What shall I think?—Is this, at last, the sentiment and language of conscious guilt, proceeding from you?—Or what is the meaning of this report? Surely it is incumbent on you, to clear it up to me. Notwithstanding that I was sensible to all the particulars above mentioned, my principles taught me, that they were not sufficient to absolve me from doing the duties of a parent, to an infant, whom Providence had been pleased to throw upon me in that light. I, therefore, (after some short struggle, arising from all these appearances, as well as what I knew, alas! too well, by that time, of your principles) * resolved to say nothing, and religiously determined to discharge the duties

N n 2

which

* It was always my opinion, that our most prudent method is, to wink, as far as possible, at slips of gallantry in the ladies. What if the thing itself is to be sought for in nature?—(To cite the authority of no contemptible philosopher,) They are often no more than the momentary effects of frolic, of temperament, of gratitude, of a heart that is tender and sensible to the pain or pleasure of another.—If this is the case, and when they conduct themselves with prudence, are, otherwise, agreeable members of society, and fulfil the other duties of life with propriety and decency, they should be spared. You remember the creed which I composed, at the command of *la très aimable Madame la Comtesse* (who, though a female, is indisputably the best philosopher of this or any preceding age), and which she, and all the ladies, honestly and frankly subscribed to. Such are, doubtless, the sentiments of the sex in general; and it is vain to combat this point with them. Yet I do not agree with the French poet, who says, *Quand on le fait c'est peu de chose; quand on l'ignore ce n'est rien*. But if men, arrogating to themselves the legislative authority, in political matters, have imposed absolute chastity upon the other sex, whilst, at same time, they seem to have reserved to themselves a boundless latitude, in that respect; Is it to be wondered at, that the sex, either openly, or by artifice, have constantly eluded the force of a law, which they consider as a grievous and unequal imposition? Indeed, would the legislators themselves set the example, in observing the institution, no doubt, it would have its weight: But, till they do this, it seems just that they abate of their rigour. Besides, is it not to be considered who are the complainers?—*Ceux memes qui en profiterent*. *En verité, c'est trop*. And are there not periods of life, are there not climates, vicissitudes

which Heaven seemed to require of me in regard to that child. What attentions I paid to her education and welfare in every respect, you and all the world must testify. Little did I, all the while, suspect, that I was nursing in my bosom one who was at last to a-f-f-n-te me.—But, leaving this to Providence, whose ways are not

vicissitudes of seasons, peculiarities in constitutions, &c. where it seems to be a law of nature? And who is the author of this law, That the impulses of organization shall be irresistible?—The sacrilegious knavery of designing and selfish men, has so confounded political with religious institutions, as if they would subvert the laws of God with their absurdities. But if Moses's history of the creation is true—and who dares to dispute it?—whence have we the absurd, the impolitic, the impious doctrine of celibacy? or even that other of absolute continency? (for Heaven cannot be in contradiction with itself) so generally imposed upon, and rigorously exacted of our females, (unless when they are absolved, under the sanction of certain ceremonies, which it depends not upon them always to obtain) to the infallible production of diseases, and the immature extinction of many of them. Such are actually the laws of nature. And may it not also be modestly propounded, by what law of God do we condemn such numbers of them to sterility?—I mean not, by all this, to justify, or so much as to insinuate the propriety of trespassing against the established maxims of political societies. I am, on the contrary, ready to admit, as reasonable, or at least plausible, that every individual is bound to conform to the regulations of that society of which they are members; and, when voluntary members, absolutely and strictly bound. But, surely, regulations so difficult to observe, so impolitic, and so destructive of the human species as these are, call aloud for some remedy.—*A propos* of the French ladies. National characters, you know, are only general; and cannot be universal. For instance, it is said of Scotland, that the men of that country make good husbands. We are not to infer from this, that there are no bad husbands in Scotland; because there are bad men in every country. With equal propriety, and still more justice, I think, it may be said, that the French ladies make excellent wives. For though, perhaps, like the ladies in other countries, they are not altogether exempt from gallantry; in which, however, their pride and sentiment set them above that abject prostitution, which we have too frequent instances of in our British ladies:—Are they not almost universally good œconomists; excellent house-wives; delightful companions; affectionate towards their children; respectful, at least, at all times, towards their husbands, and warmly attached to their interests, against all the world, even their gallants, when they have such?

not to be scanned by us, you must, upon recollection, be conscious of the very many opportunities offered you by me, in which I solicited you to a reformation of your manners, and to comply to conduct yourself with decency and tranquillity in the duties of a domestic life with your husband and child. But this you never was disposed to constrain yourself to.—The tragical result, then, is entirely yours: for this, Heaven and your own conscience must vouch. I ask no other testimony, when I appeal to yourself.—We will soon both of us be where no other evidence will be requisite; and to the same evidence I appeal, that to the last moment this door has been open to you.—My principles, you know, have been always opposite from yours.—Delicate in concealing from, and candid when forced to discover any part of our private affairs to any body; making choice then of your nearest connections, or the most prudent amongst our acquaintances and mutual friends for such purposes.—How different from this has been your conduct of late? and with what reluctance do I see myself upon the eve of being forced to a public contradiction, by laying open the truth, in which I appeal still to yourself, and to the few who have been formerly let into part of these facts, in conformity with the same principles which have always actuated me?—My delicacy, however, to which I think it is to be ascribed only now, rather than to my duty, which you have put altogether out of the question, moves me still once more to put it in your power to return to a sense of your duty, in the eyes of God, of your husband, and of society: Sincerely wishing, you may at last, and, though very late, be influenced to form a prudent and sincere resolution.—Consult with Heaven, and your own conscience, as I have done, and give such answer as such counsel will dictate to you.—Now, while I am in life, (which cannot be long), the road is still open to you both to return to your duties.—I am, &c.

“ P. S. My

“ P. S. My d—t-r’s late behaviour to me (you know) has made me disinherit her.—When I did it, I informed her brother M-j-r B—— of it; and authorised him to tell her, she had only to return to her duty, to be forgiven, and have that deed undone; which I am sure he would not fail to deliver, as he went from me with that intention, and to bring her (as he said) to my lodging for that purpose. In which, however, it seems he could not prevail with her, as I have never seen him since.”

——— received this letter, opened it, and doubtless read it; turned the address inwards, new folded it, addressed it with her own hand, sealed it with her own seal, and returned it by post to Mr. H—k—f—n, where it remains.

Mr. H—k—f—n now contemplating so many reiterated proofs of his d—t-r’s undutifulness, and particularly, considering her last letter as a certain evidence of incorrigible depravity, proceeded to settle his affairs in the following manner :

COPY DEED OF RESTRICTION by H—L—N—S H—K—S—N Esq; of that ilk. May 1776.

“ I H—l—n—s H—k—f—n, Esq; of that ilk, considering that, by contract and deed of entail, bearing date the 29th April 1772, entered into betwixt me, of the one part, and J—n S—te of P—f—f—d, in the south liberties of the city of C—k in I—l—d, Esq; for himself, and as administrator-in-law for R—c—d—B—j—m—n S—te
his

his son, and as taking burden on him for his said son, of the other part : It is provided, That there shall be paid to C—s H—k—f—n, my d—t—r and only child, or her assignees, in case she shall happen to survive me, a free life rent annuity of 200 l. Sterling, to be paid at the periods, and by the proportions therein-mentioned : Which provision is thereby declared to be in lieu and place of, and which the said C—s H—k—f—n shall accept in full of, the provision of 1000 l. Sterling formerly provided by me to her, payable to her at the first term of Whitsunday or Martinmas after my decease, or my marrying a second wife, conform to a contract or agreement entered into betwixt me and Dame B— M— my spouse, dated and registered in the commissary-court books of St. A—d—w's, 22d March 1769 ; and that, by the said contract and deed of entail, power is reserved to me, by a deed or writing under my hand, to be executed by me at any time during my life, to retract the foresaid annuity of 200 l. Sterling, and reponne the said C—s H—k—f—n to her said former provision of 1000 l. And which annuity or eventual provision are, by the said contract and deed of entail, declared to be a real and preferable burden on the lands and estate of R—t—l—t, in the county of F—fe, thereby entailed. AND WHEREAS I am now resolved to exerce the foresaid reserve and power ; therefore, in the event that the said contract and deed of entail shall be sustained, and found a subsisting deed, binding upon the said parties thereto, either by a decreet-arbitral, or by a final decision of law ; I hereby RETRACT the foresaid annuity of 200 l. Sterling, thereby provided to the said C—s H—k—f—n ; and DECLARE, That, in the above-mentioned event, and in case that the said C—s H—k—f—n shall survive me, or that I shall marry a second wife, the said C—s H—k—f—n, or her assignees, shall only be entitled to claim her provision of 1000 l. Sterling provided to her by the said contract and agreement entered into betwixt me and the said Dame B— M— my spouse ; which provision of
1000 l.

1000 l. is hereby substituted in lieu and place of the
 foresaid annuity of 200 l. Sterling hereby retracted, and
 shall be a real and preferable burden on the said lands
 and estate of R-t-l-t, in terms of the said contract and
 deed of entail. As ALSO, in the event of the said con-
 tract and deed of entail being set aside, and declared
 void, either by decreet-arbitral, or by a final decision
 at law, I hereby declare, that the said C—s H—k—
 f—n, in case she shall survive me, or that I shall marry
 a second wife, shall only be entitled to claim from my
 representatives the said provision of 1000 l. Sterling
 provided to her by the said contract and agreement, en-
 tered into betwixt me and the said Dame B— M—
 my spouse, dated and registered the said 22d March
 1769, and that in the manner, and upon the footing
 therein agreed on, and no otherways; it being my clear
 will and intention, that, whether the said contract and
 deed of entail shall be sustained or set aside, the said
 C—s H—k—f—n, in the event of her surviving me,
 or my marrying a second wife, shall only be entitled to
 one provision of 1000 l. Sterling, payable at the first
 term of Whitsunday or Martinmas after my decease, or
 my marrying a second wife, with interest thereof till
 payment; and that in full of all she can ask or claim,
 either in virtue of the foresaid contract and agreement
 betwixt me and the said Dame B— M—, or in vir-
 tue of the said contract and deed of entail entered into
 betwixt me and the said J—n S—te: RESERVING to
 me full power and liberty, at any time in my life, and
 even on death-bed, to alter and revoke these presents,
 upon my being satisfied that the said C—s H—k—
 f—n my d—t-r, has returned to a proper sense of
 her duty to me: BUT DECLARING, That the present
 deed shall only be revoked or altered, by a proper
 writing under my hand.—Consenting to the registra-
 tion, &c.

N. B. This deed was registered at Edinburgh, May
 29th, 1776. K. M. K.

About

About this time also, Mr. H—k—f—n made another deed, totally disinheriting his d—t—r, and disposing all his effects to ———, and others; appointing trustees, &c. for that purpose: And when his disputes with S—te were afterwards settled, he renewed this deed, making it more distinct and secure than the first was.— And thus matters stand now.

Miss H—k—f—n has her 1000*l.* secured to her on the lands of R—t—l—t, payable at her father's death, by the decree of the arbiters, and conform to the above, and the other deeds.

Copy C A R D, Mr. B—— to Mr. M——.

“ Mr. B—— presents compliments to Mr. M——: Will be at M—t—d's Land on Monday by twelve o'clock, to deliver Mr. H—k—f—n's furniture, *per* an inventory; on which he must have receipt for what is delivered.—And he requires, at same time, the glass cabinet which Mr. H—k—f—n carried away from M—t—d's Land to be returned.—As to the accompt due L—— G——, Mr. H—k—f—n may settle it now, or at another time, as the humour strikes him. While L—— G—— remains with Mr. B——, she will be enabled to get the better of what distresses Mr. H—k—f—n may have occasioned.—And as to Miss H—k—f—n's

O o

harpichord,

harpichord, he may claim it, or what part of her cloaths his money purchafed, with the fame propriety he demanded and got her watch.—But, as to thefe things, Mr. B—— has nothing to fay.”

M—tl—d’s Land, Saturday night.

Copy ANSWER from Mr. H—k—f—n to the above Card.

“ Mr. H—k—f—n’s compliments to Mr. M——. Has read the card from Mr. B——. Begs the favour of Mr. M——, (in return to the infolence which is expreffed in that card) to acquaint that w—ch, who has fo lately completed the guilt and ruin of his poor deluded d—t—r, *and loaded his own m—t—r’s gray hairs with a reproach in fociety, which he was bound, for his own honour, as well as in duty to her, to have veiled over and concealed,*—That Mr. H—k—f—n will give no receipt to him for any part of his furniture, or any thing elfe. That rather he may (if he dares) apply it to the fame ufe that he did his indigent u——e’s 40l. †, * * *

* * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * * *

That, fhould he do this, Mr. H—k—f—n will give him the fame credit, and reckon with him the fame day, and before the fame judge, when he fettles that accompt with his u——e.”

N. B. Mr.

† I fhall tell you the ftory of this 40l. afterwards. It was, I believe, well enough underftood, which way it had gone. What I know for certain is, it was propofed, that I fhould make up the u——e’s lofs; and very ill taken, when I declined it.—Some people are fo made, that, however fpecious their appearance and professions may

N. B. Mr. M----- has at last himself seen how C---n---e, to aid R---B---'s views upon Mr. H--k--f--n's d---t-r, and the fortune she had in prospect, has concurred with them in oppressing him ; sacrificing, in a good measure, the interest of his client, Mr. S---te, to that purpose. He sees, that they could not have succeeded in this so well as they did, had they not also been favoured in it by the weakness and negligence (if not the t---c---y) of Mr. H--k--f--n's agents, E---B--- and J---W---.

He has seen also, that though C---n---e told Mr. B--f---r, that he had returned the submission to Mr. S---te, with strong injunctions on him to sign it,—*otherwise he would have no more to do with his business, &c.* ; yet, notwithstanding, all this was so far from truth, that, instead of C---n---e sending the submission to I---l---d, as he said, he only carried it to F---, to concert with R---B--- what should next be done ; when they dashed Miss H--k--f--n's name from the submission, and so sent it back to Mr M-----. At same time that they made that poor infatuated girl write the letter, of date, the 7th May, to her father, taking the burden of all their machinations upon herself ; and, the better to cloak themselves, they now also gave out in F--e, **“ That Mr. H--k--f--n has disinherited his d---t-r,*

O o 2

“ not

may be otherwise, it is dangerous to trust them with money, or even to let them have the most distant prospect of it, when that great requisite, to minister to their pleasures, is wanting.—Heaven knows, the views upon me and my fortune were both distant and precarious : And yet, the subversion of every principle, the dissolution of the most sacred ties amongst mankind, in short, the most horrid crimes were not fluck at, to open the way to it ;—and must have succeeded, but for the wonderful intervention of Providence, by which I detected the plot ; and it is not less than a miracle that I have lived to frustrate it.

* This report was current at C---p-r, and at St. A---d---s, in the beginning of May ; and, R---B--- coming to E---b---h towards the end of May, it likewise became current there at that time,

or

“ not upon account of her undutiful behaviour, but because he has taken it into his head, that she is not his:” *a thing which the world never had the least surmise of from him.*

Mr. H--k--f--n hopes this experience of the sinister manœuvres of this third party, will put Mr. M—— upon his guard for the future; as, it is evident, their designs mean no good to any of the parties interested, but much to the contrary.

Copy

*Of all the various wretches love has made,
How few have been by men of sense betray'd!—*

What is risible, when the p--p--y C—p-r got hold of this, he added a foot to it, and named the man. But, unluckily, it so falls out, that his man was not in the kingdom at the period in question; and besides, he knew him also to be actually the lady's son-in-law, with whom she had made a total breach, at least a year before. It is remarkable, this w---h was my school-fellow; and had constantly experienced instances of my friendship ever since that time. Such are the amazing degrees of prostitution to which the vulgar, in every rank, are capable of being carried, when they indulge that propensity to malice and falsehood which characterises them:—And such the return which he made me for my good offices; and particularly, for introducing him to my own family, as well as assiduously recommending him to others, in the style of a m-f-c-m—t-r. Add to all this, that he remembers well also, that his mother (good woman) and he, were laid under the greatest obligations to my father; who, when she was left, by the death of her husband, in debt and in indigence, supported and established her in a public house; where, as she often told me, and others, my father's friendship alone was worth 40 l. *per annum* to her, during many of the first years of her widowhood; by which means, chiefly, she was not only enabled to clear off her husband's debts, but also, in the end, to make a little money to leave to this her worthy son.—I must, however, do the justice to the memory of that good woman, to tell you, that she gratefully and repeatedly acknowledged all this as long as she lived; for I visited her, at her request, in almost her last moments.

Copy LETTER, sent by Miss H—k—f—n to her
Father, dated L——, 19th October 1776.

“ DEAR SIR,

“ From the present situation of my m—t---r and I, and our future still less agreeable prospect, I am induced to give you the trouble of this letter.

“ When you left us in M—tl—d’s Land, in the spring, and discharged us from visiting you in your lodgings, the notes you wrote upon that occasion, together with the letters you sent afterwards, so shocked my mother, and hurt her health, that she was forced to go to the country sooner than she intended. But, the extraordinary expence she had been put to, during the winter, by supporting so large a family, quite disproportioned to her income, joined to the charge of a tedious illness, from which she was but lately recovered, rendered her incapable to take and furnish a house of her own. She had *none* to rely on but her son R—,* who took her to *his* house, where I followed her, (her age and infirmities now requiring my whole care and attention,) and where we still remain. She is now past the active time of her life, and not so healthy as formerly; therefore does not find it so easy a matter now to live comfortably on *her* income, with the addition of supporting a d——t-r, (who has been, of late, still more expensive to her, being but recovering from a long fever, in which she required much attendance.) And, as my m—t---r must think soon of taking a house for herself, I cannot bear to be the cause of her feeling so much difficulty, as her allowance to me would go *some* way in making her easy. Having never, Sir, done any thing

* Observe the impudence of this saluety. Does not all the world know, that he neither had furniture nor subsistence to himself, when they provided him in both, by thus putting up at his house, with the whole plunder.

thing undutiful, or intentionally disobliging towards you, I doubt not, after what I have told you, but you will grant me such an allowance as may enable me to appear as *your* d---t-r, and my m-t---r, of consequence, to support with more ease and comfort ; which, I dare say, you would wish both of us to do. I am, my dear Sir, with every wish that duty can suggest for your welfare, your affectionate d---t-r,

(Signed) C---s H---k---s---N."

Copy A N S W E R from Mr. H---k---f---n to the above Letter.

" C---,

" I have a letter from you, by the hands of D---R---, who (after having likewise first communicated to me the purport of it) induced me to break the seal ; which, considering the experience I had had formerly of the style of your writing, I otherwise certainly would not have done. And here I must likewise add, that you could not, in my opinion, have employed a better agent, or one more agreeable to me.—It had been well for yourself, that you had always been as prudent in your choice as you have been upon this occasion. You tell me you have run yourself into distress ; and desire an allowance from me, as you wish not to be a burden upon any body, &c.—I know no occasion you have, or ever had, to become a burden upon any body, *my house being always open to you, as it still is ;* where you have had much experience, that I never was disposed to calculate your expence, or to circumscribe that article, in any shape. I cannot help observing, however, that, if your expence where you are, exceeds your m-t---r's revenue, she must pay an exorbitant board, and much a-

bove

bove value. But, you say, she proposes to take a house of her own. C——, this will not go down with me, or with the world. All the world knows, as you and I do, that that w——h, who seduced your m-t—r and you from your duty, had then, and still has, no other mean of subsistence. It was his last card, after ruining himself and his b—t—r. What, then, is to become of his interest, should your m-t—r take a house of her own, and carry off her revenue from him?—This, certainly, could never be a part of the plan concerted betwixt him and your poor deluded m-t—r; nor can it be intended, as, I persuade myself, you are very sensible. *But, if you are really tired of your folly, and either, or both of you, disposed to return to your duty, my house is open to you:* Or, if your m-t—r chooses to go to a house of her own, and you to attend her there; when I see that take place, I shall not be backward, upon reasonable terms, to contribute towards your expence. Mean-time, I cannot think it incumbent upon me, in any shape, to contribute to support the extravagance of a r——l, who has broken the peace of my family, and ruined you, as your interest stands at present, and as it must for ever stand, while you continue to keep up that connection, in spite of me.

“ The notes and letters which you allude to, are all extant.—I have again considered them, and I find them such as became me on that occasion:—And, in these circumstances, I still, and ever must, approve of them. One paragraph in your present letter, I think myself bound, in humanity, to transcribe to you: It is a lapse, which, I doubt not, you will be sorry for; as, indeed, it is amazing to me, how it has escaped you.—“ *Having never, Sir, done any thing undutiful, or intentionally disobliging to you, &c.*” Was it to be discovered to R—— B——ll—e, to E——d B——ce, to M-j-r B——l—e, to M-j-r M——v——l, to all in the world who know your behaviour in the affair of the submission; what light must this set your veracity in? I hope, for your own sake, you will be more circumspect, and consider, that a human
man

man character, without veracity, has nothing left that is respectable.

“ When you have any thing to communicate to me, through D—r R—, the D—r will always find the same candour and ingenuity which you have ever experienced from, &c.

Nov. 9th, 1776.

“ P. S. Of my family pictures, which you sent me, I find two wanting; one of my m—t—r; and that of J—n D—e of A—g—e. I desire you will order them to be sent to me.—Adieu.”

Miss H—k—f—n has made no return to this last letter of her father's; she has not even sent him his pictures. Probably, it was not relished by her and her confederates. Indeed, it could not well suit them, to submit themselves to the candour of a man of the doctor's principles and known integrity.

My conscience absolves me, and I have now done.
 You see, my good friend, this is a story filled with horror. The evidences ly before you;—judge for yourself. I have not made it my business to say, who has been in the wrong. It called for the utmost exertion of my attention and fortitude, to combat the assaults from every quarter, and to distinguish and maintain what, to me, seemed right. And this will not surprise you, if you consider, that my health was so bad, that I was seldom able to be out of my own apartment, or, indeed, out of my bed, at the time when these attacks were made upon me: And even this circumstance they improved mightily against me; for, they gave out impudently to the world, that I was hypochondriac, at the
 time

time when the few friends who visited me, wondered to see with what fortitude I continued to prosecute my studies, under such a complicated load of misfortunes and sickness *. You cannot conceive the half of what I met with. Such, it seems, are the dispositions of men, to side with the strongest, and to let the falling sink, (for, I believe, none thought it possible that I could live.) Some, who could have administered comfort, and been of use to me, stood aloof, and kept silence; (of this I could give you some instances, of men, whom you, as well as I, would have expected to find sensible to the influence of the principles of honour and humanity); whilst they saw others stick at no crime or falsehood, in their attempts to destroy my life and character.—But, to leave them to themselves: It is now my business, in adoring, to acknowledge that Providence, which alone supported me, and has restored me to health; or if you have found out, by what you have read, that I have a double call to gratitude, in being restored also to my senses; unless it is a remaining proof of insanity, that I am not sensible that ever I was deprived of these powers.

“ As to my affair with the v—l—n S—te, it has been long since decided.—You know, I was obliged to charge him before the L—ds. He had applied to a gentleman, a writer to the signet, who, seeing the nature of his cause, refused to be concerned in it. He then had recourse to one C—n—e, a writer, who readily undertook it. You must have heard of this fellow: It is the same who married a certain heiress, some years ago, and afterwards made himself so ridiculous in separating from her, and charging her with certain correspondences with *a black man, a fair man, &c. &c.*; but not daring to name any of these men, when called upon to do it before the judges, was fain to go home a-

* Jealousy was now likewise charged to my account; for there is no error or weakness which has not been imputed to me.—I shall not say—Who knows but what I might have been jealous, had I been tried in that way?—But this experiment had no place with me; nor was it possible that it could.

gain to his wife, and call her *honest woman*. This C—n—e raised a sham counter-process, filled with the most calumnious falsehoods, and palpable absurdities.—A licence, which, it seems, is permitted, and not censured by our judicatories, but rather countenanced, upon some quaint axioms, the justness of which you or I would be much disposed not to admit. C—n—e, however, conscious, as would seem, of the iniquity of his cause, at same time solicited a submission; which I absolutely refused. He then loudly threatened my lawyers with the weight of S—te's purse; declared he would appeal every point that should be given against him, and litigate *ad infinitum*.—Upon this my lawyers advised, nay, forced me, to agree to the submission. But as these are law matters, the only science, almost, which has hitherto escaped my enquiries*, you must excuse my entering into particulars; but I shall send you a copy of the whole proceedings, which are now preparing for the press, *ad perpetuam rei memoriam*, and as a warning to others†.

But,

* Civil or common law, as it is practised all over Europe, (unless, perhaps, Prussia is, of late, become an exception), seems well calculated to instruct a v—l—n, how far he may with impunity deviate from the paths of truth and rectitude. But the principles of natural law, as laid down by Puffendorf, Burlamaqui, &c. &c. naturally induce an honest man to think, that he has small occasion to pay attention to the civil law, unless where he means to follow it as a profession. At least, such was the opinion which I had always entertained on this head; and this prejudice has cost me 10,000 l. in a most astonishing manner; as you will see when you come to read that history.

† Notwithstanding the many proofs which I had had of S—te's v—l—y, I all along declared my readiness to refer every article of my allegations to his oath; and to rest my plea upon it, if he would swear, when confronted with such people as I should name—some of his own nearest friends and relations, and some gentlemen to whom he had also declared the facts when he was in this country.—He has ruined a good estate to his son; which, had he fulfilled his engagements, I would now cheerfully have rented from him at 1000 l. *per annum*. Meanwhile, I am happily rid of the disgraceful

But, as the history of my illness, and recovery, is both curious and instructing, I shall give you it in as few words as possible. You are yet a bachelor, though you are not now such a milkop as I was then.

Felix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum.

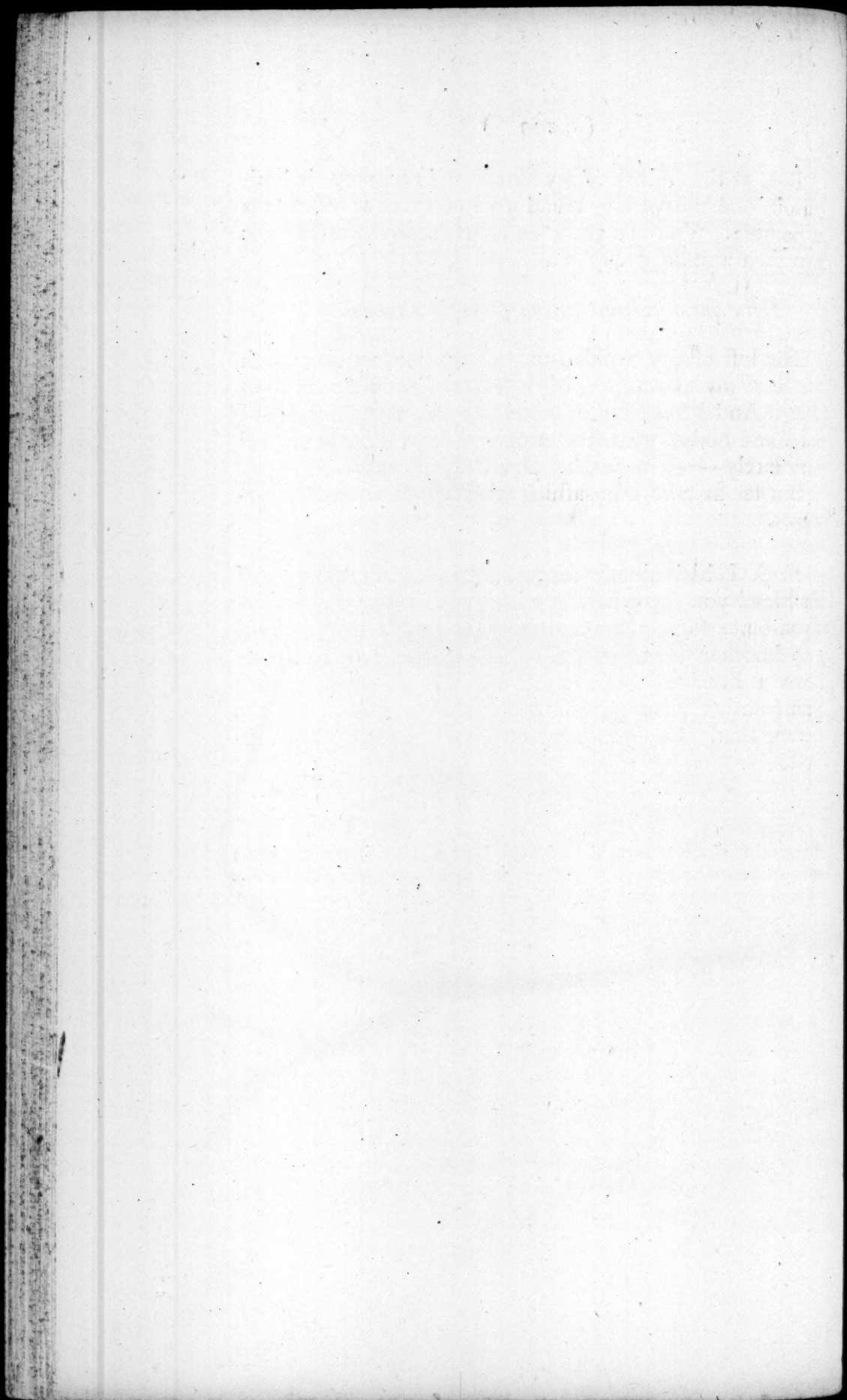
The loss of my health, and all my misfortunes, took rise from my marriage. My eyes were opened very soon after: And I have suffered most excruciating distress of mind and body, with few intervals, from that date, till very lately—a period of almost thirty years----

But let us take a breathing, and I shall proceed afterwards.

P. S. I had almost forgot your other request.—I shall send you the whole genealogy, as I had it from the Lyon-office some years ago.—It is very true, I have a grandmother from L—d O—p—t (the sixth Lord) above a hundred years ago; but Sir R—b—t K—h's grandmother from my family went off a hundred years before that. So, you see, these two ladies cannot connect.

ADIEU.

disgraceful connection which I had been drawn into with him; though I have lost 10,000l. by it, and seen the axe laid to the root of my family, in a very singular manner.



A N E C D O T E S

C O N T I N U E D.

NEC FOEMINA AMISSA PUDICITIA ALIA ABNUERIT.

A NEW OLD T. E. A.

CONTINUED

NEW YORK: AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

—YOU know, I did a very foolish thing, as many others did, in the year 1745, by which I disoblged my father; and he, being also a sheriff at the time, thought himself bound not to countenance me for some time after. Then it was that ——— threw her eyes upon me, offered me her protection, had me conducted to her house, and * * * * *

After some time passed in this manner, it became necessary for me to go abroad; and the day before I set out, she demanded of me a letter under my hand, declaring myself to be her husband; the pretence was, in case it should so happen, that * * * * *

and * * * * *

* * * This was taking me upon honour. I granted the request; and (mere milkop as I was then) from that moment considered myself as a married man. Returning to the country not many months after, I proposed to my wife to declare our marriage; which I found she rather shifted, but without explaining herself. Seeing her, at this time, embarrassed with her son-in-law and his family in her house, her sisters also with her, I imputed her backwardness to the particular situation she found herself to be in at the time; and, without insisting much on the head, I went about the country, visiting my friends, &c. &c.—I saw my wife, however, from time to time; and finding her full of evasions, which I could not well understand, and which I was not disposed to brook any longer, I at last peremptorily demanded, that she would either give me up my letter, or else declare our marriage, as I was determined to be out of such a disagreeable state of suspense.—She then chose the latter of these alternatives.—We were married by a clergyman, and the marriage declared.—The first thing I did, was, to give her sisters an invitation

invitation to come to my house, and use it as when it was their sister's; and this was readily accepted of.—It must be noticed, that I was entirely a stranger to the characters of all these people, as I was in fact a stranger in the country.—At the age of fifteen, I had finished the usual course of the philosophical classes at the college, where assuredly (by the by) very little of philosophy was either taught or known. From that I went immediately abroad for three years, and returned in the end of 1744; the year 1745 intervened, and then I went abroad again: In short, I had my whole acquaintance to make in this part of the world, after my marriage. As to my wife, I had seen or heard nothing of her, but the sort of honey-moon which had passed when I was in concealment, before I went last abroad. But, alas! I was soon let into new scenes.—Not above three weeks after my marriage, I went in one day to the parlour upon a dispute between my wife and her sister B—l, which was carried on in a style which very much surprised me to hear betwixt ladies.—I stood petrify'd! And such was the animosity on both sides, that my presence gave no check to either of them.—I heard it out. —B—l, though an able combatant, was at last forced to give in, and yielded in these words: “ Well, well, “ B—b—y, take it to you; for you know, that nobody “ ever could live under a roof with you, father nor “ mother, sister nor brother, husband nor servant.”—A dreadful piece of intelligence this for me, to whom scolding is, and always was, more terrible than bombs and cannon-balls are to women and children. But, alas! I found it verified every day of my life after. For twenty years, the world saw me daily running out of my own house, and dragging home with me any stranger with whom I could prevail, to be my temporary protection against this sort of entertainment. Neither was this all. About six or seven weeks after my marriage, my wife fell suddenly very ill. I ordered my horses, and went myself and sent Doctor R——g to her assistance. I was obliged to dine at C—p—r that day
upon

upon business ; and, when I returned home in the evening, her sisters and she all told me, that she had parted with child. She soon recovered ; and, though I thought it was rather early, the thing passed ; till some time after, meeting with the Doctor, he took the liberty to joke me upon the head of anticipation.—I was thunderstruck.—I now saw my happiness blasted for life ; my misery was complete in every sense, and without remedy. It now no longer depended upon me not to detest the principles, and consequently to loathe the person of such a woman.—I sunk under the accumulated load of woe.—My health gave way, and within a short time my physicians found me to be in a deep cachexy, induced by the inward chagrin which preyed upon me. Their skill, and the strength of a constitution at that time young and vigorous, in the course of about four years, got the better of the most capital symptoms of the disease, and seemed for a time to set death at a distance.—The disorder, however, terminated in what they called a flying gout, which has baffled many of the best physicians in Europe ever since ; and which being exasperated from time to time, by new applications of the first cause, brought me a hundred times to the verge of the grave. My house was a perfect emblem of hell upon earth ; my wife continually raging in it, my servants crying in every corner of it, and running, or threatening to run away : and what fell to my own share of the entertainment, was always ten times more than all the rest put together ; for I had it night and day.—These scenes never failed, in a short time, to bring me to the gates of death ; and then, absence from home, and amusements, were the remedies always prescribed by my physicians, which also generally succeeded in procuring me a temporary relief.—Shattered and broken, however, with the frequent repetitions ; disabled from pursuing the rural sports, which formerly afforded me health and delight ; cut off, by the weakness of my stomach and bowels, from partaking in convivial festivity—the education of my d——t-r, and

my studies, came to be my only amusements, and my best medicines, helping me to drag on life for a long while ; till at last I became so ill, that my physicians, in 1769, ordered me to go to another climate, and to remain a long time from home ; upon which, they now told me, my life depended.—During my absence, my d—t—r was ruined, turning out an exact copy of her m—t—r, with whom I was obliged to leave her.—*Altera natura est habitus quam junior artem perdisces, tollit nulla senecta tibi.*—Frank, easy, and obliging with every stranger, vociferous, rude, outrageous, and insolent to both her parents, and callous, you see, to all sense of duty, and to the principles of rectitude, as well as meanly disposed to form low intimacies, and with creatures, too, whom she acknowledged she looked upon to be next to idiots.

In the beginning of the year 1774, I had sundry conferences with an eminent physician, on the subject of the animal œconomy, a problem not yet solved among these philosophers ; and about which, therefore, each forms his own conjectures, and regulates his practice accordingly. And this being the case, my good friend, why may not you have yours, and I have mine, as well as they ? Perhaps the error is *in limine* ; probably the question is wrong stated amongst them.—They confine it too much to physiology * ; possibly, would they turn more to another branch in psychology †, they might find

* This it is, too, which leads so many of our modern philosophers into materialism.—See the works of *la Mettrie*,—*système de la nature*,—*the would-be philosopher de Sans Souci*,—*the celebrated syllabus-maker of Ferney*, &c. &c.

† At least, I have satisfied myself, and many others, as to this. Repeated observation, and experience the least equivocal, have demonstrated to me, that the physical gentlemen of the present age, would not be so much affronted by the chronical distempers as they often are, would they take the trouble to examine, with accuracy, the various writings of *Bonnet*, *Cheyne*, and others, who have laboured, with no small success, to investigate the laws of nature, in the animal department ; *the anonymous system, entitled, Considera-*

find the solution wanted. I gave them this hint fifteen years ago, which produced a letter of thanks from the Royal Society, with a very polite encomium from their president to me upon it,—and also produced to me the supercilious resentment of some of the faculty, which I really meant to serve and oblige by it.—Be this as it

Q q 2

may,

tions on man, &c. communicated in an undigested form to Doctor Birch, *anno* 1763, and an abstract view of it published at Edinburgh, and presented to the Royal Society, *anno* 1764. This system has been miserably disfigured by a commentator and plagiarist at London, who published it as his own, under the title of a *philosophical essay on man*, &c. published by F. Newberry, at No. 20. corner of Ludgate-street, *anno* 1773. I am assured, the original author intends to give his system to the public himself; and would have done it before now, was it not for a habit, in which he has hitherto indulged himself, that he does not look back, but always pushes forward to something new, in the way of his studies.

The whimsical operations of fashion are often absurd, and sometimes very dangerous. This appears strongly, in the effects of the *new*, or rather, to speak the fashionable language, the *no-system*. I once asked a physician, who is justly amongst the first in Europe, in point of reputation, and a professed enemy to system, this simple question,—What is the nature of the nettle-rash? or what error in the animal œconomy, is the cause of that phenomenon?—He frankly answered—Really he did not know; but he had some chronical patients who were much subject to it: He named them, and told me how he treated it. At my sight, he prescribed his regimen to one who was grievously afflicted with that complaint.—As often as the medicine was repeated, the patient fevered. The physician, notwithstanding, would not alter his plan; and, had not the patient, of himself, thrown away the medicine, he doubtless would have perished. What is remarkable, this disorder was well known to the physicians of a former age: It was often cured by *Hoffman*, *Cheyne*, *Sydenham*, &c. &c. But the fashion is altered: These people, it seems, are antiquated, and exploded.—They were systematical gentlemen.

Notwithstanding the mode, I do not hesitate to establish this axiom, *No theory, no practice*. No man ought to practise, at random, upon the lives of mankind, till he has first established a theory, well founded upon a knowledge of the animal œconomy. There is not a more simple phenomenon in nature than the nettle-rash, or more easily to be accounted for: It is not a distinct disease; but a concomitant symptom, in most of the deep-rooted chronical distempers, which, it seems, it is not now the mode to investigate.

may, this one thing is certain, that, till this point is properly investigated, the lives of us mortals must continue to be on the same precarious footing in their hands, as they are at present, and have hitherto always been.—And it is a serious and dismal truth, confirmed to us by daily experience, that in this lottery there are many blanks. Did you see, as I often do, the *monstrum horrendum et ingens*, BLUNDER, stalking about amongst us, with his faithful valet, DEATH, at his back, culling an immature harvest of the fairest plants; how would it move you! or, to see the poisoned sickle raised to strike the object of your esteem or affection!—Here we may feel, but cannot paint the agony.—This was my fate twice, in the case of my d—t—r, during her infancy.—The physicians blundered, and despaired.—I flew, and snatched her from the stroke before it fell.—And—to what a fate did I then reserve her!—O Providence! how problematical do thy dispensations appear to us thy frail creatures!—But it is ours to be amazed, and keep silence.

To return—My conferences ended with the above mentioned physician: He finally sent me his directions for my health, in writing. When I considered them, I was perfectly sensible, from the sad experience I had of my own case, as well as what I had read upon the science, that, if I followed them, I must be infallibly and quickly cut off. What then was I to do?—Should I send for another?—No. The advice I had got, was perfectly agreeable to the system in vogue; and I would get the same, or nearly the same, from every physician in the place. You know, my good friend, that the modes of practice in physic have changed almost every age, for two thousand years past; and, perhaps, in all that time, no one system ever corresponded less with the animal œconomy, than that which prevails at present. Their being constantly baffled in all chronical cases, is a demonstration of this;—and, in fact, the professors in a celebrated college on the continent, honestly and publicly acknowledge it; where, for this reason, they particularly

particularly recommend it to their students, of whom they have, *comm. ann.* about 600, to apply themselves to the study of the animal œconomy; confessing, that, at present, there seems to be a great defect in this point of knowledge amongst all the gentlemen of the profession, and hoping, that, for the honour of the profession, and for the good of mankind, some happy genius may stand forth amongst them, to take off that reproach, and hit upon some method of treatment for the cure of chronic diseases, which now every where foil their skill.—But, to return.—I reasoned thus with myself, That, seeing it was certain, that the advice which I had got would infallibly kill me, then there was a probable chance, that whatever I could conceive to be most opposite to it, might do me good:—In fine, as my case was desperate, I fixed upon this, and strictly observed it. The issue was curious, and successful.—I keep an exact register of the process. You know, I went to the bains of G——x in P—v—e, in autumn 1774; there I underwent vast distress, with rheumatisms, even a sort of paralysis, and three fevers. At this time, a good friend of mine, the Marquis de G——x, seeing me in great danger, urged me to send for a noted physician, at the distance of forty miles off, of whose extraordinary skill and success he gave me many instances; and particularly that of his lady, my acquaintance Madame la Marquise, whom I saw now in great health and vigour. She had been seized with an universal palsy; and, besides that, she laboured under a very bad habit of body, and had been ill a considerable time before: Yet, notwithstanding all these circumstances, and after her other physicians had given her over, this gentleman being called, soon restored her to the health in which I saw her. I told him, at last, (as he constantly urged me upon this head) that I had, in the course of my long illness, consulted many of the best physicians in Europe, in vain, nay, generally to my hurt; and that I was tired of them: But, since he had said so much to me of this gentleman, as I intended, so soon as I could get out of bed,

bed, to go down to A-x, (I was then up near to the foot of the A—s) I would send to him, and lay my case before him. This I did soon after, shewing him the whole history of my complaints from the beginning, the different opinions of physicians, &c. &c. After he had considered the whole with attention, he asked me the three following questions ; 1st, What reasons were there for thinking that yours was a gouty case?—I answered, I knew none ; for that the gout never was in my family, and I had done nothing to bring it upon myself, especially at so early a period in life, as I was naturally sober, living a country life, and taking much rural exercise, hunting, shooting, &c. &c.—2^d, Have you been unfortunate in your amours?—I answered, Upon my honour, I had not ; that I had married when young, and, since that period, had been careful never to run the risk of that misfortune.—3^d, Before you was taken ill of these complaints, had you met with any thing which occasioned you much chagrin?—I answered, That, I must confess, I had not been the happiest man in the world, for some time. “ Sir,” said he, “ I knew it :—
 “ You never had the gout in your life ; but it is my
 “ admiration that you have gone on so long, without
 “ falling into a dropsy ; in which, most probably, you
 “ must have terminated at last, had you persisted in the
 “ regimens which have been pointed out to you. But,
 “ Sir, I have had sundry examples of your case, in the
 “ course of my practice ; and I can, with confidence,
 “ assure you, that you are now, at last, in the right
 “ road. There is much of rheumatism, at present, in
 “ your habit. The complaints in your stomach and
 “ bowels, with which you have been so long and so
 “ much afflicted, are the rests of that cachexy which
 “ preceded them, as the cachexy was the consequence
 “ of the chagrin which preceded it.—I have nothing
 “ further to say to you, but continue the course you are
 “ in. Go back to the bains, and endeavour to bring
 “ on another fever :—After that, go to Pougues, and
 “ drink the water there, during the summer season.

“ Avoid

“ Avoid all aromatics, as you would do poison. The
 “ only bitter in which I could indulge you (if you will)
 “ is, sometimes to chew the seeds of an orange.—A-
 “ bove all, be careful to banish all application of mind;
 “ especially reflecting upon such subjects as have for-
 “ merly occasioned, or can possibly give rise to any new
 “ vexation to you.”

On my way to Pougues, I had, at Lyons, another severe rheumatic fever, which lasted five weeks; and, unfortunately for me, just as I was beginning to recover of that, a physician, a countryman, (Dr. D—d—s) happened to pass that way. I gave him five louis d’ors, and asked his advice for my convalescence, as I was extremely reduced. He urged, by many plausible arguments, and at last prevailed, in persuading me to alter my regimen. This very near cost me my life; for to that, chiefly, is to be attributed the dangerous intermitting fever, which so near carried me off altogether, about eight months after. When this fever left me, I returned to my own regimen again; and though, by very slow degrees, and at the distance of six months, I began, at last, to recover some strength. In September last, I had some very alarming threatenings.—I mentioned them, once and again, to a physician. He, not knowing what to do, very cordially advised me to *do nothing*;—that was, *to die*. I had recourse to my library; and, in turning over, I met, in the judicious and accurate Sydenham (the best, if not the last of our British physicians) with a description of the complaints which I then felt, and which were of a very dangerous tendency; and, as is the way of that good man, a remedy pointed out. I immediately had recourse to it, and, in three weeks, got great relief. But it was a Galenical prescription; and, as the winter approached, some of the materials were no longer to be got. I considered of a substitute, the nearest in quality to it I could—used it, and got well.

I now sleep well; and, as my custom was, from my infancy, I awake early. The morning I appropriate to certain

certain purposes, and chiefly to contemplation. I break-
fast about twelve. After breakfast, I walk about five
or six miles (for I have found the cold and motionless
exercise of a carriage rather hurtful to me in the win-
ter season.) This takes up an hour and a half, or two
hours more, which is also dedicated to contemplation.—
(You know I had but one leg when I came into this
country; but I have two now, and I assure you as good
as ever.)—The remainder of the day, till eleven at
night, I allot for amusement, that is, to my book, my
pen, or my friends, when they please to call upon me;
for I do not yet venture to go abroad, in the cold and
damp evenings of winter; and I never know what
languor is, nor ever did in my life, unless when, by
chance, I fall into disagreeable company; and this I
take care to avoid, or cut short, with very little cere-
mony.

It has been echoed to me, of late, that my d—t-r is
desirous to be restored to my favour,—*that is, to my for-
tune.* That she was deluded by bad advisers, &c.
Eve's apology—The devil tempted, and I did eat.—But,
was this apology sustained by her merciful and righteous
Judge?—Notwithstanding all that my d—t-r has
done, I am sensible that I could not bear to see her in
want, nor any other whom it is in my power to relieve;
for my old principle, I find, rather grows upon me with
habit. A small house, few servants, and my carriage,
accommodate me with all the necessaries which I have
occasion for; and even the last of these I could dispense
with, were it not for a remaining delicacy in a consti-
tution which has been so long and so much shattered as
mine. The expence of these, I must, now that I am
divested of property, be careful to confine within the
limits of my *annual* revenue. Was it otherwise, I

* * * * *

—being confirmed in my opinion, that affluence is not
given for the purposes of squandering on superfluities and
irregularities,

irregularities, to the misapplication of the rational powers, waste of time, or destruction of health.—*But I do not think I ought to see my d—t—r more.* The atrocious wickedness of recalling the submission, which she had formerly sent M—j—r M—v—l to ask that she might be allowed to sign, and at the critical time at which ^{she} did it, leaves no room for seeing it in any other light, than that it was done with a design to cut me off. And, if she did not see this intention of her advisers, she ought to have seen it. She was no child at the time when she engaged in all that horrid business. And besides, she actually has much more sense, and ought to have had better principles, than any of all those whom she associated with, in the commission of all those crimes. She asked to sign the submission, when she saw another going to be signed, by which she was to be cut out of 200 l. *per annum*. This was retracted again, when they thought that the doing so, in the condition which I was then, could not fail to destroy me: And now she desires to be forgiven, because, lo! to their confusion and disappointment, Heaven has preserved my life, after all; and my fortune is also put out of their reach: For, was I to die this moment, not one shilling of it would now come to their fingering. And well do I know, as I warned her, that, had she got it, by my death, three years ago, she would have been gulled out of it, or most of it, before this time.—Such are the marks of repentance which are now modestly proposed to me, to obtain my forgiveness.—Surely, it is high time to think of other measures.—But, if they attack me now any more in their usual manner, let them look to consequences. You shall see how I will dissipate this confederacy at last, root and branch of it.—I am not now lame, or confined to a sick-bed.

Entertain no uneasy apprehensions for your friend.—Should a certain fool think that this cap fits him, and send me a rendezvous, I so much detest and despise him, that probably I may only laugh at it: Nor shall I, by so doing, incur the imputation of cowardice, especially

R r

from

from him. He knows, that he has carried more honourable messages of that kind from me to others before now, when I was, perhaps, a little more hot-headed than I am at present.—Well, but (I think I hear you say) he knows where you live; that you often walk out; and, particularly, that you walk round the K—g's P—k alone, some time betwixt the hours of twelve and three every fair day: What if he and his bold second C—n—e should there once more attempt to a—f—f—n—e you? Then I shall give a stamp with my foot, and instantly his dead u—e, his dead b—t—r—in-l—w, and his dead w—e, *and my ruined d—t—r*, and many more, will start up to second me. What guilty conscience can envisage such a group of Medusas? It is only the justice of a cause which ought to rouse, or can justify the exertion of that quality which we call courage amongst men: And, supported by this, with a confidence in Heaven, true fortitude will never refile, or reckon upon odds. *That* is not true courage, which passion inspires; on the contrary, bring it to a proper test, you will never fail to see it shrink, and sink, at last, into absolute cowardice. Trust me, I shall not hesitate, or ever after regret being forced to rid society of two such m--c--a--ts, who have only lived hitherto, to commit every sort of v—l—y and f—l—y. Would to Heaven, the v—l—ns would only muster courage enough to attack me both at once, sword in hand, and in a fair field; depend upon it, you shall hear a good account of the issue. It is not a long time since you saw my left hand * * * * *

The cause was good, my friend; and the hand is at your service, as much now as it was seven years ago, and never was in better trim. But, alas! when was it ever known, that a b—ly, a v—l—n, or an a—f—f—n, dared to fight? I put this to an early proof with C—l—D—r. He, knowing that I was under a cloud, took it in his head to throw a reproach upon me. With the advice, and at the sight of half a dozen of captains of the brigade to which I then belonged, I sent him a rendezvous.

devious. Alas! he was aged and blind; but he knew that I had a sort of halter about my neck at the time, and he sought to take me up. Our gentlemen were upon the watch; and one of them gave me notice time enough to elude the danger. What has an honest man, under the protection of Heaven, to fear from such wretches!

Have me excused for errors in typography, or even in orthography. You know I write fast; and the drudgery of revising and altering is not a business for a gentleman. Example: Monsieur le Marquis de Mirabeau *l'ami des hommes*, that treasure of golden ore, which he left to be melted down, refined and cast into the finest model of political œconomy ever submitted to public examination, by that admirable chemist Doctor S—th, whose industry and penetrating judgment, in this matter, does great honour to the human faculties.—*Aussi*, writing amuses me; therefore, I often write: But it is only to burn, as you may do with this.

*How empty learning, and how vain is art,
But as they guide thro' life, and mend the heart!*

was a distich of mine, above twenty years ago. I am still of the same sentiment: And I never should have published any thing, had I not been unwarily drawn into it by Doctor B—h, then Secretary to the Royal Society. * * * * * This last history since supper—fix folio pages;—but I supped at seven.—However, it is time to prepare for bed.—I shall not even read it over; but wish you good night.

January 21st, 1777. My birth-day.—What a group of shocking incidents have been crowded into that half century of mine!

P. S. My love to our friend, the pious doctor, with his new studies.—He is in the fashion.—What a bloody-minded

minded man is he! Not satisfied with the licence which
 he already has, to murder the souls, does he also mean
 to take out a licence for murdering the bodies of un-
 happy mortals?—How weak, how treacherous, how
 absurd and paradoxical are human systems!—Hear the
 words of an angel to me, the morning on which, trem-
 bling, I presented my creed. “ There is (said she) but
 “ one book of true science;—let us go and read in it:
 “ The author of it was misled by no prejudice of system;
 “ nor had he any sinister purposes in view, when he
 “ wrote it. So saying, she took up a basket of many
 “ divisions, filled with hair, with moss, with feathers,
 “ downs, food of various kinds, &c. &c. and led me to
 “ the aviary. When she entered, the turtles, the ca-
 “ naries, the goldfinches, linnets, &c. &c. clung to the
 “ wires, and fluttered to get out.—She placed the bas-
 “ ket on the table, and opened all their prisons. Some
 “ were, at that time, employed in building their nests;
 “ some laying, some hatching, some feeding their young
 “ ones.—Each found, in the cornucopia which she
 “ brought them, the necessaries they most desired. We
 “ sat down; she put grains on her lap, where many of
 “ them came and fed.—What a display of sentiment, as
 “ she interpreted to me every word they spake! while,
 “ at same time, in the course of the forenoon, she dis-
 “ sected Leibnitz, Locke, and Descartes. What work
 “ (concluded she) with speculative nonsense, as if such
 “ was our business! Has not the great Author of all
 “ things presented the book of Nature before our eyes,
 “ assigned us Reason for our infallible guide, * perfecti-
 “ bility for our task, and happiness for our reward?—
 “ And what does He exact of us in return? To look
 “ up with gratitude to Him, who made us what we are;
 “ when

* See the incomparable Burlemaqui upon this head, vol. I.
 page 6th. See also Lyon's *Infal. of Hum. judg. &c. &c.* There
 is no book which a man, divested of prejudices, and under the con-
 duct of reason, may not safely read, and even profit from the worst.
 “ *Every flower yields honey to the bee, though every fly cannot extract*
 “ *it.*”

“ when he might have made us bears, or monkies: To
 “ be benevolent towards our fellow-labourers, and chear-
 “ ful and contented on our course: Surely (said she)
 “ *this yoke is easy, and the burden light.* Believe me,
 “ (added she) we shall all be angels to-morrow, if we
 “ do not forget what we are to-day.—She got up: we
 “ went to the pond and fed the fishes. This (said she)
 “ is the chapter of automaton; but they make a link
 “ in the universal chain, and therefore are not to be
 “ neglected.” The company being long convened, we
 went in to dinner. The remainder of the day was de-
 dicated to gaiety in commenting the creed.—Adieu.

March 10th, 1777.

N. B. Mr. H—k—f—n having heard by accident,
 on the 1st day of February 1777, that his d—t—r
 had been a week in town in January, and was gone a-
 gain to the country; upon this intelligence, he sent the
 following card to D—t—r R—b—f—n:

“ Mr. H—k—f—n, with best compliments to Dr.
 “ R—b—f—n, hopes he is well: Begs to know if the
 “ D—t—r has ever received any answer to the letter
 “ which he sent to Miss H—k—f—n on the 9th of
 “ Nov. last, or if the D—t—r knows whether she re-
 “ ceived it or not.”

February 1st, 1777.

To this card, the D—t—r sent the following answer:

“ Jo. R—b—f—n returns most respectful compli-
 “ ments to Mr. H—k—f—n: he has every reason to
 “ think that the letter was delivered; but has had no
 “ further correspondence on the subject.”

Saturday afternoon,

On

On the 3d of February, Miss H—k—f—n being again in town, sent the following line to her f—t—r :

“ D E A R S I R,

“ I have been a few weeks in this side of the water,
 “ on a visit to the family of ———, which I had for
 “ some time promised to pay them about this season. I
 “ am only in town for a few days, and am to return
 “ there on Wednesday forenoon. As I shall not be in
 “ E—b—h again, but passing through in my way
 “ home, I wish to take this opportunity to pay my
 “ duty to you, and, if agreeable to you, will call on
 “ you this forenoon.

“ Your affectionate d—t—r,”

E—b—h, Monday.

To such an astonishing height is this unhappy woman now capable of carrying her insolence and brutality towards her f—t—r, who, all the world will testify, paid a more than common attention to her during the first twenty years of her life, and, in all that time, never once spoke a word out of temper to her, nor ever had occasion, so happily was she formed ; till within these last eight years, that she has been seduced by her m—t—r and her b—t—r, to act the part which you see she has done.

Mr. H—k—f—n has learned since, that his d—t—r came here to carry on some negotiations about a m—r—ge for her v—g—b—d b—t—r, which her m—t—r and she have been long plotting, for the ruin of a good young lady of some fortune ; and *took the opportunity* (as she says) to insult her f—t—r with an offer of a howd’-ye, *en passant*, before she went home.

Mr.

Mr. H—k—f—n received his d—t-r's line by a child, a little girl. Upon his asking the child, where she came from? she answered, from Mrs. H-m-lt-n's.—As Mr. H—k—f—n had been prevented of his walk some days before that, by bad weather, and this day being fine, he was just preparing to go out to his walk, when the child called: He, therefore, desired her to tell Mrs. H-m-lt-n, that he could not stay in that forenoon. * * * * * G—t G—d! This lost girl wants only one step more to finish her career,—after the example of a new companion, to * * * * *
* * * * *
—How different were the companions whom I chose for her, at her first setting out in the world!—the Miss S-m—v-ls in St. A-d—w's.

I now propose fixing my residence somewhere in the country of my nativity: Perhaps you will suspect, that that little peninsula will be too small to contain us all: But, you know, the laws of my country (which, I hope, I shall always duly respect) forbid my calling upon these r—s; though, I must confess, I would not be sorry, now when out of bed, to see them once more attempt to af-f-n-te me, both in concert, as formerly, and at one time—Trust me, they shall find a warm reception. Do not, from this, think, that I am of an unforgiving temper.—Believe me, if I had died amongst their hands, I could have forgiven them easily. Natural life is a bagatelle,—a momentary thing; and I am always ready to hazard, and to resign it, in a just cause: But moral life, which is endless, I consider in quite a different light. God forgive me, I know not if ever I shall be able to forgive any of those who have had an active hand in the ruin of my d—t-r, whom it cost me twenty years of labour and attention to instruct, and to conduct into the paths of rectitude.

P. S. No doubt you may expect to hear more of these matters*. The abuse which I met with from the beginning,

* My d—t-r, long since, sent a retaining fee to an eminent lawyer, to engage him against me: But, many months after, when the

beginning, has been marked with uncommon atrocity; and, in the end, you see also, *how my wife has been exposed*, (for, poor unhappy, imprudent, unthinking, deluded woman! *she still was my wife*,) my d—t—r ruined, myself af—f—n—t—d a thousand times, and in a thousand different ways:—the union of my family unbinged for ever, and in every joint, by people who had formed an interest to themselves, in the perpetration of all this v—l—y; in which, it must be confessed, the weakness of their conduct, in some particulars, is not less conspicuous than the wickedness of it.

In fine, my friend, the issue of things is with Providence: Meantime, be you tranquil upon the head.—You know how much I can preserve my coolness, when matters are serious. Things do not operate with me as with the generality of people: The higher the provocation, the more of steadiness, but the less of passion will appear. *Your own remark, upon an occasion; you may remember, and trust to it.*—Follow here what may, be assured, you shall not hear of a circumstance that can merit your disapprobation. My measures are duly weighed and fixed. If there are crimes, and of the most atrocious kind, which the law is so defective as not to afford protection against, or redress for, what then is to be done? Are we, therefore, to abandon reason and justice, and tamely prostitute the dignity of human nature?—Surely there is a law in every man's breast, which forbids this.

Let us suppose a case, my friend, and such a one as, I do assure you, is not without an example in life.—A v—l—n and an ab—d—d woman, for sinister purposes of their own, unite to seduce from every principle of rectitude the only child of a tender, affectionate, indulgent, and dutiful parent; introduce her to intimacies the

the cause was laid before him, he returned her money, and took mine; and I am prepared to bestow my last shilling, or the last gasp of that breath which Heaven has miraculously restored to me, to obtain redress, for the enormous and unparalleled injuries I have met with.

the most improper for a young lady*, and such as they know to be most disagreeable to her father; prompt her to disobedience, to insolence, to injustice, to p-r--e-de,—and all this to pass with impunity!—Heavens! where do we live? surely not in a human society, if such crimes are countenanced or tolerated in the society.

Copy LETTER from Mr. H—k—f—n to M—j—r
B——e.

March 24th, 1777.

“ You may remember, Sir, that, upon the 8th of March 1776, you did me the favour to call at my lodgings in the M—t, and expressed a good deal of concern for the unnatural behaviour of a certain young woman; offered your mediation, obtained my consent, and went away (as you said) to endeavour to bring her along with you to my lodgings, to be reconciled to a person whom she had offended. Upon that occasion, you know, you also got from me copies of some letters, for the purpose of talking to the young woman upon the subject of them, which you also promised you would take care of,

* If a malicious world is wicked enough, to say of a lady, that she has born a b—t—d to her f-t—r’s c—chm-n, however false and injurious the slander; yet, if it is said and believed, the misfortunate object of the calumny is no longer a proper companion for a young lady of untainted character; especially where no better reason is assigned for the intimacy, than because she made a present of a web of fine holland to an idle fellow, who has nothing to recommend him to the virtuous part of the sex, though his education in the London stews, where he dissipated his own fortune, and six times more, to the great prejudice of a worthy man, may have qualified him to recommend himself to the favour of another class of females.

S f

and

and bring back to me.—The day after, as you may remember, you sent me this card:—"M—j—r B—e's
 " compliments to Mr. H—k—f—n. Having company
 " to dine with him at home yesterday, found it too late
 " to call at M—tl—d's Land; intends being in town
 " to-morrow for that purpose, and will call at Mr.
 " H—k—f—n afterwards.

" Saturday, March 9th."

" You know, I have never had the pleasure to see or hear from you since; nor have I ever received the copies of the letters which were confided to you upon that occasion, *and which I beg you will now send to me.*

" I heard of your leaving this part of the country, soon after you wrote me the card, as above; and I know not whether you have ever been informed, or thought it worth your attention to enquire into the sequel of that affair, which turned out a very horrid one soon after. On the 7th of May, the young woman addressed me literally to this purpose: "Sir—Your life
 " is in my hand; and I will instantly take it away, if
 " you do not agree to give me a sum of money."—I replied coolly, to this effect: "Strike then, and welcome.—I am willing to die; but dare not put my
 " hand to an unjust transaction."—The thing was no sooner said than done. With good will she struck the blow,—deep and home.—I fell prostrate;—and my physicians, and all the by-standers, concluded that I was gone:—When lo! Heaven extended its protection to a bleeding parent;—to the confusion and disappointment of her and the accomplices (for I have it under her hand, that she was prompted to what she did) life still remained. I languished many months under the wound; and, to the amazement of the physicians, and every body else who saw me, I recovered.—She very lately offered me a new insult: But, though she did it in the rudest manner, yet, whether it was that her dagger had lost its point, by the violence with which she gave the
 former

former stroke, or from what other cause I know not, but I escaped, without the least impression from this last attack, though it was as artfully contrived to make a wound, as you can imagine.

“ I know not, Sir, whether you ever bestow a thought now, upon a matter which formerly seemed to give you concern : But these things carry such uncommon marks of atrocity, that I cannot doubt of having your approbation, as well as that of every other person on earth, who is in the smallest degree sensible to the principles of rectitude, when I

* * * * *

I beg to present my best respects to Mrs. B—— and to L—— W——; and am,” &c.

N. B. M-j-r B—— returned a polite and very proper answer to the above, and sent the letters.

March 25th, 1777.

Copy LETTER from Miss H—k—f—n to her F—t—r.

MY DEAR SIR,

As I am not conscious of having ever failed in that duty which is due from a child to a parent, or in any other respect to have merited your displeasure, words cannot express the distress of mind I labour under, from the unmerited severity with which you have been pleased to afflict me ; and, by a series of letters to me and

S f 2

my

my beloved m-r—r, who is equally unfortunate, in having incurred your displeasure, holding me forth as a criminal of the first magnitude, an intentional m-d-r-r, a p-r-c-de, and other offences; and, in respect thereof, dooming me to all those curses, both here and hereafter, which would justly be my portion, were I guilty of all, or any of those crimes, of which my soul abhors the very thoughts, and of which, upon cool reflection, your own conscience must acquit me.—To this moment, upon the most serious consideration, I am at a loss to know, to what causes to ascribe this severity, other than my attachment to my m-r—r, whose age, and infirm state of health, and the duty I owe her, in return to that tenderness and affection she has ever bestowed upon me, required of me.—But all the injury I have thus undeservedly suffered, without murmur or complaint, is nothing, in comparison to that stigma you have imposed upon me, by your publication of a pamphlet, entitled, *Anecdotes*; holding me forth to the world, not only as a most undutiful, rebellious child, but as an intentional m-d-r-r, p-r-c-de, &c. and, as such, denouncing against me all those curses from Almighty God, the just punishment of those supposed crimes.—Thus abandoned by you, I had none to apply to for protection, but my brother R-b—t, whose affection I had formerly experienced, and into whose family I have been kindly received, and supplied with those necessities of life, cloaths, aliment, &c. which you have been pleased to deny me. But, as his situation in life is such, that he cannot afford to continue these supplies, however well disposed to assist me, I presume to renew my application to you, that, out of the affluence of your fortune, you would allow me a sum suitable to your only child and station of life, thus destitute of all means of subsistence.—To propose being again one of your family, would be the height of presumption, both on your account and mine, thus exposed to the world by your late publication, and loaded with the heaviest curses of vengeance from Heaven, for such unheard-of supposed crimes.

crimes. The laws, both of God and man, lay an indispensable duty on parents to aliment their children, when they are in a condition to discharge that duty; which I am happy to know is your case. But as it would be the last action of my life (if possible to be avoided) to have any dispute of that kind with you, my humble request is, in the first place, to obtain your pardon for these imaginary offences, of which I am so entirely innocent; and, in evidence thereof, that you will be graciously pleased to make me a suitable allowance for my interim support. Your threats to disinherit me, though your only child, I do not regard; but the necessity to which I am reduced, will, I am confident, justify me in the eyes of the world, and to my own conscience, if the continuance of that unmerited severity shall oblige me to crave the protection of the law; which I hope your goodness, and a sense of my innocence, will prevent; and to which I beg a favourable return with your first conveniency, being, with all affection, your ever dutiful, though much wronged child,

L——, May 27th, 1777.

Copy LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to his D—t—r,

C——,

E—b—h, May 29th, 1777.

A letter of yours, of date the 27th current, from L——, was ushered into my house yesterday in a very singular manner, by two strangers. Was I to judge of them from their politeness, it certainly would not give me a favourable opinion of your new connexions. One of them, it seems, came no further than the lobby; so that I did not see him. The other came into the dining-room; presented me with a letter, refused to sit down,

down, told me the letter was from a gentleman, and required no answer ; and, seeing me about to break the seal, he run off. Judge of my surprise, after all this, when, upon opening the envelope, I found the letter within it was from you. As you had never answered my last to you, (of date the 9th of November past,) I concluded it to be that reply, which I had looked for so many months : But, upon reading it, I found it to be a letter of hieroglyphics, to which I have no key. I must, therefore, desire an explanation of it.—It speaks of crimes, curses, severity, vengeance denounced, &c. &c. * * * * * All my connexion and correspondence with you, from your birth to this hour, has carried the strongest marks of candour and lenity. When you turned your back upon me, and upon your duty, gentle and secret methods were first vainly tried to reclaim you ; after that, appeal was made to Heaven, to your own conscience, and to a few friends ; and, lastly, I am ready and willing to appeal to all society. You know you have never answered mine, of the 9th of November, either to me, or to the gentleman whom you yourself employed upon that occasion. Not to offend you with the word *duty*, which you have so long disclaimed, give me leave to say, civility entitled both him and I to less neglect upon that head.—When you find yourself disposed to answer that letter, and to send me a key to this your last, I certainly shall not let six months pass without acknowledging the favour. Meantime, C——, let us always remember, that, in every thing, we are acting under the eye of Him, who, as moral agents, expects from us, that we are not to lose sight of moral rectitude : And, as he has pointed out to us our relative duties, and endowed us with capacity to distinguish what they are, so, we are certainly to expect also, that he will ultimately judge of our conduct by that unerring standard. We are likewise at all times to respect society, and consider, that, whatever part is chalked out for us to act upon the stage of life, society has a right to be informed upon what principles we proceed.

proceed. So I have always thought, so you ought to think, and so I will always act, whether called upon by you, or by any other person: But, in such cases, the strictest truth should be observed; and nothing advanced but what can be vouched.

Since you turned your back upon me, and upon your duty, it seems, you have felt inconveniencies which you was a stranger to before that period. That you continue to labour under these inconveniencies, you know, is no fault of mine. The road has always been open to you to return to your duty, and, by that means, put it in my power to remove them. This was proposed to you by your brother M-j-r B—ll-e a twelvemonth ago; sundry times after that, by messages and letters from me to you, and to your m-t—r; and in November last, again repeated to you by letter, by the hand of Doctor R-b—f-n, whom you first employed for that purpose, and afterwards treated with contemptuous neglect. The alternatives then offered, you have never yet either rejected or accepted of. Thus, if it be so, that you now suffer, or ever have suffered any hardships, they have been, all along, the effect of your own wilful choice; it always was in your power to end them.

Your long and obstinate silence put it out of my power so much as to guess at your intentions, till, by accident, I came to the knowledge, that you had, long ago, retained an eminent lawyer, with a view to prosecute me at law for a subsistence, which you have constantly refused, when offered to you.—You may believe, I was not a little surprised, when I learned this circumstance from the gentleman himself, at the time when he sent back your money, and took mine. Thus, you see, by some one mean or other, your secret machinations always come out, and often turn against yourself.—It is (I think) not to be doubted, that, could you prevail with yourself to lay aside all duplicity, and to act with candour, and above board, things would go more in your favour; or, at least, you would have more satisfaction in
the

the retrospect.—After all, what can you propose to yourself, by thus playing with one hand under the table, and another exposed to view, playing a different game? You must certainly come to one at last. Either you must return to your duty, or you must say, that you will not do it. In either case, I am prepared to answer. If you are disposed to return to your duty, let your actions shew it: Words, against facts, will never impose upon any body who has common sense.—If, on the other hand, law is your aim, begin, then. You know, I never set any value upon money, for my own use; and, since I was deprived of my only child, I have no call to husband it for any other: My last shilling, if necessary, shall go to defend me from injustice. You tell me, that *you do not regard that I disinherit you*. Since that is the case, I know not why I should regret that you disinherit yourself. You have only to declare your choice; and your choice, as it has hitherto been, shall still continue to be, a direction, to your most inhumanly abused, and most justly offended father,

H. H.

P. S. You may lay your heads together, to harass and teaze me to death, now, if you can, and welcome. Should you succeed in that, you, as you have always been, will still be the sufferer: I shall gain that rest which I have long wished for: S—te will gain 500*l. per annum*; and you, when you shall have finished your labour, will most certainly not reap one shilling by it. You must, therefore, look towards the next world for your reward.—It is, this day, twenty-eight years complete since you was christened. Heaven knows it is not my fault, that you are yet to learn the fifth commandment of the decalogue. If you sometimes contributed a little to sweeten the first twenty of these years to me, the proportion of bitter which you have thrown into the last eight of them, has greatly overbalanced it.

ADIEU.

INSTRUC.

INSTRUCTIONS from Mr. H—K—S—N
to his AGENT.

June 3d, 1777.

I AM perfectly sensible, that no power on earth can absolve me from the duty of trying, by every mean in my power, to reclaim my lost child to a sense of her duty. So long as she contends, and in whatever shape she chooses to contend, I am indispensibly bound to resist. You are, therefore, expressly to combat every rebellious effort she makes against me, by every step which the law allows of. And should she (as, I hope, will not be the case) obtain, by favour, or otherwise, any interlocutor in her favour, on any point or points, before the inferior courts, you are to appeal all such points, from court to court, to the highest; for I shall never stop in the discharge of my duty, till I have arrived at the *ne plus ultra* upon earth. My conscience will then carry me, with approbation in my own breast, to that tribunal where decisions admit of no partiality. You have, in the Anecdotes, a vouched state of every material fact which has hitherto passed, since she took the step of open rebellion.—You will see there, also, the steps I have hitherto taken, from time to time, to call her home to her duty. The first act of open rebellion was that to which, you know, she told us, she was advised by her b—t—r; (refusing to sign the submission upon equal terms, and endeavouring, at the hazard of my life, to extort new settlements in her own favour.) See that, and all that followed upon it, regularly noted in the Anecdotes, with the vouchers pointed out; and which, I doubt not, will sufficiently furnish you with defences, against every attack which can be made upon me.

The circumstance of distressing my health, and consequently of shortening my life, has been a principal
T t object

object to them all along. With this view, they confined me to E—b—h last summer, when they knew that my physicians had advised country air, as absolutely necessary for my preservation.—Probably they have the same views now, for this summer, in which they will be disappointed; for I go, at all hazards, to the goat milk. Should they begin litigation, you have only to study to procure every lawful delay, and spin out time, so as to let me get the benefit of the country air, as much as possible, during the summer months: At same time, you shall always be informed how to write to me, that, if my presence shall become absolutely necessary, I may return to town. You have only to take care, that no interim interlocutor shall take place to my prejudice.—An appeal, (when every other defence fails you) will always secure this.

If my daughter shall return to a sense of her duty, or say that she is willing to do so, you will know whether she is serious in that, or not, by the following marks:—

She will certainly give strong marks, and such as cannot be equivocal, of true contrition, for the part she has acted hitherto.

She will begin by abandoning that confederacy, in which she had combined to r—b me of my peace, my fortune, and my life.

She will, by every expression, the least equivocal, shew, how much she now detests and abhors all those who seduced her, or combined with her, in her past conduct; and shew, that she is willing to work, or beg for her bread, rather than herd with them any more.

She will restore, or shew a willingness, (and proffer, without being asked), to restore such of my effects as she r—b—d me of, and has hitherto forcibly detained.

She will employ a man of known good sense and integrity, to communicate her repentance to me, and to receive my answer; for, if she has any sense of propriety left, she must know, without being told, that it is not consistent with my duty to see herself at present.

You

You have seen, that, notwithstanding my d—t—r's behaviour, it was my intention to give her 50 l. *per annum*, in case I should find it altogether inconsistent with the safety of my life, to continue to live under the same roof with her.—You have seen, likewise, how she prevented me from doing this.—You have seen the various efforts which I have made since to reclaim her. But, upon the receipt of her last letter, and not till then, I sent that 50 l. for this current year, to the Royal Infirmary: It is my intention to do the same every year, so long as she continues in rebellion.—I had waited seven months for her answer to my letter of the 9th of November, before I did this.—You may think I had great patience—and so I have; but I did not lose sight, and you shall see that I never will lose sight of my duty, for all that.—I forgot to tell you, that they boast loudly of interest here, and threaten me with L—d M—f—d also above.—I am far from having any such opinion of the judges; many of them are parents themselves: But, if it were otherways, these boastings would have no weight with me, who have my duty only in my eye, and resign the issue to Providence.

You know, and all the world knows, that it is a long time since this w—h dissipated his own patrimony, in pursuits of pleasure, and likewise fleeced his brother to a large extent, at least to the utmost that he could bear: It is plain, that so as he could but obtain the end, he has at all times been indifferent as to the means.—The affair of his u—e's 40 l. while he was yet but an apprentice boy, was an early proof of this. These sources thus dried up and exhausted, unhappily for me, he next fixed his eyes upon my fortune, and projected opening a new source there for himself.—In my absence, it seems, he found small difficulty in seducing my w—fe and d—t—r to his purpose.—Deep and dark schemes were laid for my a—f—f—n—t—n and r—b—y. Removed to the distance of another kingdom, and languishing on a sick-bed, it was impossible for me to discover or coun-

teract these plots.—Providence was pleased to charge
 itself with this task.—While they were working like
 moles under ground, Heaven sprung every mine they
 dug, and guarded my life, upon which all depended.
 At the very instant, when they were looking out for ac-
 counts of my death, I appeared in the midst of them.
 They instantly changed their batteries. My w—fe and
 d—t—r met me with open arms, and with smiles of
 treachery. With unguarded confidence, I threw my-
 self plump into their snares. Lame, and dying, I put
 myself into their hands; made settlements in favour of
 my d—t—r; put myself, and all that I had, into her
 hands; and only conditioned, that, though they never
 would consent to let me live, they would now let me die
 in peace, under my own roof. This they agreed to;
 and promised, that I should never hear a word of scold-
 ing in the house. Thus, things actually went smoothly
 for some time; and, a thing new to me, I saw my own
 house without noise or strife. Alas! this went on but
 for a short time. They knew they had their prey se-
 cure; that they could put me to d—th whenever they
 pleased: They unmasked, and proceeded to the execu-
 tion. Heaven again interposed, and, at the instant, sent
 Doctor R—b—f—n to save me.—In the contest, how-
 ever, you know Heaven has also been pleased to per-
 mit, that my fortune has been wrecked, my family ruin-
 ed, and my representation sunk; but not one sixpence-
 worth of all that wreck has gone into the hands of that
 rapacious r—b—r, excepting my household-furniture,
 which he carried off last year, at a time when I was
 confined to a sick-bed, and which now fills his empty
 house. I have an inventory of it; and it now remains
 to know, whether he or I have the best right to it.—
 The *debris* which I have saved from the wreck, is se-
 cured beyond their reach.—Whether I die or live, they
 never can come at it; and I am determined to dedicate
 my last shilling, and my life, which Heaven seems to
 have preserved miraculously for that purpose, to procure
 redress.

redress.—You have seen how I escaped with life out of their hands.—They did not, however, lose hopes upon this. My d—t—r, who had hitherto confined herself to concealed acts of treachery and disobedience, boldly declared open war. The note which she slipped into the submission *, was her first step in this way. You know all that has followed since :—The rest is yet with Providence. We must look that way with patience and resignation.

Copy LETTER, Miss H—k—f—n to her Father.

DEAR SIR,

Your favour of the 29th of May I must consider as a refusal to the just and natural request I made in my letter to you of the 27th, for allowing me an aliment suitable to your child, more especially as it was followed by another publication, in the same style as the former ; both which I received *per* carrier, directed by you.—Being ever diffident of my own judgment in matters of so much consequence, I have taken the advice of counsel upon my present situation, and am well assured of succeeding in a process of aliment, should I commence one against you : But that step I am most unwilling to take, could any other succeed.—Allow me, then, to offer one other proposal to your consideration ; which is, to submit to arbitration my present claim ; and, in whatever way it may be determined, I shall acquiesce. I think it necessary to justify myself from the accusation of retaining counsel against you, at the period you mention.

* Vide page 262.

tion*. The gentleman who gave you the information, must have been mistaken; for I never took any step of the kind till now. This from, &c.

L—, June 10th, 1777.

N. B. The above letter was ushered in as the former to Mr. H—k—f—n by two strangers. He read it in their presence, and told them that there was no answer.—Nor will he ever make any other answer to such a demand—being well satisfied, that he is not warranted voluntarily to resign the discharge of his duty into the hands of any individual whomsoever.

On the 14th of June, Miss H—k—f—n sent a summons to her father; and on the 16th, he sent that 1000 l. which he had allotted, and hitherto reserved for her, to be divided equally betwixt the Royal Infirmary and the Orphan Hospital: And, perfectly convinced that he has acted hitherto under the sanction of the Christian law, he cheerfully goes, as called, to submit his conduct to the strictest scrutiny of the judges, and of the world.

Cantabit

* Mark this equivocation: It was not she, because it was her agent, who gave the money to Mr. D—d—s as a retaining fee. Appeal to Mr. D—d—s, and to his clerk, and to his books. Mr. D—d—s returned her fee long after, when he accepted of her father's.—*N. B.* Her fee was only one guinea, her father's was five guineas.

Cantabit vacuus coram latrone viator.

Even this sort of security is, in some cases, to be envied.—How happy had it been for me, and thrice more so for my d—t—r, that this had been my case!—What persecution have I undergone, during almost four years, for the little money that I was master of?—What hazards was Providence obliged to interpose to preserve me from, while I was struggling in the discharge of my duty?—My d—t—r has now finished;—and Heaven has been pleased to put a period to my task in this matter.—Heaven permitted the infatuated woman to be hardened beyond all example:—She was at last hurried down the precipice; and all is over betwixt her and me.—He who knows the secrets of all hearts, knows, and will at last be my Witness and my Judge, that I never once viewed this contest in the light of a point of interest.—I never did, I never could see it in any other light but that of duty only.—My object was, all along, to rouse her to a sense of her duty, to recal her to the paths of rectitude, and to rescue her from the hands of those who had long marked her for a prey; and, to have done this, I would willingly have expended my last shilling; though, at same time, nothing ever could have induced me to think of living with her, for her sake, as well as for my own.—It has been the will of Heaven, that all my endeavours proved fruitless.—She at last pushed things to an irretrievable height. I then empowered my lawyer to give her 50 l. *per annum*.—He who marked the controversy, knows, that, in the way of her duty, in any of the ways proposed by her b—t—r M—j—r B—ll—e, or by D—t—r R—b—f—n, she would, at any time, with facility, have obtained double the sum.—Heaven determined otherwise; and it only remained for me, in the end, to fulfil that destiny.—Though far short of what she would have got in a dutiful way, she is provided for

for sufficiently, and more than sufficiently, considering the hands she has put herself into, the purposes to which it must go, and the method she chose to take to obtain it:—all else goes where it seems Heaven had destined it.—One circumstance created me a good deal of pain.—Upon receiving the summons, I had ordered the 1000*l.* to be given to the hospitals.—The gentleman who was charged with the commission, after keeping the money some time, and, what is worse, after I had told my friends, that it was done, declined the commission.—The thing came to be talked upon afterwards, in presence of the gentlemen of the law, who suggested such things as rendered it proper to delay, and at last to alter the manner of that destination.—*One instance more, of jurisprudence defeating the purposes of moral rectitude.*

Copy C A R D from Mr. S—t to Mr. H—k—f—n.

Mr. S—t presents his compliments to Mr. H—k—f—n; and, in case Mr. R—e should have omitted to send him notice, he has the pleasure to acquaint him, that, from what passed with Mr. B—, there is all the reason in the world to believe it will be accepted; to *commence as at this last Whitsunday*; and will put an end to the whole affair.

Tuesday forenoon.

Copy L E T T E R from Mr. R—e to Mr. H—k—f—n.

DEAR SIR,

I have this day received a letter from Miss H—k—f—n, in which she accepts of the offer made to her,
simply

simply and absolutely. Nothing, therefore, remains to be done, to finish the affair, but that you will settle with Mr. S—t the nature of the obligation or security to be given for the annuity; which, I hope, will be settled in the way most agreeable to your own inclination. —I have the honour to be, Dear Sir, &c.

E——, June 2d, 1777.

LETTER, Mr. H—k—f—n to Mr. R—e.

DEAR SIR,

D—se, July 19th, 1777.

I received a card from Mr. S——t on Tuesday morning last, acquainting, that you desired a meeting with me that day, at two P. M. Had Mr. S——t so pleased, he would have informed you, that it was impossible for me to meet you in the afternoon, as I had wrote him on Saturday, that I was obliged to leave the town in the morning. Nevertheless, just as I was stepping into my carriage, betwixt eleven and twelve o'clock, I received another card from him, insisting, in your name, that I should meet you. As I do not indulge myself in the liberty of *forgetting the terms of any engagement*; so, it is an invariable rule with me, never to break one, when made. I therefore considered myself as indispensibly bound to keep the appointment which I had made, and which obliged me to set out for this place. I have likewise happily concluded the business for which that engagement was made; and am now perfectly at liberty to make a new one.—If then, the business is of any importance, I beg you will let me know, and fix a day, when I will return to E—b—h on purpose, (any day betwixt the eighth and eighteenth of next month); *and direct for me, to the care of Mrs. W—r, inn-keeper at*

U u

D—se,

D—se, who will always know where to forward it to me.

Mr. S—t's second card gave me to know, that you desired that meeting, for the purpose of clearing up mistakes betwixt me and him. Believe me, Sir, there are no mistakes.—The facts were so few, and so simple, that I think it scarcely possible, that any mistake could arise.—You know, I empowered you to offer my misfortunate d—t-r an annuity of 50*l. per annum*; but not for the year preceding Whitsunday 1777. Mr. S—t gave me to know, that the offer, and the term, was agreeable to those who direct that unhappy creature. Upon this, knowing it not to be necessary to delay till the acceptance was produced in form, under her hand, I informed numbers of my friends of the thing, as a thing done. While I was doing this, on the one hand, I found that S—t, on the other hand, gave himself the liberty to say, that I wanted to retract my offer. He even insinuated it to myself, (but I believe he was drunk). Upon which I told him, that it was my opinion, that no honest man ever yet dared to form a desire of retracting his word pledged; and that it was likewise my opinion, that no honest man would allow himself to impute such a thing to his innocent neighbour.—Thus things stood when you wrote me, informing that my d—t-r had *simply and absolutely* accepted my terms; and that I had only to direct S—t to extend the deed, in the manner most agreeable to me. S—t was polite enough to open your letter, and read it, before he brought it to me.—I passed over that, and directed him to draw the bond for 50*l.* to commence from Whitsunday 1777, payable half yearly, in equal moieties, commencing the first payment at Martinmas 1777. He said he would do so, and left me. For reasons best known to himself, he thought proper not to communicate the scroll of the bond to me; but presented the bond itself, extended on stamped paper, with the terms altered to Candlemas and Lammas 1777. I asked him, why the terms were altered; and desired the

the error to be corrected. He said, he had forgot the terms. * But, to open my eyes fully, he at same time flatly refused, for his part, to correct the error.—By this, I perceived, that the error had not crept into the bond by mistake ; and I plainly told him so. Considering, at same time, that the trick related only to an affair of 12 l. 10 s. of which a misfortunate wretch was to reap the benefit, who had just then purchased a precarious annuity of 50 l. (which, probably, she will not enjoy long) at the expence of 3000 l. and the violation of every law, divine or human, I signed the bond as it was :—and, when I paid S—t for his trouble, I told him, that I was perfectly sensible to the impropriety of his conduct, as I am also to the very great impropriety of his troubling you with it.—These facts, Sir, are all in holograph, and cannot admit of a mistake :—but, as I have said above, if you think them interesting enough, I am ready to listen to you ; and shall not fail to honour your return to this.—I am, Dear Sir, &c.

You see, my friend, how some men are made.—I have never heard more on the subject, either from R—e or S—t. I returned however to town, on the 12th of the following month, and immediately gave S—t notice of it.—How brutal was it, in a case betwixt a parent and a child, for a man to do any thing to irritate either of the parties !—But it was her fate, through the whole of this affair, always to receive injuries from those whom she took indirect methods to make friends of ; and, it seems to have been the direction of Providence, that she should receive the last blow from the same hand which first led her astray.—I have learned, from what influence S—t acted this extraordinary part :—but, how far it was regular in him to act such a part, from any influence, falls to be submitted to the impartial world.

U u 2

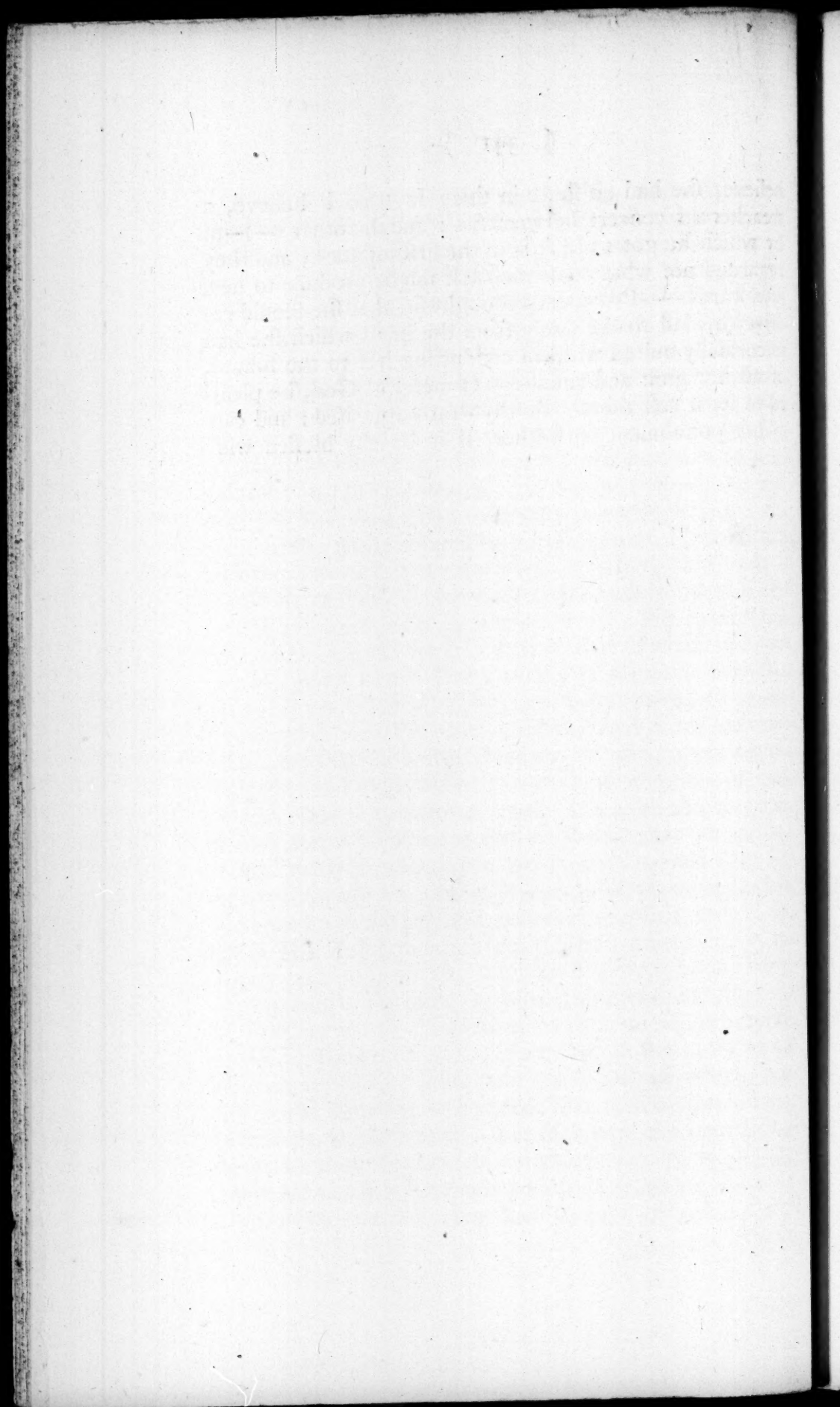
I, who

* See his own card specifying the terms, (Page 336.)

I, who knew all the parties thoroughly, was not to be deceived in any circumstance. I saw, distinctly, the aim of the v—l—n: He cared not what might become of his f—t—r, in future, provided he got any thing, however small, with her, in the interim.—He considered her, at present, as a dead weight upon what he had got with his m—t—r, unless she also could bring something into the common stock; and he made her send me a summons to alimnt her.—To punish her in part for this, I immediately ordered 1000 l. to be given to the hospitals; resolving to keep the other 2000 l. for her, and to protect her, in spite of herself. I engaged R—e to oppose the v—l—n. My defence was impregnable. After a week, R—e refused to go on, unless I would first make an offer of what the v—l—n asked, and that it should be rejected.—Shocked at this new instance, I felt it with great anguish, on her account. My eyes, however, were opened by it. I saw that Providence was totally against her.—The m—d—r of a parent, so often designed upon her side, was not to be passed so easily. I perceived, that Providence disapproved of my lenity.—I submitted to the will of Heaven in this, gave up the struggle, and empowered R—e to give her, not 30 l. or 40 l. but 50 l. with assurance, it was all she was ever to look for.—I knew, as well as R—e, that whatever I pleased to offer would not be rejected;—and thus her ruin was completed. I told R—e and S—t, nevertheless, what they were doing. I was very explicit with S—t, whom R—e sent to me, from time to time; and particularly, when I gave him the final directions about drawing the bond, repeated to him, to attend to the term at which it was to commence, as that might, otherwise, become a future bone of contention, if she came to ask her annuity before mine was paid, out of which hers only could be paid; and added, that such a circumstance I certainly would resent. Yet such was the brutality of the man, that he himself antedated her term of payment, wantonly giving this additional blow to the miserable wretch whom they had already ruined. For, I believe,

believe, she had no share in this : It was, I believe, a treacherous concert between S—t and the other v—l—n, by which he got 12 l. 10 s. in the first instance ; and they regarded not what consequence it might produce to her, afterwards.—Providence thought fit, that she should receive this last stroke solely from the hand which she had so cordially united with, in conducting her to the summit of all her guilt and ruin.—O merciful God, be pleased to let it rest there : Be thy wrath appeased ; and carry her punishment no farther, if it be thy blessed will !

LETTER,



L E T T E R,

Mr. H—K—S—N to his F R I E N D,

LETTER, Mr. H—K—S—N to a FRIEND.

October 16. 1777.

I HAD yours in course, a week ago; and, what it made me feel, is, I believe, equally above my description, and your conception.—I resolved, however, whatever pain it should cost me, for once to answer it, and fully, that my friend may never again put me to so fiery a trial. But, let this shocking subject rest in oblivion betwixt us.

The poet said well, when he wrote this distich:

“ To reasoning humankind alone belong
“ The arts to hurt themselves, by reasoning wrong.”

If we weigh things justly, we will find, that the whole of the errors and misfortunes which mankind fall into, proceed from their making wrong distinctions;—that is, from reasoning wrong.

It is vain for us to enquire, (though, you know, we have often canvassed this topic together, long ago,) why man only, of all the animals inhabiting this globe, is subjected to this misfortune, by being endowed with reason to guide his choice, if he chooses to make use of that guide, and free-will to choose whether he shall do so or not. Fatal gift! by which, we see them daily, when tempted and misled by their passions, prejudices, appetites, temporal interests, voluntarily turn away from that guide, and involve themselves in misery and distress.

X z

We

We are told, that this globe was created on purpose for man's reception, immediately after the grand rebellion of the archangel was quashed, by the expulsion of him, and all his party, from Heaven.—That man is possessed of angelical mental powers, is evident.—Perhaps, then, man is a fallen angel:—Perhaps, what is now called the human race, was formerly an inferior order of angels in the celestial choir; who, having been seduced by their leader, were considered as less criminal than he; and, therefore, when he was condemned irretrievably, the poor deluded creatures, who had been deceived by him, and drawn in to be accomplices with him, and judged less guilty upon that account; in place of being immediately banished the light for ever, as he was, were compassionately placed here, in a state of new probation, where it may still depend upon themselves, by a life of rectitude, to obtain re-admission to their former rank; and still having it in their power, but in their own free choice, as formerly, to beat the paths of rectitude or turpitude, during their pilgrimage here; under assurance, at same time, that the unalterable decrees of God, the invariable laws of nature, are constantly to take place.

This is actually the belief of the best Christian, and greatest philosopher (the C—t—s of ——— in France, and a protestant) that ever I have met with, amongst the dead or the living. She says, That when she contemplates the wisdom and goodness of God, so conspicuously manifested in all his other works, she finds it impossible for her otherwise to conceive, how a world came to be peopled with such miscreants as the human species. Wretches, who fill it with rapine, murder, calumny, breach of trust, lying, cheating, and every diabolical vice.—Wretches, with whom the thirst of gold prevails so much, that, for this, statesmen sell their country, with their integrity; churchmen violate the system of Jesus, and damn themselves, with their flocks; physicians prey upon the purses and lives of their fellow-creatures; lawyers

lawyers cozen, betray and rob their clients, of their fortunes, &c. &c.

This hypothesis of hers is singular ; and, without stopping here to examine it, I shall only say, that it were happy for society, that every individual was as much convinced of the truth of it as she is. I have read a treatise, however, by a great admirer of hers, and a disciple of the same school, written expressly to support it, from our history of the fall of man, and every subsequent part of the Christian system ;—perhaps I may one day procure you a sight of it.

It is, at least, a happy sentiment for herself. In consequence of this persuasion, her rule of conduct, like that of Heaven, is simple and uniform :—*To do no hurt to herself, or to any other person ; and, To do every good in her power to every living creature.* Her birds, her fishes, her servants, her friends, her strangers, promiscuously share her beneficence, and in proportion to their several exigencies. Never shall I forget the time, when I, a miserable invalid, was one of the number, and distinguished with particular attention, because I was a stranger, and in distress.—Temperate in her meals, carefully distinguishing between the calls of nature, and the yearnings of vitiated taste, or cravings of depraved appetite ; regular in her hours of devotion, repast, exercise, and repose ; by these means, securing to herself an uninterrupted state of good health, and equal spirits. Ever serene and gay ; nay, sometimes frolicsome and playful, though, at all times, a declared foe to dissipation and waste of time ; chearfully and constantly, in the midst of her mirth, looking forward to that period, when she shall make the blessed transition to what she believes to have been her former state.—But, when serious, which is her most natural turn,—to hear her investigate the laws of nature ; dissect the various systems of religion, politics, or philosophy ; confute their errors, expose their absurdities, or developé their paradoxes, you can no longer doubt, that it is an angel who speaks.—Thus lived Jesus upon earth.—What shall we say ?—

say?—Thus lived also Epicurus, if Gassendi deceives us not.—Such were the sentiments of the slave Epictetus; and, in fine, my friend, *so may every one live, who chooses to do so.*—

But, to return.—The law of nature, that is, the decree of the Author of nature, is, we see, *That causes shall be invariably and infallibly followed by their effects*, in moral as well as in natural agency. Thus, we actually see, that absolute predestination takes place through the whole system, and *salvo honore Divinæ Majestatis* also, notwithstanding all that the wretched casuists in divinity have said for and against the honour of the Deity, on this head.

Man, then, being a moral agent, and, at same time, endowed with free-will, is plainly possessed of a *vis causalis*; he chooses betwixt the causes which he puts in movement: But, that choice once made, and the cause produced, he cannot prevent the effect, or alter the nature of it; because, in this case, the invariable law of nature, the absolute decree of God, takes place, *viz.* That effects shall naturally and necessarily follow their causes.

What then is it which you seem to expect from me? Do you think it is in my power to overturn the laws of nature? to recal past things? to prevent the effect, after the cause has been produced; nay, by your own confession, after the effect has also taken place?

My d—t-r, you know, was early instructed in the principles of rectitude.—She trode these paths twenty years: so long was she accustomed to rectitude. Here, then, was a cause produced; of which, it is also confessed, I was the author. But I must beg of you not to lose sight, that, though I was the author of the cause, the effect depends not upon me. She was afterwards seduced to concur, and take a very active part, in a project of p—r—c—de and r—b—y, against me; and in this she likewise persisted, stedfastly and keenly, during a number of years. Heaven frustrated all her projects in this way, and forced her, at last, to abandon the pursuit:

pursuit: and, when all was over, and her heat subsided, upon a cool retrospect, the principles of rectitude, in which she had been formerly instructed, took place:—These principles, *the cause*, produced its natural effect, *remorse*; under which, you tell me, she now suffers, and her health languishes.—Heaven knows what I felt for her, in the height of her guilt:—Heaven knows what I now feel for her.—But, what can I do? Can I reverse the laws of nature? Can I recal past things? Can I relieve her?—I advised, I remonstrated, I left no mean untried to prevent her guilt, or stop the career of it: But, can I now recal it, or take away its effect?—Forbear, then, my friend, to tear up my wounds afresh, and to set them again a-bleeding, since that blood can administer no balsam to her wounds.—She is in the hands of Providence. Heaven only can administer comfort to her. Remorse leads to repentance; repentance to forgiveness: It is your province to assist her in this. I pray Heaven to aid you in it, and to crown your endeavours with success.—From me, there is nothing now to ask, nothing to fear. You know, I have forgiven her long ago; gave her bread, as a testimony of it; (and, to put her to the test, in what she had advanced, which I suspected was false, as I told her, at the time, when she said, *that she was to leave the place she was in*) and the merits of the cause to Heaven. It is there only she has her peace to make: I am long since done with it.

As to M-j-r B——, whom you mention, I must tell you, that, when he first interfered, he saw his f—t—r under the absolute power and direction of a cool, deliberate v—l—n, who, (from what she told him, in my hearing,) he saw also, was capable of projecting and perpetrating any crime; and a weak and worthless boy, his emissary, who was equally r—e and f—l, being both in a very high degree. M-j-r B——'s power over them was unquestionably such, that, had he so pleased, at that time, he could have commanded them to desist, and, consequently, prevented his f—t—r from committing those crimes, for which she now suffers the dreadful

ful pangs of remorse. He chose not to do this; but looked on, and saw them lead her, step by step, to the brink of that precipice, where, at last, R—e and S—t joined them, and hurried her down. It is not to be doubted, that they also might have saved her from going down; at least, it was certainly their duty, as men, and as Christians, to have endeavoured it: But it is not now possible for them to raise her up again, or for me to prevent her conscience from reminding her, at every instant, that she went down.

What is it, then, which you now seem to point at from me? To wish to renew a correspondence betwixt her and me, would be making a wrong distinction:—It would be, to overwhelm her daily with remorse, and me with horror—It would be, to make us both miserable—perhaps, worse.—Look forward.—What might such a state naturally be expected to produce?—You know, she still keeps up the same connexions.—She is still under the same influence.—She might, again, be prompted to repeat the same crimes.—She would have opportunity—she might perpetrate them.—Perhaps, this is the thing in view.—And would you ask of me, to be accessory in furnishing the opportunity?—Advise her, good Sir; assist her to repent of her past crimes, that she may, if possible, obtain a remission from Heaven: But let us not lead her into new temptation, by our false reasoning, and mistaken judgment of things.—After all, are you sure that you are not mistaken? I doubt, my friend, you are deceived. Alas! you do not know these confederates, as I do.—I have had long, and much experience of them all.

I shall only mention one circumstance to you, which I never can banish from my remembrance—it is always present to me. On the last of the days, when the horror of her guilt shocked me so much, that I fainted away, M—j—r M—v—l was present, and staid by me till I was somewhat recovered: But he, being engaged to dinner abroad, was obliged to leave me, while I was yet in a languishing condition, and un-

able

able to go away.—You have seen a bleeding turkey, sit rocking in a corner:—Such was precisely my case, for a long time after the M-j-r left me.—My d—t-r and her b—t—r were also in the room.—After the M-j-r went away, a deep silence ensued.—At last, I looked up, to see how they were employed; and, just at that instant, my eyes met theirs, regarding my agony with exulting pleasure; nodding towards me, and winking and smiling to one another. That circumstance opened my eyes, at last, to the vanity of my pursuit.—From that moment, I was satisfied of the impossibility of reclaiming her.—I went home, so soon as I was able to be carried out; and proceeded to settle my affairs, independent of her.—You must not forget, that I was, at this time, in such a state of health otherwise, that every body believed my recovery to be impossible.—Their exultation was, then, you see, apparently well-founded; and they believed, that it depended upon themselves, to give me the *coup de grace*, when they pleased. You may remember also, what various ways they afterwards devised, for doing this. (See the *Anecdotes*.)

Unhappy woman! Observe by what gradations she advanced in error, till the measure of her guilt became, step by step, thus superlatively great, and ended in her ruin. You know, that, at parting with her, when I went abroad, I had warned her to beware of this man: yet, no sooner was my back turned, than she threw herself into his arms, put herself entirely under the guidance of him who had already marked her his prey. He soon introduced her to intimacy with a female friend of his, whose fame had been, long before that, notoriously blasted: In this, it seems, her delicacy now suffered no shock; she did not hesitate to form this connexion in the face of the public world—and, from that moment, she seems to have lost sight of every principle.—He was several thousand pounds in debt, and depending solely upon the charitable support of a b—t—r, whom he had by that time likewise brought to feel difficulties.—To supply wants which were thus become pressing,

pressing, and without resource, plot after plot was hatched for cutting me off, and getting possession of my fortune, which would have gone immediately into his hand.—Ignorant of what was going on, during almost two years that I remained abroad, I frequently wrote to my d—t—r, with directions concerning my business: she was influenced to disobey my orders, to abuse my confidence, and to betray my interest.—Providence interposed, counteracted her, and from thenceforward seems to have turned every thing against her. Ignorant and unsuspecting as I was of all this, Heaven undertook my protection. I lived—came home—and at last made a full detection. (See the *Anecdotes*.) I privately expostulated with my d—t—r upon it, and calmly laid her duty before her.—She communicated this to her accomplices;—they, probably foreseeing danger to themselves, if she should return to a sense of her duty, though assuredly they had nothing to fear on that score, changed their batteries; and, to put it out of her power to leave them, pushed her to declare open rebellion against me. Every engine was now put in play. My ag—ts were tampered with; the blackest calumnies were invented, and emissaries employed to propagate them, for the purpose of raising a general prejudice against me in the opinion of society. They were whispered to the ears of my judges, my arbiters, and my most intimate friends. Thus oppressed, there was only Heaven left on my side; and Heaven still protected and supported me, and often turned her own weapons against herself.—Thus, when M-j-r B—— was applied to, he could have saved her, by taking off the v—l—ns who misled her. He was shocked to the highest degree with their conduct, and loudly declared his disapprobation of it;—but there he stopped: he had not power to go one step farther, which would have saved her—and they went on. Though M-j-r B—— is so much involved with his b—t—r, that their interests are known to be reciprocally one and the same; yet it is so unlike all that I have ever known of M-j-r B——, to

have

have been influenced here by interested motives, that I cannot suspect him of it : And I think it is truly misfortunate for him, that the world sees, that by these manœuvres (which he openly declared he disapproved of) he has, in the interim, got rid of the expence of a b—t—r, whom he was little able to support any longer. —But, how difficult it is for an honest man to be connected with a v—l—n, and at same time guard himself from every suspicious circumstance, or injurious imputation, I know, from sad experience.

Again, when M-j-r M—— was applied to, (by the by, he is a parent himself) instead of advising her to lay down her arms, and make peace in dutiful submission to her f-t—r, by which he might even then have saved her, he, on the contrary, actually joined in her project at that time, so far as to endeavour, in an artful, but shallow enough way, to ensnare me, and make me betray my duty ;—which, nevertheless, did not succeed with me,—(See the *Anecdotes*),—but had the effect to encourage her farther in that course, which conducted her at last to her ruin.

As to the question, Whether you shall attend the issue of your dispute before the house, or submit to arbitration ? I really must declare myself disqualified to advise you.—Let your pretensions be what they will, I am afraid you will find the issue precarious. Are you sure of the capacity and integrity of the arbiters ? Can you rely with absolute confidence upon them ? For my part, to tell you honestly my sentiments, by all the experience I have had, by all the observations I have made, I am led to suspect, that there is something in the science of jurisprudence, which is not compatible with moral rectitude : Something which tends to confound and pervert that genuine sense of right and wrong, which is originally impressed upon the mind of man, by the great Author of his existence. I can tell you (on the other hand), that however securely you may think you can rest on the integrity of one of the arbiters, you may find danger in risking your safety upon

Y y

that,

that. I knew a gentleman who was ruined by that. His whole fortune, the existence of his family depended. He was overpersuaded, altogether against his own inclination, to submit his cause to two arbiters. One was a man of reputed integrity; the other was a man of too much dissipation, to trouble his head about integrity in the matter. One was for examining into the merits of the cause; the other would not bestow the time or attention necessary for that; lost temper; swore he would never accept of an arbitration again, unless he was named sole arbiter, &c. &c. The other yielded to all this impetuosity; and they gave a decision, which carried such glaring marks of negligence, absurdity, and injustice, that though there lies, in general, no appeal from a decreet-arbitral, the gentleman who was ruined by it, was advised, that this one would reduce: but he said, *he would leave it to Heaven.—Though he felt sensibly, the ruin of his family in the mean time; yet, if Providence was so disposed, his family would find a re-establishment, and the injustice would revert on other heads.* On the other hand, I have in my possession, the signed opinion of an eminent lawyer, which, *inter alia*, has this remarkable clause: “The court will not give themselves the trouble to enquire into the minutiae of the case.”—Such a direct impeachment of the integrity of the judges, amazed me.—How can any man judge of a cause, if he will not take the trouble to enquire into the merits of it? I am not willing to entertain such an opinion of a respectable judicatory, which has our lives and fortunes daily at its mercy: but, at same time, you must allow, that such an authority is stumbling.—You see, by what I have told you, how little I am qualified to advise you.

In the case of arbitration betwixt me and the v—l—n S—te, the men who visited the estate, reported, That in the year 1768, before I began the improvements upon it, it was worth 400 l. *per annum*; that in the year 1776, after S—te had overturned the whole system of agriculture, and destroyed the improvements, it was worth

worth the same, and no more ; *but that, in the year 1772, when S—te got it, it was worth more.*—The arbiters enquired not into the value at the year 1772, but decided as was concerted. I wrote to them both : they gave me no answer. In a conversation afterwards with one of them, I mentioned the thing to him again, tho' it was then past redress. He said, S—te's agent told them, he would give me back the estate, if I pleased. I answered,—Sir, is it agreeable to equity, that if you sell me a horse (for example) worth 20 guineas, for which I give you my note, and after I have destroyed the horse, when you come to demand payment of the note, I offer you 10 guineas only, or the horse back again, if you choose?—He replied, the cases were different. It is true, they were so ; but the difference lay only in this, that the one was my case, and the other his own. It is not to be supposed, that such were really his notions of justice ; but the thing was past remedy, and he wanted to shift the subject.—Thus I lost an estate, which, to my heirs, should have been worth at least 1000 l. *per annum*. This, too, was the gentleman who had been consulted in drawing the entail, and, upon every subsequent step relating to it, was perfectly master of, and accessory to the whole transactions, and declared, upon every occasion, that S—te was the greatest v—l—n upon earth, and also, that the entail was impregnable. How then (you will say,) came I to have such injustice done me in the end ? That, indeed, is an enigma ; and the more so, that I still have a good opinion of his parts, and of his integrity.—*Eheu ! aliquando bonus dormitat Homerus.*—This story must have a key ; but where it lies, I can only guess as yet.

The arbiters must have had very singular reasons for what they did ; for they thought, if they thought at all, that they were making a present of my estate to J—n S—te. Every body believed me to be dying ; my physicians had given me over some time ; and, at the time of the decision, particularly, I had sustained such a sudden loss of blood, from some internal rupture, as set all

in a float about me ; was laid up in bed, expecting the moment of my dissolution ; and no man in his senses, would have given a single 100 l. for my annuity.—My agent was witness to this, and reported it to the arbiters. They commanded him to be silent, and, proceeding to decide, they took the estate from me, and from my adopted son, and gave it to J—n S—te, together with the stock upon it, to the value of 2000 l. ; made him also heir to my d—t-r in 1000 l. (surely, you or I have as much natural right, or legal right, to be heirs to the Emperor of Morroco, as J—n S—te could have to be heir to my d—t-r), and cut off a large sum of the arrears due by J—n S—te to me, without saying upon what article they made this defalcation. One of them told me afterwards, that it was the money which I had expended upon the boy and his governor, &c. during the time that he was my adopted son. Had they specified this in their decreet,—as the boy is alive, and will have a large fortune, it is not to be doubted, that, should he also come to have any sense of gratitude,—should he ever come to feel the principles of honesty, he would certainly repay that money to me, or mine.

What a change has Providence already made in some of these circumstances, by prolonging my life !

The universal sense of mankind is, that either the entail should have been sustained, or, if they chose to take upon them to break the entail, merely to show their power, it being a thing which no established judicatory could do, they ought to have enquired what was the value of the estate at the time of the bargain, and given me back my estate, with adequate indemnification for the damage which S—te had done to it in the interim ; or, if they would take upon them to sell the estate to S—te (which was an amazing stretch) they should, at least, have ordained the whole price to be paid, and not allowed S—te to retain and become heir to any part of the price. This, I find, is the language of common sense upon the head, which every unprejudiced person is judge of. But you see, likewise, how different from all

this was the decision which ruined me and my family.—
 I give you this anecdote: Make your own use of it:
 Weigh well the circumstances of your own situation:
 Form the best resolution you can:—Having done so, trust
 the issue to Providence.—L. 10,000 would not make up
 my loss; neither has S—te profited any thing, as yet;
 nay, if he does not change his method, and was it pos-
 sible for me to live to an old age, he also may be a
 loser.

I note, with attention, your hint, respecting a certain
 great man.—Would you know after what rate I prize
 such men? Precisely according to their goodness.—
 Offices, titles, fortunes, do not dazzle me. There is,
 my friend, but one test amongst men,—The touchstone
 of rectitude. I know no other, and stand in awe of
 none;—fear nothing but turpitude only: valuing the
 simple approbation of one good man, much above the
 friendship of twenty great ones.

You know, my friend, that, in order to exert our
 powers with propriety, and to the best advantage, we
 must begin with making a complete sacrifice to God and
 truth, of all our prejudices, of whatever kind, and
 however contracted; and, thus prepared, if we put our-
 selves under the direction of reason, that guide which
 Heaven has given us for this purpose, and proceed to
 investigate the laws of nature, which are the laws of
 God, whether in the moral or physical line, we will find
 our capacity to be very great; especially if we will ob-
 serve that noble rule of the younger Pliny,—Not so
 much *multa*, as *multum legere*.

We are not always, like parrots, to con over the
 language of the schools. Surely, there is a period in the
 life of man, when he should arrive at thinking. How
 much do I regret the labour I lost, in reading all the
 nonsense which has been wrote, from Aristotle down to
 M—b—d—o, as it came in my way; and especially these
 diabolical scenes of carnage and prostitution, which
 churchmen, impiously arrogating to themselves the name
 of Christians, have deluded the world with.—I now
 look

look back, with great disapprobation, on that folly, amongst the other errors of my past life; when, I am sensible, that, with the system of Jesus, or almost any system of ethics in my hand, and the rule *multum*, I might have come at the end of all my enquiries, in a short and easy way. So Heaven designed for us: but man will stray.—Were all the books in the world committed to the flames, but some thirty or forty volumes, man might, perhaps, become wise.

Plain in my taste, as limited in my powers, I never, at any time of my life, had fashion enough to relish poetical fiction, or to read a novel; even history, has held but the second place with me: Dry philosophy usurped always the first. Nature often exerts her powerful and secret influence, when we do not perceive her reasons.—The fact is, I believe, she was sensible, that my natural sensibility was such, as required no whitestone to sharpen its edge, nor no inflammatory food to nourish and foster the sympathetic passions; the chief use, and certain effect of all novels, and most of the works of the poets.

He does many good things:—So far I esteem him, and give him ample credit for them. But he is by temperament hasty, which lays him open to prejudices; and he is not seldom the dupe of his own vanity and rashness. I know a sly hypocrite, whose heart is double as his eye, both looking, at all times, two ways at once, who, by managing his foible, has more of his favour and confidence, than many men of more merit. You know, that, though he justly plumes himself upon some share of erudition, yet a mere scholastic pedant would carry it, with him, over a Rousseau, or an Armstrong, at any time. The reason is obvious. Carried by an early prejudice, he still moves on in his trammels, and is naturally, and, indeed, necessarily drawn to associate with such as jog at his own pace; never once considering, and, probably, never now will perceive, this shameful neglect, this base prostitution of his own talents:—On the contrary (for such is ever the effect of habits, good or bad) it gains upon him more and more, as he advances.—

Alas!

Alas! is it thus so easy to be a scholar, and so difficult to be a man?—He has, nevertheless, a proper contempt for a blockhead, and can shew it.

I leave you to sum up the extent of my estimate.—But, have you occasion for his interest?—You know his foible; make your court that way, if you dare be base enough.

Thus, we see sometimes even good men abuse themselves, in abusing things. Yet, my good friend, there is always a right and a wrong.—We used to agree also, that there must be a true faith, as there are so many false ones: but these made it difficult for us to find it out.—Difficulties do not always intimidate me: upon occasions, they are a spur to me, which, sometimes, my indolence stands in need of. This point appeared to me to be highly interesting. Besides that, you know I have some share of curiosity; and always thought it a duty incumbent upon man, not to rest upon the outside of things; but to examine and prove, beyond appearances, however plausible, in men or things, before he takes up with them.—To what other purpose are we endowed with reason?—I have, to my cost, sometimes been negligent in this, with what respected myself only; but hardly ever, where another's interest depended. You know how carefully I attended to this rule, when choosing books or companions for my d—t—r, in her younger days; and sometimes made curious enough remarks, and useful discoveries; nay, sometimes smarted a little, from the malice of some, who, judging, at first, that I had other motives than curiosity, were horridly provoked at last, to find that they had unmasked too easily.—I was, however, pretty indifferent as to that, as it enabled me, with certainty, to fix upon proper associations for her, amongst those with whom she was likely to have much intercourse as she grew up.—Alas! how different was her caution, in the associations she formed for herself soon after?—and how dismal the consequences to herself?—But, to return.—The loss of my health, at so early a period in life, cutting me off, in a great measure,

measure, from the amusements which generally fill up the vacant hours of men at that age—and the contempt which I always had for pursuits which lead merely to the acquisition of money, that Mammon of universal homage, upon whose altars men daily sacrifice truth, justice, honour and honesty :—These circumstances furnished me with ample leisure.—Amongst other researches, I did not lose sight of this one.—See, then, in short abstract, the result of my enquiries upon this head.—Perhaps, some would honestly consider it as the candid and impartial investigation of a rational man ;—perhaps some, the reveries of an anchorite ;—perhaps some, the ravings of a hypochondriac.—I am indifferent :—You may call it what you please :—I found it a labyrinth, and was often in danger of losing my thread. And besides, I met with many interruptions, chiefly when I lived in the country, from want of access to such books as were necessary to assist me.—You are now to judge, how I got out at last.

Not to go back to the darker period of the Mosaic history, but to come, at once, into the light—it is universally acknowledged, that Jesus appeared upon earth.—Jewish historians relate it.—Roman idolaters bear testimony.—Mahometans admit him a prophet.—Christians adore him.—He moved in a narrow circle.—He taught rectitude, not by trope and syllogism, but by practice and example.—He was crucified.—His disciples propagated his system to distant regions.—A Christian church arose.—Here comes our old question, then, *Where is it now?*—It is to be hoped, there are still many good Christians : but we must look for the genuine system, only in the breasts of individuals. It is now no where to be found in any political establishment. It subsisted but a short time in purity. Men soon began to fabricate creeds : And, besides the apostles creed, which was general amongst them, almost every bishop gave out a creed of his own to his separate flock—and all expressed in incomprehensible terms. I could name you a score of these creeds.—The proselytes to the Socratic system
had

had amongst them some abstracted ideas of spirit, which they attempted metaphysically to define. The Platonic and Aristotelian schools taught ideal systems, and metaphysical subtilties :—the Christian fathers were, many of them, of these schools.

Lucian the Martyr, in the third century, first obscurely hinted the notion of Trinity in Unity, and Unity in Trinity. Men, just at that time running madly after metaphysical quibbles, caught greedily at the novelty. It was presently adopted, and unintelligibly defined. The words *substance*, *essence*, *person*, were tortured in the same alembic.—Plato had adopted from his master the idea of spirit. His disciples incomprehensibly defined it. Matter was also defined, and in a manner equally absurd and unintelligible. Disputes, of course, became endless. At last, the inexplicable Homousian doctrine was broached :—and Arius and Athanasius fairly split the church in two. The amazing composition, known by the name of the Athanasian creed (though not composed by him, who was dead some time before) afterwards became the test of the western church ; as the Arian creed became that of the eastern. Anathemas were now also, and for the first time, invented, and tacked to the creeds. And, ever since that period, it has been as easy for churchmen to put on the armour of God, and wield the thunder of Heaven, as it is for you and I to carry fustian coats, and handle our canes.—New articles were daily added to the creeds, and all enforced, in every church and sect, by anathemas.—The voluptuous impostor Mahomet first hatched a certain conceit, suited to his paradise*. It was not till twelve centuries after the ascension, that the Christian croisaders found it in Asia, imported it to Europe, and adopted it.—Take in *transubstantiation*—*worship to the mother of God*—*worship to saints*—*infallibility*—with its child, *indulgences* ; which again split the western church in

* The immaculate conception, long the subject of a furious and shameful controversy in the Christian church.

two, &c. &c. And you know what has been done by later sectaries, on the heads of *predestination*, of *grace*, of *election*, of *reprobation*, &c. &c.—How astonishing! to find, that Christian creeds became gradually a medley of Judaism, Mahometanism, idolatry, blasphemy, and nonsense. Read church history—examine religious controversy:—it will petrify you. View the disputants, armed with fire and sword, with racks and gibbets, wallowing in blood, delighting in murder and massacre:—Are they men, or devils?—disciples of the meek and humble Jesus, or of Satan? We must except, however, the dispute betwixt Leibnitz and Bossuet: it, indeed, has more peculiarities than one—it was truly important:—the fate of the protestant church, then in infancy, depended; it was carried on with decency; and, what is not less singular, the priest has, I think, rather the better of the philosopher, who took his ground so ill at the beginning, that, had not the protestant princes, actuated by other than religious motives, drawn their swords, and cut the knots—it is hard to say on which side the end might have slipped at last. What a chaos!—Shall a second Messiah descend, to dissipate the confusion?—No. Man deserves it not; neither is it necessary.—For, if we turn away from these horrid scenes, and look up to the original, our duty is so obvious, that we cannot mistake it.—It is within the reach of the meanest capacity; he who runs may read it:—A child may put it in practice; a woman define it in two short axioms; and beautifully teach it, by her own example*.

Amongst

* What has been said here, on the subject of religion, may, perhaps, seem bold to such as never have made any enquiries in this way; but they may see much of it vouched by a clergyman of the church of England: And it seems, from the candour and integrity of this worthy pastor, not improbable, that, had he, in the course of his enquiries after truth, met with some books, which, it seems, he has not seen, he would have said all that has been said here, "and more, as well as to much better purpose. (See an attempt to explain the words *Reason*, *Substance*, *Person*, *Creeds*, &c. by a presbyter of the church of England.) This little book is a treasure, which no true Christian should be without.

Amongst the various catechisms dispersed over Europe,—should any man take it into his head to add one to the number, and begin it thus:—*Qu.* Has any man, or aggregate of men, the power to dispense damnation, or deification? *Ans.* No. *Qu.* How many different Christian symbols have been consecrated, and established, under the pain of damnation? *Ans.* Fifty. *Qu.* Are all these creeds right? *Ans.* Not one of them. *Qu.* How then shall I find out a right one? *Ans.* Where you can.—Examine the New Testament; investigate the true spirit of the system of Jesus; distinguish it from the whimsical, the absurd, the interested, the impious doctrine of commentators—I say, should any man, making a candid and impartial use of the powers with which Heaven has endowed man, go on in this way, and guard himself against prejudice—he would, I believe, find small difficulty, in discovering a symbol, which need not amount to thirty-nine, or forty-six articles.

Our reformers bungled their work—And how could it be otherwise? Many of them had not, then, altogether got the better of their early prejudices.—They had very different private biases.—The wonder was, that they did not fall out. Such men were not used to agree about plain and simple truth. Political reasons, however, constrained them, just at this juncture, to smother their heart-burnings; and, for the first time, to imitate the example of philosophers, in preserving decency. They compromised matters amongst themselves; and, not being able to agree about plain truth, they settled upon unintelligible terms, and gave us a hodge-podge of Popery, Lutheranism, Calvinism, Arminianism, all jumbled together:—and thus it stands.—However, many of the clergy, especially of the Gallican and Protestant churches, are now become philosophers in good earnest.—Shall we conclude, from this, that the world is mended?—The world has been much the same, in all ages, and will continue so, notwithstanding.—The common herd of men follow, what they call *business*—a technical term, which may often be defined, fraud, rapine,

pine, or any species of villany.—Does not all mankind agree, that this is almost without exception in some classes?—The ruin of that estate, which once was mine, and is now S—te's, was truly owing, at first, to a breach of trust in one v—l—n, whom I had employed for the purpose of preventing it; who knew, that a single protest from him, was all that was necessary;—and I had enjoined him, particularly, to attend to this circumstance.—And women!—Hush, my friend! spare the gentle sex.—Hah! do you cite Pope?—He was a snarling cur.—Do you quote Rousseau,—“ No modest woman ever yet read a romance?”—With all his penetration, it is to be hoped, he is too rigid.—What, otherwise, shall we do with all our females?—Nay, do not insist.—Stop, you churl;—and turn, with them, to Sterne.—Confess, that Nature, in the distribution of her various gifts, has bestowed the finest feelings upon this sex; and, by consequence, the higher sentiment: for these two move hand in hand, and in exact proportion, where education is properly attended to. This makes them infinitely more amiable than men.—What savages, what brutes are men, with their blunter organs, when *they* do not come in with *their* sensibility and delicacy, to polish and humanize them? On the other hand, view what they are, when they become loose, and lay down the distinguishing characteristic peculiar to their sex.—Say, is there, on earth, another monster, so disgusting, as a woman, with the manners, the assurance, the immodest expressions, of men? And, if it be so, that it is rare to find a Plato amongst them, —it is still more so, to find an Epictetus amongst us. Yet, believe me, both are to be found; and, perhaps, not so seldom as is generally thought. If you forget the man of Ross, then turn to Armstrong, and to the C—t—fs, for living examples—Or, if they have a bias to the system of Epicurus, you must allow, it is the second best.—(See what Gassendi has recovered of him.)—Amongst all the ancient philosophers, who had only the light of reason to guide them, he came nearest the truth:

truth: and, you know, no system has been so much abused, none so much adulterated, if we except the Christian one, which is truth itself, and, therefore, has been still more corrupted.—What diabolical wretches, (shall we say with the C—t—fs,) are men!—Not satisfied with turning good to bad, they always set themselves, as it were, with double keenness, to turn best to worst.—Great God! Why is it thus possible for man to err, and to become miserable?—But what do I say?—Man is made *rational*; and, therefore, *free*. It is the exalted prerogative of his nature, to examine, and to judge, and freely to choose, how he employs his powers.—Every consequence, then, is justly his own.—Nay, is it not, daily, his boast, and misfortune, that he chooses freely, how and when he exerts this prerogative?—Listen to the bold regicide, Stuart of Athole. When he was asked, in the midst of his tortures, How he dared to embrue his hands in the sacred blood of Majesty?—*Dared!* (*replied he*) *place me in Heaven, I dare jump down to hell!*—Here was freedom and courage, nobly claimed and asserted at once; and not less shockingly applied, than in the case we have been talking of.—To laugh, my friend, at the agony of any living creature! but to sport with, deliberately to attack the life of a parent!—what enchantment,—what infatuation, could bring her to this? Do you mention a m—t—r, or a b—t—r? She had much more sense than them both, and had been very differently educated.—How, then, could a m—t—r or a b—t—r make her, at the age of twenty-five, choose to associate with idiots or prostitutes, if she had not of herself been willing? Be assured, she was not so tractable at that time of life, nor for some time before it. And suppose, if you will, the parent to be the greatest monster—neither will that justify the thing. And I freely appeal to God and man—you yourself are a witness—who were not witnesses?—I did not live in a desert;—I appeal even to herself; and, in the face of Heaven, she cannot, with truth, utter the shadow of a charge against me, but one, which she told me, upon an occasion, she never would forgive, *viz.*
That

That I had put my entail by her ; which I did to save her from beggary, judging myself to be then just a-dying, and knowing well into whose hands she would put herself and my fortune :—for she was of age, and I could not appoint tutors to her : neither could I, with open eyes, see this, and die in peace, without preventing it. And, setting all this aside—Had I not a right to dispose of my own estate, and secure my paternal inheritance, in any way that was most agreeable to me, and in the only way, thus circumstanced, that it was possible for me to do it ? Such was my care of her, at same time, that, in it, I provided for her, in the only sure way to save her from being one day probably reduced to want the necessaries of life, by giving her an annuity, and an ample one.—Did I deserve to be put to d—h for all this ? You see, however, how she endeavoured to execute her threatened vengeance.—Here, indeed, was the m—t—r to a T. And by what a chain of miracles did Heaven preserve me !—not for any desert of mine ; I am not so erroneously presumptive as to think so ; but for the purpose of frustrating malice ; and to shew them, how He, when he pleases, can confound the best concerted, and deepest laid plots of wickedness.—I appeal to God, my judge, and my witness, for the discharge of my duty, to the utmost of my weak powers, towards that child, as a parent, and as a Christian, from her birth, to the hour that she made the last leap,—to the moment that R—e and S—t tossed her down ; and, even then, I would have bestowed my last shilling to have saved her.—But this, you will say, would have been no great sacrifice from me, who never valued a shilling, but for the purpose of bestowing it upon her, or any other whom Providence presented to me, and who stood in need of it.—All that the v—l—n would have got by my death at this time, was reduced to 3000 l.—it is since gone to better purposes. We know, that he, at any time of his life, would have committed any crime, for the sixtieth part of that sum, where he could do it, as in this case, with safety of his neck : but I cannot, even now, believe, that my d—t—r has any such

such value for money. You know what pains I took to inspire her with a just contempt for money, for dress, for places of dissipation, &c. &c. I have some reason to believe, that these impressions are not, even now, altogether defaced with her.—You know also, how liberally, on the other hand, I indulged her in books, in horses, in music, and in every thing that could contribute to her health and real improvement.—When I was first ordered abroad, you saw what a library I purchased, all at once, for her improvement during my absence :—you know how it was chosen :—it can also speak for itself ; it is now again in my custody ; with many other evidences.—Appeal may be made on earth, as it has already been made in Heaven.—At the end of two years, I returned :—I saw, alas ! how little she had profited, and how much she was altered. I judged this last to proceed from her unavoidable connexion with an improper companion.—My first idea was, to put an end to it : I made an attempt,—I carried her off.—Upon nearer observation, I perceived she was irrecoverably tainted :—She could dissemble, she could equivocate ;—it even cost her nothing to go further upon occasions—(See the *Anecdotes* for proofs of all this.)—Heaven knows what I felt :—I was obliged to alter my whole plan, and quickly.—I was so ill at that time, that, to all appearance, I was dying fast.—To preserve what remained, and had descended to me, of the fortune of my ancestors, and to secure her in bread, (both which I saw would otherwise be lost), I made my entail. My situation would not permit me to stay in this country ; I was ordered away again ; when, I believe, my physicians had no expectation that ever I would return.—At the end of two years, however, I came back ; and you have seen the reception then prepared for me.

What a world do we live in ! We need but half open our eyes, to see how states and empires rise and fall with the passions and prejudices of men.—Mark the impending danger of Britain ; and, *parvis componere magnis*, how I was stripped of my paternal inheritance.—Naked shall I go out of this world ;—all of mine dies with me ;—

nor

nor child, nor fortune, to leave behind.—This the consequence of one false step, to which I was seduced, by which I was entrapped at my first setting out.—But such has been the will of Heaven—and I am resigned.

Felicitate me, my friend :—My horrid connection is, you know, totally dissolved, and without a shadow of blame upon my side : You know, likewise, during what a lifetime I had supported it in silence ; such was my delicacy.—I have also fallen upon ways and means to break off most of those trifling, and therefore, to me, disagreeable correspondences, which the world abounds in.—Here, indeed, I use little ceremony.—Without an unjustifiable neglect, however, where the ties of blood have place, my commerce is mostly with the dead, and a few of the living, of which number I trust you will always make one. Thus I have, at last, a probable chance to die in peace. I flatter myself also, that this period approaches fast, as I am in great and continual distress ; and, I presume, that the purposes of Providence, in miraculously protracting my life hitherto, are likewise fulfilled.—My manuscripts, lest I should not have time to burn them myself, I have left to you for that purpose.—It will give me pleasure to see you, if your business brings you this way : I do not, however, ask you to come on purpose.—I conclude, where, you know, I began, almost thirty years ago, with my old distich—

“ How empty learning, and how vain is art,

“ But as they guide through life, and mend the heart !”

Believe me, my friend, amongst all the arts and sciences, about which we make such a pother, there are only two which are truly interesting to us :—*Physiology*, which teaches to regulate the machine, which it is our duty to tune to harmony, during our short pilgrimage here ; and *Psychology*, which opens the way to our future existence, and which, every thing leads to convince us, will be of much longer duration. All, besides, is vanity, and a misapplication of our time, and of our powers, which are great, in proportion as we please to exert

exert them. Example—a Newton—a Napier—a Smith—or, if you will—an Aristotle, with his nonsense—a Mirabaud—or, a Machiavel. Believe me to be also sincerely yours, till my shattered and broken organization beats its last irregular pulsation—and beyond that also, I firmly hope.—

SO HELP ME TO DISTINGUISH TRUTH FROM FALSHOOD, RECTITUDE FROM ERROR, O THOU ETERNAL FIRST MOVER, AUTHOR OF NATURE, AND OF NATURE'S LAWS, BY WHICH CHIEFLY WE ARE ENABLED TO DESCRIBE THEE. WHATEVER MAY BE THY OWN, TO ME, INCOMPREHENSIBLE NATURE; THIS I EASILY PERCEIVE, THAT THOU MUST EXIST, AND THAT TO THEE MY HOMAGE IS DUE; THAT TO THY BOUNTY, I OWE EVERY GIFT; TO THEE MY HUMBLE GRATITUDE OUGHT TO BE ADDRESSED; AND FROM THY UNERRING JUDGMENT, I AM TO EXPECT TO RECEIVE THE EXACT REWARD OR PUNISHMENT OF MY OWN DESERT. BUT THOU HAST ALSO, COMFORTABLY, BY THY MESSIAH, TOLD US THIS; AND THAT THOU WILT MERCIFULLY ACCEPT THE WILL FOR THE DEED, FROM THY WEAK AND LIMITED CREATURES; AND THAT A CLEAR CONSCIENCE, WHERE WE CAN DO NO MORE, WILL EFFECTUALLY RECOMMEND US TO THY FAVOUR AND ACQUITTANCE:—AND THAT, THEREFORE, WE MAY PATIENTLY, AND EVEN CHEERFULLY GO ON, NOTWITHSTANDING WHATEVER RUBS WE MAY MEET WITH IN OUR JOURNEY, SINCE THOU HAST ALSO PUT THIS LAST ENTIRELY IN OUR POWER.—
THY WILL BE DONE THEN. — — — — —

How much, and now more than ever, is it to be regretted, that those vested with authority, in the Christian countries, do not think of revising their catechisms, and confessions of faith, and making them, at least, consistent with themselves, and with common sense; especially when they see Deism daily encreasing amongst them, infomuch that many philosophers openly avow it, and even churchmen are suspected of being led into it, from the palpable contradictions they find in their symbols, and which it is impossible for any man to admit, having the least use of reason!

What hinders our legislators and divines, to have recourse to the spirit of truth, to be found in the original, and to purge their creeds and catechisms, of such articles as are palpably contradictory to one another,—and, consequently, the true source of all this error and confusion?

Why do they still continue to retain a mixture of Judaism and Christianity, jumbled together, in such a manner, as absolutely to destroy one another, and lead some (who, I persuade myself, are not otherwise ill-disposed) to reject both?

The decalogue expressly enjoins us to worship one God, and him only.—

Christians deify men and women, and daily offer prayers to them.

Jesus appeared upon earth, for the purpose of reclaiming sinners, *that they might be saved*.

Christian catechisms tell us, that this affair was settled long before, by an absolute and irrevokable decree of election of some, and reprobation of others, without exception of one of all the human species; and, consequently—that his coming was, to all intents and purposes, vain.—

The

The Mosaic history tells us, *that God raised the whole human species from a nursery of one man and one woman.—The Chrystian symbols forbid incest.—*

This last is certainly most agreeable to the social state in which Heaven has placed us here, and, therefore, I think most likely to be right. And, besides, ancient history is often figurative in its expressions; and, in speaking of mankind, might include the whole species, under the idea of one man, and one woman, though descended of many: for, certainly, it was as easy for God, at the beginning, to call twenty, or twenty thousand pairs into existence, as one pair only. And we see some Christian churches dispense with this rule, which I think is rash, because not necessary, though they have the sanction of Judaic tradition for it.—However this be, one thing is certain, that He, who is perfect, can never be in contradiction with Himself; and, since both cannot be admitted, we ought certainly to obviate the contradiction.

Endless is this contrast between the two systems, which we jumble together, to the ruin of ourselves and of society. Meantime, my friend, and while things stand in so odd a form, let us, as individuals, remember the words of Jesus upon a similar occasion, and make the proper application—“*Yea, and why, even of yourselves, judge ye not what is right?*” Here is an appeal to reason, which does not admit of a cavil.—This, then, is our duty,

I must give you a few anecdotes more, to shew you the world as it goes. There is a gentleman, who has had an active hand in advising many steps against me, whom I saved from a ruin very similar to my own, and from the same confederacy. One of his family, and innocent, was duped, under the notion of becoming a w-ife: my heart bled for her:—Another, of continuing to be — — — — — a favourite. Both were to have gone

one way; for the v—l—n had his eye upon both their fortunes, and both would have been equally deceived.

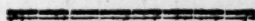
All the confederates had wormed themselves into the favour of the old man. The plot was carried on under his nose, and, as it were, in his bosom. Just when it was ready to burst upon his head, I gave him notice, and he made haste to escape the explosion. You shall see this; for I am careful in doing my duty, to second the views of Providence, by preserving vouchers of every kind:—and, for fear of accidents by fire, or otherwise, I distribute copies, different ways, for security.—In all the history of mankind, there are few scenes to be met with, so dark, so atrocious, as that which has fallen to my share to unravel; and, besides, things are not over yet; for new inventions are daily formed against me:—but I am upon my guard; and I have such an absolute confidence in Providence, that I am likewise tranquil.—How deplorable would this man's situation have been now, but for me? Had the plot succeeded,—and it was upon the very point of execution;—aged though he be,—yet, had his life stood across the views upon his money one day too long, his jeopardy would have been no less than mine has been.—Judge, my friend, what I have felt, to see a child, which I had reared with so much care and attention, engaged in so many horrid scenes. But He, who knows the integrity of my heart, supports me; and I submit to His will.—I am told she has been engaged since, upon another plot of the same kind, and against a bosom companion of her own. But this was vain:—the person had too much discernment, and too much good sense, to be so taken in.

Marriage, my friend, is a matter of such importance, happiness in this life absolutely depending on it, and, I believe, often also that of the next,—that I cannot have a good opinion of any who make a business of the match-making trade.—You know what you have often heard me say to my d—t—r, on the subject of this, as it is now become, dangerous lottery:—You know, that such was my partial regard for her particular happiness, that

I wished

I wished to inspire her with a prejudice against it, that she might never put her happiness in the power of any person whatever; though you know also, that I always told her, that I never would cross her own inclination in that matter, and also taught her, that she was by no means, in any event, to consider herself as entitled to be exempted from her duty towards society, which she might fulfil, by rearing up as many orphans as she could, which would otherwise be lost to society. And you saw me, upon this principle, put an orphan into her hands, to which, under my eye, she actually discharged all the duties of a real mother, long before she was of age enough herself to become a natural one; and, some time after, you know I likewise put a second into her hand, a near connexion of her own.—Alas for the unfortunate children!—Such is almost always the force of example above precept * * * * *

It was impossible to guard them from contracting very bad habits. * * * * *



See, my friend, what mankind is come to, when money is in the question. It seems it is an established axiom, that every principle must vanish before that idol. If money is in one scale, you may throw what you will into the other:—all is chaff, all is nothing with them. I am often officiously told, that it was simple in me to give 50 l.; that no judicatory could have compelled me, &c. &c. In vain do I answer, That I knew all this, as well as they; and that the whole difference lies betwixt their principles and mine; that I value 50 l. as much as they do five straws; that, notwithstanding all that my d—t—r has done, they have forgotten that she still was my d—t—r; that, if I had not supplied her, who else was to do it? how otherways would she have it in her power to give up with wrong associations? how else was

it to depend upon herself, whether she should be exposed to numberless dangers, which, by this means, she is enabled to avoid, if she pleases?—You have seen, that she would have been glad of 40 l.; but I, who know the world better than she, knew that 40 l. was too little, and therefore I gave her 50 l.

There is a lady, with whom I have been long acquainted: Her family and mine had been long in a friendly correspondence. One time that I was in town, (I believe it may be fifteen years ago) and had gone in an evening to pay my respects to this lady, her husband was at L—d—n; and I knew she was at home. I had met a child of hers, whom she had sent to pass the evening abroad, and who told me, that her Mamma was at home; and politely added, that she was sure she would be glad to see me. When I called, however, she was denied to me. I was a little surprised. The servant knew me well; and the lady never in her life had been denied to me before. In my way going out through a darkish sort of a passage, I met a gentleman, wrapt up in a cloak, going in. The gentleman was a particular acquaintance of mine; and, wondering to see him without a chair in so bad a night, for it rained, and the streets were very dirty, I was just going to say so to him, when, lo! he pulled up his cloak about his face, and brushed past me. I confess, my curiosity was impertinent enough to go back to the bottom of the staircase, and hear him admitted; but, from that day to this, never did I breathe the thing to any person living, excepting once to my w—fe. When I went home at the time when it happened, telling her, that I had not seen such a lady, I also told her how it fell out; but without making any comment upon it. She, I suppose, upon a late occasion, to serve purposes of her own, told the thing to
the

the lady ; and this I take to be the true key to all the malice which has lately been vomited out against me by a woman, who, upon various other occasions, and, with truth, has acknowledged herself to be under particular obligations to me.

After all, what is in it? Nothing more, than that they two had appointed that evening for playing at piquet together, and did not choose to be interrupted, or to take in a third person to their party ; and that a malicious woman, in telling it over at a very distant period, could dress it in any colours she pleased.

Whatever liberties the ladies are pleased to take with one another, in such cases, and in which we know they are often not scrupulous, it is altogether unbecoming in a man to do so. Man does not act without a motive, 'tis true. When we see people act thus, or thus, that they have their reasons, is certain ; but when these reasons are unknown to us, shall we substitute reasons of our own, to explain their conduct? reasons merely conjectural, perhaps, injurious? Surely, not. This privilege is, they say, by courtesy, assigned to old maids. Who is the man that affects that character? What title, then, can any man pretend, for usurping upon their prerogative in this, unless you except such creatures as G——e C—p—r, who can hardly be ranked in any class?

Yet cases do occur in life, where it is possible to carry this delicacy too far. I shall give you some instances of this, which have fallen under my observation. The parties are, many of them, now alive, and the histories publicly known in the societies where they happened, and where you may have them vouched when you please. I have so long accustomed myself to take nothing upon trust, and to found only upon experiments, or attestable facts, in all my enquiries, that I have contracted an aversion to every thing which carries the appearance of speculation : I must, therefore, be silent, or you must indulge me in producing my vouchers, though it should render my narration somewhat tedious.

Clitander,

Clitander, a gentleman of family and fortune, being disposed to marry, paid his addresses to Cleopatra, a daughter of a neighbouring family. Every thing in this proposed match, was so extremely suitable, that it was soon agreed upon: A day was fixed for the wedding: A few friends were convened at her mother's house (her father was dead), and the parson appointed against the evening. After dinner, the company had retired to their several apartments to dress for the ceremony. Clitander having been somewhat expeditious, returned first to the public room, and finding none of the company there, he stole quietly to his bride's chamber, to assist at her toilet; and, softly opening the door, judge what was his consternation, when he saw her on the bed, in the warmest embraces of her footman! Yet, such was his command of himself, such his delicacy towards a woman, who had possessed his whole affection but the instant before, and such his regard for her family, that he made not the least noise, but retiring, mounted his horse, went home to his own house, and ordered his equipage to follow him. The company assembled soon after,—the parson arrived: but, lo! the bridegroom was fled, and without leaving any apology. Every thing was now said of Clitander: he was whimsical, he was capricious, he was a scoundrel, a rascal, a villain, &c. &c. Some of his friends went to expostulate with him upon the oddness of his conduct: Clitander was mute; all gave him up; the whole world joined in condemning him. In about a twelvemonth after this, Lifus, (Cleopatra's brother) came home from his travels, and being informed of the flight which Clitander had put upon his sister, he sent him a challenge: They met; Clitander wounded him, disarmed him, gave him his life, and told him the secret. This unexampled generosity of Clitander's proceedings, bound him to him for ever. They became inseparable companions; and the secret remained buried in their bosoms. About three years after, another gentleman made his addresses to Cleopatra, and married her. Now she threw off all restraint;

restraint; she made advances to almost every man she saw; her gallantry became notorious; her husband detected her at last, and had her divorced in the most disgraceful manner: and then Lifus did justice to Clitander, by telling his story to the whole world.—These people are, I believe, at this moment all alive, in the neighbouring kingdom, where the thing happened, and where thousands will confirm it to you.

Theophilus carried his delicacy still farther; and it produced, proportionally, worse consequences. Theophilus was, by nature, a man of the most delicate feelings: Such was his sensibility, that he was always ready to sacrifice himself and his own interest to gratify the desires, or supply the wants of those who solicited him: And though he was often sensible of his being duped by designing people, who applied to him merely from the knowledge which they had of his sympathy and facility, and afterwards repaid him with the highest marks of ingratitude; yet he never sought to correct himself in this, or to shut his heart against the impulses of his natural philanthropy. He had finished his studies at the university, while he was as yet but the age of a boy; and going directly from thence to the East Indies, where his voyage took up almost four years, when he returned to his father's house in the country, he had hardly ever seen a lady: he was quite a novice,—quite a stranger to the female world. Being young, and not ill-favoured, Xantippe, a widow lady in his father's neighbourhood, fixed her eye upon him; she conceived, or pretended, the most violent love for him. Theophilus gratified her passion. She pushed him farther. Theophilus yielded in this also; he sacrificed himself, and married her. Xantippe had been long hackneyed in all the paths of gallantry; and Theophilus discovered this soon after his marriage, in the following manner.

Xantippe had a sister, named Bellona, whom Theophilus had invited to his house, upon his marriage. The two sisters were both very ill tempered women, and very imprudent,—as you will see by this example. One morning, the two sisters fell out, as was very usual with them: they were scolding like Billingsgates, when Theophilus came in upon them, and they had heated one another to such a degree, that his presence had no influence upon them. They went on; they said the most shocking things they could recollect of one another, through all their past lives; they reproached one another with numberless levities; named various men, and condescended upon many circumstances. Tired at last, they gave in, and tranquillity succeeded. But Theophilus had got much subject for recollection. Reflecting upon all that he had heard, it was plain to him, that if what Bellona had said was true, his wife was a common strumpet; and, on the other hand, if what Xantippe had said was true, Bellona was little better. Theophilus was, in fact, a stranger to both the ladies; he was a stranger in the country; he was a stranger to all about him. Amongst the men whom Bellona had named, was Cleobulus, one who had a neighbouring estate, where he often came; and, upon these occasions, had been a frequent visiter of the ladies, before Theophilus's marriage. He thought it prudent, in the mean time, to break off correspondence with him, and found means to do so. But, how to get his doubts cleared up, was the question. Who would now be explicit with him upon such heads, considering his connexion? Theophilus made a visit to his father Theophrastus, and, under pretence of informing himself of the different characters of all the people in the society of which he was also now become a fixed member, he proceeded, by degrees, to ask him many questions about his wife and her sisters. Theophrastus, who was a man of prudence and penetration, saw his drift, and had even, by that time, penetrated into the secret state of his mind; gave evasive answers, and sought to wave the subject. Theophilus,

philus, nevertheless, persisted, and told him he had reasons. Theophrastus finding that he could not make him desist from his importunities, replied, tartly,—Sir, I am no retailer of tittle-tattle; you know, you did not consult me about your marriage; why, then, do you now come to teaze me with questions about your wife? If you have brewed well, you will bake the better; and if you can get your wife to conduct herself with prudence, the better will be yours. Theophilus took hold of this, and repeating the words, *conduct herself with prudence*, pressed an explanation; saying, He was sure there was something under that, especially coming from a man of his character, and upon such an occasion. Sir, said Theophrastus, I tell you I know nothing particularly of your wife; but the way in which she ruined her daughter, made much noise in this country, and exposed her to much censure. Theophilus urged to know the particulars. It would seem, said Theophrastus, that Xantippe has something particular in her way, and is not at all times so circumspect as she ought to be. When she got the account of her late husband's death, her affliction was such, that, for a long time, she could not permit the usual visits of condolence from any of the neighbourhood—not even the parson was admitted; but, at same time, a handsome young fellow, a nephew of his, and a soldier of fortune, was constantly admitted. The mouth of the country opened aloud: But the young fellow, it seems, had been sworn at Highgate: He carried off her daughter, a pretty baby, just entered her teens, with a considerable fortune; and left the widow to console herself in the best manner she could. This hint from Theophrastus, and in the way in which it was given, required no farther comment. Theophilus was satisfied. But, soon after, he had his eyes fully opened, if farther conviction was necessary. Xantippe parted with child; and the doctor innocently discovered to Theophilus, that it was of an age much prior to the date of his marriage; the doctor joking him upon it, and not doubting that

Theophilus was the father. Theophilus, who knew, from circumstances, that it could not be his at that age, now saw the whole extent of his misfortune, and that it was without remedy.

As, besides his natural sensibility, which was uncommonly great, Theophilus had also, at same time, the most rigid principles, in regard to moral obligations of every kind, it is not to be wondered at, that he felt extremely upon this occasion. He now loathed and detested the prostitute who had thus deceived and imposed upon him, and plunged him in misery, without hopes. Yet, such was his delicacy, not to give room for speculation, that though he could not bear to come near her, and shuddered if she approached him, he did not take a separate bed, till the loss of his health furnished an excuse for it. Nature could not long support such a state. Theophilus was observed to become pensive, melancholy, absent in company, callous to all merriment; and nothing could force a smile from him. He now had the additional comfort also of seeing Xantippe throw out the same allurements, give the same hints, and make use of the very same expressions to almost every man that came in her way, which she had used towards himself when she first seduced him. But this gave him the smallest concern; as, besides the check of his presence, she was actually so much upon the decline of life, that her pains in that way were evidently lost; or, when she pushed them too far, served only to provoke disgust with many to whom they were directed.

Several months had now passed in this way, when, one day, Theophrastus being at his son's house, with other company, and in glee, said, jockingly, to Xantippe, that he thought she was long of making him a grandfather; and added, by way of compliment, that he longed to see it. This hint was afterwards several times repeated by Bellona; and Xantippe, who had no scruples, though she knew well, by that time, that Theophilus would not, resolved that she would. Soon after this, one day, when Theophilus, who now affected solitude only,

only, and, for that purpose, passed much of his time in the fields with his dog and his gun, had gone to some distance from home, Cleobulus, who was in the country, and had seen him, popped into Theophilus's house, was shut up an hour with Xantippe in her bed-chamber, and went off again before Theophilus came home to dinner. Florinda, Xantippe's daughter, with a nurse and child of hers, were living at that time in Theophilus's house. Florinda had a singular confidence in Theophilus, and used to communicate her sentiments to him with freedom upon all occasions. When Theophilus went in, Florinda being in the dining-room alone, Theophilus, said she, the world says that Cleobulus is a well-bred man; but, for my share, I think he is the worst bred man I ever saw: and you shall be judge. Do you know, said she, soon after you went out this morning, Cleobulus came in. I was in the dining-room alone, at my work. Though he knows me very well, and had not seen me for a long time before, and was intimate with my husband formerly, he never asked me for him; was scarcely civil to myself, but, as if I had been a servant, asked hastily for my mother; said, he wanted to speak with her; and she coming in, they went into her bed-room, where he staid a complete hour; and, when he came out again, was seemingly in the same hurry; brushed past me in a neglectful manner, and went off. Did you ever hear of such rudeness? Truly, Florinda, said Theophilus, I cannot deny but that his hurry seems to have got the better of his politeness, upon this occasion: and, to wave the discourse, he rung for dinner. After dinner, however, he marked the circumstances, and the day, in his pocket-book. What occasion was there, said Theophilus to himself, for shutting themselves up in a bed-room?—They had the dining-room at command. Florinda would have retired, when she knew that they had something particular to say: Or, they had the drawing-room to go to; or, they had the garden to walk in: It was a pleasant morning, and in the middle of August.

Soon

Soon after this, Xantippe appeared to be pregnant; and, at the usual distance, a midwife was wrote to, to hold herself in readiness to attend.—It happened that the midwife had two or three ladies, her usual customers, who coincided nearly with the time named. She wrote to Xantippe, telling her this; and begged that she would be as particular as possible with her. Xantippe wrote her, in return, that she reckoned from such a time, naming the day marked in Theophilus's pocket-book. The midwife attended accordingly; but Xantippe went eight or ten days beyond her reckoning, and was delivered of a weakly female child. Cleobulus was a man of a small stature, fair, with thin pale hair; a longish chin; round, lively blue eyes; very small, dirty teeth; somewhat deformed, his length, under the waist, being deficient, in proportion to his body: He had been ricketty in his childhood; was bandy-legged, long-heeled, splay-footed, and had a peculiar deformity in his toes. Xantippe's daughter carried, distinctly, every one of these marks. This was soon remarked, and often hinted at by Bellona, in her churlish moods.—Thus, Theophilus not only knew that the child was not his; but he had, what many men are ignorant of, the additional knowledge, almost to a certainty, who was the real father. Theophilus said not a word;—it was vain: Providence, and the law of the country, fixed the child upon him, at any rate: he resolved, therefore, to discharge the duty imposed upon him in this, as a faithful guardian or tutor. He directed, with attention, every thing for the welfare and education of the child, which the capricious mother was little qualified to do.—The child prospered accordingly; and all society did justice to the imagined father. But no sympathetic affection ever appeared on either side. Theophilus was dutiful; the child was obedient and respectful; and the world was deceived:—Xantippe, only, remarked the truth. Theophilus, naturally fond of children, kissed and caressed every other child, but never could do so to this one. As the child grew up, Xantippe's imprudence made the child

child take notice of this sometimes. She often incited her to affect familiarities with Theophilus, which nature never prompted her to ; and, though Theophilus shuddered upon these occasions, he had the prudence to constrain himself to receive them sometimes from the poor infant. As the child advanced, that want of natural sympathy became more and more perceptible, on both sides ; and Xantippe's own imprudence frustrated all her artifice.—She had a custom, when there was no company in the house, of retiring, after dinner, to a room, where she kept stores, and had a pallet-bed : There she used to take a hearty dram, and lay herself down to sleep. When she appeared again, before tea-time, with the fumes of an undigested dinner, and the spirits in her head, dreadful was the fate of any one in the family, who first encountered her fury. This storm often burst upon Theophilus,—an invalid, and unable to go abroad, amusing himself with his book, or giving instructions to the child.—These instructions, too, were sometimes disgusting to Xantippe : To hear moral precepts, stung her with self-reproach.—She would interrupt him, and strive to take off the impressions, by drawing quite opposite pictures of life before the child. If Theophilus checked her in this, she would fly out, and tell him, she would breed her child as she thought proper ; and would often tell him, he might give himself what airs he pleased with the child, and his *moral stuff*, but she was none of his : She had a better father ; and she might thank God for it.—He was sometimes provoked, in return, to tell her, That he knew more of that than she was aware of, perhaps. Xantippe's habit of taking the dram increased upon her, and her furiousness bore pace with it. Things had long been at this pass, when Theophilus's physicians ordered him abroad, for the preservation of his life.—Xantippe now got the modelling of her daughter, to her own taste ; and she did not fail to improve the opportunity. From mild, attentive, and modest ; she became vociferous, loquacious, and forward. When Theophilus returned, after an absence of

near

near two years, he found the mother and daughter living in a perpetual wrangle together; contradicting one another, in the rudest manner, upon every occasion; giving the lie, reciprocally, without ceremony; and often scolding, as Bellona and Xantippe had used to do formerly, like tinkers: however, they united cordially in every thing where their mutual interest was concerned.—The daughter, now instructed in all the arts of deceiving, by a fair outside,—the education which Theophilus had given her, qualified her also to pass for an accomplished young lady; and she took, with all who did not search beyond appearances, that is, with the most of people. Theophilus was shocked, to the highest degree, with this great and sudden change upon the girl. Tutored to dissimulation, she now attempted him. One day he was standing in the window, his daughter went up to him, took him by the hand, in a fawning manner, and leaned upon him, to speak to him.—As she never, in her life, had done such a thing to him before, or ever shown a symptom of that sort of affection which nature dictates, this instance of artifice struck him so forcibly, and so suddenly, that he shrunk, as if he had been stung by a viper.—From this, the mother and daughter saw and concluded, that he was not to be imposed upon.

Forgiveness to the injur'd doth belong :
But they ne'er pardon who are in the wrong.

From that moment, they began to form schemes for his destruction, and to get possession of his fortune, by that means. Xantippe had a profligate son, who, by idleness and debauchery, had reduced himself to want: they called in his aid. He, being capable of any crime, and ready to grasp at any thing wherein he could see the most distant advantage to himself, they cordially united.

Theophilus, from the bad state of his health, his fondness for study, and his being sent to other countries for change of climate, had long, in a great measure,

sure, sequestered himself from society, and had worn much out of acquaintance with many of his former intimates. The confederates began, by whispering among their acquaintance, that he was capricious, whimsical, ill-natured, hypochondriac, void of all principles religious or moral, and given to horrid vices. With those who did not know him, all this, coming from such authority, went easily down; and even some who knew him formerly, were also induced to believe it possible that he might have undergone all these changes. They laid, at same time, various secret plans for cutting him off, thereby to get possession of his fortune. This work went on, six or seven years; and Theophilus, languishing under sickness, absorbed in his studies, ignorant and unsuspecting, and therefore, unguarded to their malevolence, often furnished them with favourable opportunities, which, had he known, he might have avoided.

At last, after almost two years spent a second time in a foreign climate, to which his physicians had sent him, and from which he reaped no benefit; worn out, and despairing of life, he ordered his servants to carry him home, if possible, that he might die in his own country. He reached his own house with life; and, fearless and unsuspecting, put himself into the hands of his assassins. Very soon after, he was seized with one of those sort of fevers, which commonly terminate the life of such invalids as he. The mother and daughter sent notice of this to the villain who planned and regulated all their movements. He came, and attended close, watching opportunities. Reduced to the lowest extremity, Theophilus was breathing, and that was all: They teased him about business; they crossed him in every thing; they abused him in every shape they could devise. Theophilus's physicians attended regularly twice a-day, *viz.* morning and evening. One night, they gave it as their opinion, that the fever gave signs of abating, and that it was possible he might get the better of it. This gave an alarm to the assassins; they

consulted among themselves, and agreed, that there was no more time to be lost in trifling. Of all things on earth, Theophilus never could bear to hear scolding; and he had conditioned with them on this head; and they had promised to him, at the time when he went into his own house; otherways, he would then have gone into other lodgings. Next morning, as Melinda (Xantippe's sister) sat at Theophilus's bedside, the mother and daughter came in, and furiously assaulted him in this way, and Theophilus fainted away. At that instant, one of the physicians came in, and, with great difficulty, recovered him. Melinda was, by nature, a good creature; but her powers being greatly weakened by a palsy, which she had laboured under for some years, she was, from her attachment and connexion with Xantippe and her daughter, privy and assenting to the schemes which they had formed on Theophilus's fortune; but without perceiving, that depriving him of life also, behoved to be a necessary part of the plan; without which, whatever turn their machinations could give to his business otherways, they never could come to the possession of his fortune: and this cost her her life. In the afternoon of that same day, Theophilus was taken out of bed as usual, and carried into the dining-room, till his bed should be made, and his room aired a little, by opening the windows; he was placed in an easy chair by the fire, just breathing, and that was all. Xantippe, her daughter and Melinda, were all in the room with him. Seeing him in so reduced a state, Xantippe and her daughter took the opportunity to renew their assault. When they began, Theophilus had the presence of mind to ring the bell, which was at his hand, and which immediately brought in his servant. He was just able to order him to place himself at his elbow, and not to leave him upon any account, when he fell back into the chair. Melinda, whose eyes were now opened to the whole extent of their plan, flew to his assistance, and ordered her maid to run for one of the physicians, while she and the man-servant administered

salt-

salt-bottles, lavender drops, cold water, &c. &c. to him. Theophilus, at last, threw up what they had poured into him, and recovered for the second time. All this time, Xantippe and her daughter, remained mute and motionless, at the other end of the room, as they had done in the morning when the doctor had recovered him: but poor Melinda was so struck with horror at seeing them twice deliberately proceed to murder, that it threw her into what is called a fever of the spirits, of which she died. Theophilus's physicians came that night, at their usual hour, to visit him; they found him in the lowest state possible, but gave it as their opinion still, that his fever was abating, and flattered him with the prospect of recovery. Theophilus frankly replied, that whatever the state might be in regard to the fever, they never would see him again; for he would certainly be put to death, before they could have an opportunity: and related to them the operations of that day. They bid him not fear, and told him they would remove him with all speed. One of them went away; and the other went to Xantippe and her daughter, and read them such a lecture, as actually made them suspend their operations. Meantime, Theophilus's escape was made with all possible secrecy and expedition.

It is, if my memory serves me right, an axiom of that great master in the science of villany, Machiavel, that when very great crimes are once concerted, they are never to be executed by halves; and the justice of that axiom was proved in this case. It is certain, after the length that they had gone, they ought never to have allowed Theophilus to be rescued from them with life; since, upon that single circumstance, depended the whole success or disappointment of all the other parts of their scheme.

There was a question, at this time, about a transaction, in which Theophilus, from a particular delicacy towards his daughter, was willing to admit her a party; but the idiot in whose hands she was now become a mere tool, and in whose favour she had made a com-

plete sacrifice of every principle, as well as of the use of her reason, wisely advised her to refuse to accede to it, unless Theophilus would instantly divide his fortune with her during his lifetime. Upon which Theophilus proceeded to finish that transaction, secluding his daughter, and, at same time, cutting her out of an annuity of 200*l.* a year, in which he had formerly provided her. Upon seeing this, such was the consternation of the conspirators, that they would gladly have compounded for any part, however small, of the great spoils which they had at first projected, and so lately thought themselves secure of. But, how to bring any thing of this kind about now, was a difficult point. They found the integrity of Alexis (another son of Xantippe's) impregnable: He knew too much of the truth, and had had too much experience of them, and of Theophilus, to be deceived or misled by any thing which they could invent or say to him; and he talked loudly of justice, and of the duties incumbent towards a parent. They applied to another gentleman. What language they made use of to him, he thought fit to conceal; and thereby, voluntarily contributing to his own deception, he readily received the impressions which they wished to give him; and, suppressing all ideas of justice or duty, solicited Theophilus to grant his daughter only the paltry sum of 40*l.* a year, and to allow her to become a party in the transaction, which she had formerly refused. Theophilus refused to do the first, as being inconsistent with his duty; and gave him reasons, to his conviction. The second he readily granted; and the transaction was executed accordingly, and given to an agent, to be homologated according to law; who, to favour the conspirators, secreted it, waiting for further contingencies. Meantime, Theophilus continued in such a languishing state, that his physicians, despairing of him, gave over prescribing to him, and advised immediate change of air, as the last and only resource. Upon this, the conspirators recovered their spirits; and, judging his life once more to be within their reach,—to confine him

where

where he was, his daughter took up the transaction from the agent, who had concealed it for that purpose, took her name from it, and thereby cancelled that deed. Nevertheless, Heaven preserved her father's life. He ordered the transaction to be renewed, secluding his daughter;—and lived to see that business settled.

How unfathomable, my friend, are the ways of Providence to us!—It is plain, that, of all the people concerned, whether as principals or accessories in this mysterious scene of wickedness, Melinda was the least guilty: She was only privy and accessory to the robbery; the murder she had not so much as conceived; and when afterwards she saw it, she showed herself disposed to oppose it; and yet she was the only one who fell an immediate sacrifice; whilst all the others who took an active hand in the murder, have gone on ever since, and are daily going on, repeating the same, or similar crimes. Is it, that the least guilty receive their smaller punishment in this world, and sometimes instantly, while the atrociously criminal are left abandoned, to fill up the measure of their guilt, and reserved for proportional future punishment?—

It must be confessed, that this gentleman's misfortunes were singular and great: But we see also, that they proceeded all from one error in his judgment, *viz.* a mistaken notion of human integrity, in every instance. Had he been but half a rogue and a fool, he would not have met with the half of these misfortunes. The simple man believed solemn engagements, promises, oaths, to be things binding with mankind; and that dissimulation, hypocrisy, or breach of trust, were crimes of such an atrocious nature, that it would have been even criminal in himself, so much as to suspect any person to be capable of them; and, upon this false principle, he placed unlimited confidence every where, where he placed a trust: till experience, attended with the most ruinous consequences to himself, taught him the futility of the moral system, when applied to this life; which, e-
very

very rogue and fool could have told him, belongs to another only.

The creed, it seems, has excited curiosity.—I am often asked for it.—It was a *jeu d'esprit, pro re nata* ; and by no means calculated for the meridian of this country. Yet, as I am sensible, that refusing it may be construed against me by my very industrious good friends, who would not fail to say, that it was something which could not bear the light, here it is. I despise all criticism, which originates from malice, or from littleness. Those who know me best, know also, that I do not seriously entertain a sentiment which I wish to conceal, or need to blush for ; and the candid part of the world will easily distinguish betwixt a thing which was only calculated to create a little mirth in a particular society of cheerful and sensible people, from a man's serious principles. The worst of it is, that it will be relished by no body, as the taste is here now-a-days. In the days of our grandmothers, perhaps it was otherways. *Tempora mutantur*. We must take the world as it is. It is vain to look for it as it should be. The demure gentlemen will call out, *impious* !—The ladies, too, will exclaim, *ridiculous* !—Sentiment in our choice !—What ! and to give up variety ?—Has not the man who is present always the most merit ?—And to lay down our courage too.—*Petits maitres*—*professed rakes*—our very darlings.—There is heroism in braving danger.—I am no casuist ;—I dispute no body's judgment in taste, especially against ladies :—*Trahit sua quemque voluptas*. I have already declared, that this creed was never intended for our meridian. Far be it from me to attempt to damp the courage of our British heroines. Besides, I have experienced the vanity of that, almost at the expence of my life, in two instances, where I thought it my duty.

A S Y M.

A SYMBOL FOR THE LADIES.

[*Madame MAINTENON is supposed to speak.*]

“ **E**VERY human creature has sensibility, with or without delicacy.

“ Sensibility, then, is essential to human nature, and inseparable from it.

“ Yet, to indulge that sensibility without distinction, is brutal ; and such indulgence, we see, never escapes the severest censure of society. This also falls with greatest weight upon our sex : because, with us, delicacy is more characteristic ; and therefore, the deviation less excusable.

“ We are, however, a mixed sort of creature, partaking of two natures ; the one gives us sensibility, and the other sentiment. To lose sight, then, of either of these, in our pursuits after happiness in this life, is to mistake the nature of our state, and to subject ourselves to perpetual chagrin, on the one hand, or disappointment on the other. Our true felicity consists in an harmonious gratification of both.

“ To obey the impulses of sensibility indiscriminately with any object, and upon every occasion, debases us into brutes ; yields no satisfaction, in the retrospect, to ourselves ; and renders us contemptible in the eyes of others.

“ Yet, to resist these impulses at all times, is impossible, as being inconsistent with our nature ;—to pretend to it, ridiculous and dishonest ;—or to force it, by violent restraint, dangerous to health, and therefore criminal.

“ What then ? shall we say—Are these impulses to be listened to, and gratified, under certain regulations ?—Consult the experience of the world.—Ask the heart of every man and woman in it.

“ The

“ The business of sentiment is, to regulate, not to
 “ destroy, the impulses of nature.

“ The heart, without an attachment, feels a disagree-
 “ able void, and cannot be easy.—Self-love revolts,
 “ in such a situation.—An agreeable attachment spreads
 “ a secret charm over the heart, gratifies our self-love,
 “ and smooths the paths of life.

“ The movements of the heart are involuntary, and
 “ unavoidable. We meet, in society, with people who
 “ attract our esteem: That esteem leads us to unite with
 “ them.

“ But, as sentiment must regulate all these move-
 “ ments, we are not to run into an attachment, till we
 “ have well examined characters. Pause,—ponder,—
 “ sift,—and, fixing, fix.—In making such a scrutiny,
 “ too, we will often find an antidote, which has every
 “ advantage over a remedy.

“ We are to avoid all male coquets, petit-maitres,
 “ and professed rakes:—These are ever incapable of
 “ sentiment, prodigal of fame, and unworthy of con-
 “ fidence.

“ We are equally to be on our guard against coquet-
 “ ry in ourselves: For, assuredly, a coquet will never
 “ gain the esteem, or hold the affections, of a man of
 “ sense.

“ Above all, we are to arm ourselves against a suspi-
 “ cious temper; for, with such, we cannot expect one
 “ moment of security. Diffidence will, at every instant,
 “ shock us, and embitter all our enjoyments. This is
 “ also the surest index of a bad heart. Jealousy is the
 “ blackest leprosy of the human soul; as a generous
 “ confidence is its brightest ornament.

“ Whenever we find ourselves in such a situation, that
 “ an attachment becomes necessary, for our health, or
 “ for our happiness, we are to make it our study to
 “ attract the attentions of a man of sense: But, in our
 “ advances, we must take care to lose no opportunity to
 “ convince him of our discretion, at same time that we
 “ discover our tenderness: For such men are often diffi-
 “ cult:

“cult: The reason is, they exact delicacy, as well as tenderness, from our sex; and there is but this one way to gain them—which, however, will never fail.—And here, again, we must beware of prudery; for those men, ever punctilious in the points of honour, are disgusted by artifice: They demand, that we should yield with confidence, and without reserve; but, in return, they are rigidly honourable.—With them we need fear no *faux pas*: They will be watchful to prevent it in us. The object of their attachment being ever dearer to them than the attachment itself, makes them at all times careful to suspend the impulses of it, whenever prudence requires.

“For the rest—All is summed up in this general rule:—

“Whatever we do that is offensive to society, is injurious to ourselves; and, when any other person is, by our imprudence, exposed to the same injury, it then becomes a high breach of the moral law.—On the other hand, whatever we do that is no offence to society, and brings no injury to ourselves, or to any other person, can be no breach of the moral law.

“We are, then, constantly and carefully to make these distinctions; and our happiness, as well as our duty, consists in the strict observance of them;—remembering always, that prudence only, can conduct us to, and secure us in, the lasting possession of social felicity.

“Such ought to be the sentiments of every woman.”

This trifle took its rise from the following incident,—dining one day at the Countess of ———’s, where there was a brilliant company of the young and gay of both sexes, and all married people.—It must be observed,

that dinner is the social hour with these people. They sit down alternately. Every lady has her gentleman next her, for doing all the little politenesses at table.—Conversation is much, often general, lively, and interesting; and, amongst an amorous and sentimental people, the topic is not seldom gallantry. No sooner were we set down, than this subject was introduced by some of the gay people at the bottom of the table; and it was immediately received, as the signal for a display of sentiment. The point was agitated in a philosophical manner. Every thing was said, every idea was conveyed, which can be imagined; and all in a language which could not shock the most delicate ear. In this, the ladies particularly excelled. I had listened with great attention, but without taking any share in the conversation; when the Countess, who had taken notice of this, and upon whose right hand I sat, (betwixt her and La Marquise de V——,) turning to me, “Monsieur de “——,” said she, “you have not spoke one word “all the while.” “Madam,” replied I, “I have been so “delightfully entertained with what I have heard, that “I would not have interrupted one word of what has “been said, by any thing which I could offer, for the “world.” “Come, come,” said she, “you must not “expect to get off so: It is not fair that you should “sit mute, and hear us debate all our nonsense. Con- “fidence for confidence, Monsieur: We must have “your opinion also.”—Madam,” replied I, “I am “little entitled to talk on this, the most delicate and in- “teresting of all subjects.—Married very young, and “sequestered in the country, I have passed my life al- “together out of the line. Yet, though I have not “been in the way of practice, I cannot deny that I “have sometimes speculated a little upon the subject, as “a man cannot avoid thinking.

“I have often considered the two sexes as two great “commonwealths, dividing all the interests of this globe “betwixt them, each contending strenuously for supe- “riority; and though obliged, at all times, for mutual
“ reasons,

" reasons, to keep terms with one another, yet always
 " upon the watch to take advantage, and to acquire an
 " ascendancy, if possible. The men, I perceive, have,
 " in general, by main force, usurped the legislative au-
 " thority, and imposed, or endeavoured to impose, une-
 " qual restrictions upon the opposite sex. But, if I mis-
 " take not, by artifice, the sex find ways and means to
 " elude the force of this tyranny, and amply to pay them
 " home for their usurpation. So far, I believe, upon
 " the main point, the balance is kept pretty equal, be-
 " twixt these two great powers.—But, what, I think, is
 " much to be regretted, that, amongst all the fabricators
 " of creeds, who have deluged Europe, particularly
 " during the last two centuries, not one has had philan-
 " thropy enough to give us a symbol for the regulation
 " of an intercourse, upon which the happiness of social
 " life so absolutely depends;—such a symbol as should
 " be fully understood by both sexes, and by which the
 " whole etiquette of gallantry should be regulated, with-
 " out a possibility of mistake. Such a symbol, I appre-
 " hend, would prevent, in a great measure, all the
 " chagrins, disappointments and convulsions, which tear
 " society to pieces.—I often hear the gentlemen com-
 " plain, that, as things stand at present, whim and ca-
 " price have such a prevalency, that it is difficult for
 " them to know how to take their ground. The same
 " address which ensures success with one, when applied
 " to another, often brings the most mortifying rebuff.
 " For want of such a general rule, the humours of the
 " ladies are as various as their features or complexions;
 " and the whole affair of gallantry is subjected to so
 " much blunder and diffidence, as destroys the harmony
 " of social life, which it ought to ensure."—" Upon
 " my word, Monsieur de ———," said she, " your ob-
 " servation is very just: You shall furnish us with a
 " symbol, to put an end to all this confusion."—" Ma-
 " dam," replied I, " I am by no means equal to it:—
 " That would have been a task worthy of a Madam
 " Maintenon; or, rather, give me leave to say, of your
 " ladyship;

“ ladyship ; who I think the only person living capable
 “ of it.” Just at this instant, the company began to get
 up. The card-tables were set in the drawing-room : I
 presented my hand to my partner, and we followed the
 company.—It now became the Countess’s province to
 arrange the parties for the different tables.—An import-
 ant task,—as being a test of her discernment, in find-
 ing out, while we sat at table, who and who would
 like to be placed together.—A thing which she
 could do with half an eye, in the tenth part of the time,
 even though she had never seen the company before ;
 and, in fact, there were several new ones amongst us,
 that day. I was placed with my good patroness, Ma-
 dame de V——, Madame la Marquise de V——,
 (who was properly my charge, as I had had the honour
 to introduce her that day, and, for the first time, to our
 society), and the Chevalier de B——, at a whist table.
 We played a couple of rubbers. Seldom the same par-
 ty plays more at one time. They get up, go about,
 and look on, or sit down to chat, or go to the garden to
 walk, &c. and give place to others. After some time
 passed in this way with my partner, finding the sun de-
 clining, I found also that it was time for an invalid like
 me, to retire. As I slipped away, I threw my eyes to the
 top of the room, where the Countess sat watching her
 company, for the purpose of gratifying all their wishes,
 and, with an inclination of my head, silently wished her
 good night. Upon this, she made me a signal, that she
 had something to say to me. I walked up to her.
 “ Well,” said she, “ don’t forget the creed.” “ Alas !
 “ Madam,” said I, “ it is altogether above my powers.”
 “ Nay, don’t say so,” said she ; “ I insist upon it.”
 Finding her thus in earnest, “ Madam,” said I, “ how-
 “ ever unequal to the task, your Ladyship’s command
 “ is sufficient to make me attempt that, or any thing :”
 and I walked off. When I got home, I began to con-
 sider the scrape that I was brought into : but reflecting,
 at same time, that the French, in general, have a pre-
 judice, that the British are a people void of sentiment,

who

who make love as brutes*, without distinction, and only as appetite dictates, I thought myself now called upon to vindicate the honour of my country. I knew, also, pretty well, the style of the society which I was engaged in; and I had read a philosophical tract, written by the Countess herself, though she does not acknowledge it, in which she sticks close to the laws of nature, and upon which she founds her beautiful system, after the manner of Epicurus; but infinitely better supported.

Thus spurred and assisted, I took up my pen, and threw a few articles together. I was, at that time, so ill, that I was generally exhausted, and forced to go to bed by seven or eight at night, and often sooner. I read over my creed, thought it might do, and went to bed. Next morning, I got up, turned it into French, dressed, and carried it to the Countess. When I was announced, she was at her toilet: I was immediately admitted; and, after the usual compliments, "Well," said she,—"the creed."—"Here it is, Madam," said I, presenting it. She sat opposite to her dressing-glass; I stood at her back, opposite to the glass also, by which I had

* In this, as in every thing else, education makes all the difference. In Britain, a young gentleman resorts to the stewards for his education in gallantry:—in France, some discreet lady of his mother's acquaintance, or some such connexion, charges herself with the task of instructing him in this sentimental science. Amongst the French, it is certain infamy for a gentleman to frequent the stewards; if he does this, he will soon be secluded from all polite society; they will look upon him as a beast, or a Briton.—Every country has its modes and prejudices. In France, the ladies can have no share of gallantry till after marriage:—in Britain, it is expected, that they are then to give it over. Perhaps, the reason for the one and the other, is this—In France, the ladies are married either very young, or not all: at fourteen, fifteen, or sixteen, they are brought out of the convents, on purpose to be married, the contract being settled before:—in Britain, it is otherwise. Almost every lady in France, is married a virgin:—in Britain they are always virgins. . . . In either country, the ladies are liberally indulged; and when they are prudent themselves, they have no cause to complain.

I had a full view of her face in the glass. Her two maids were dressing her hair. She read it, without altering a muscle in her countenance. She read it a second time—Meantime, her maids had finished: I presented my hand; we walked into the library; and all this without speaking a word. She took up her pen, wrote a page, and presented it to me. I began to read it, trembling; when, lo! I perceived it was a complimentary criticism on the creed. * * * * *

* * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * * *
 * * * * *

* * * * * We went to breakfast; and, after that, to our usual visitation of the Aviary, where, that day, she made such a display of sentiment and of erudition, in the course of a long forenoon, as I hardly had a conception of before. I often forgot that I was a terrestrial being, and fancied myself in paradise, listening to an angel, deputed to instruct me in all the works of creation.

This same trifle, however, contributed not a little to establish me in the general esteem of a most valuable society, in which I met with most uncommon marks of hospitality and friendship, of which I shall ever retain the warmest resentment.

A day or two after this, when we were all met together, to the number of sixteen or eighteen ladies and gentlemen, merry, as usual, and commenting upon the creed, the whole company, with one consent, turning to a studious sort of gentleman amongst us, whom they called their philosopher, asked his opinion on the topic in agitation. He readily complied, as near as I can recollect, in the following words:—"If (said he) we investigate, with accurate attention, the laws of nature, which are the laws of God, we will easily perceive, that the whole system is one continued succession of propagation, decay, and extinction.—All is vegetation on our globe.—Of these vegetables, some are fixed, others are moveable.

moveable. Of the first class, are trees, flowers, &c. Of the moveable class, are men, horses, and all that we call animals: they are, nevertheless, equally vegetables.—Simple and uniform, the great Author of all, perfect in judgment, chooses always the best; and, as there cannot be two best, the process is individually the same in both classes. It is likewise a law of his, that there shall be an immense profusion and consequent waste of prolific matter of every species. Was it permissible in us to conjecture at his reasons for things, it may be, that this is necessary, for the preservation of each species, considering the accidents to which they are exposed from the elements, from storms, from distempers, and the like. Observe that elm tree before the window, loaded with myriads of seeds, like the wings of a butterfly, each of which includes a small knob. That knob is a germ, which, when placed in a proper *nidus*, (in moist earth, for example) is capable of producing a tree equal to the parent plant. Yet, tossed with the wind, trampled under foot, macerated in the pond, &c. &c. how few, of all these many thousands, shall ever come to perfection?—On the other hand, were they all to come to perfection, they would over-run the earth; and whole genuses of other plants would be starved, destroyed, and lost by that means. Do you ask, To what purpose all this profusion? The answer is obvious: It is to secure the propagation of every species, in spite of every accident. Such is the wise provision made by the great Author of nature, for the constant preservation of all his creatures. Since, then, each plant contains this extraordinary store of prolific matter, it is likewise necessary, and therefore ordained, that it shall periodically throw off that redundancy, which, if retained, so to speak, in the loins of the parent, would occasion a plethora; would sophisticate; would produce an acrimony in its juices, destroy its health, bring on distempers, and death. Such is the process in this class of vegetables.—In the other class, the same laws equally prevail. Almost every liquor that we know, contains thousands of germs, which

which we call *animalculæ*: These are invisible to the eye; but, by the help of a microscope, we see them distinctly. What numbers of *animalculæ* are contained in a single spoonful of vinegar!—Take a spoonful of liquor, containing a number of these germs; place it (as the germ of the elm) in a proper *nidus*; one, two, three, perhaps ten or twenty of these invisible germs will take root, will expand, will, in the course of a few weeks, or months, grow to the size of a sixpenny brick.—Transfer it afterwards to another element, (from water to air, for example), continue to tend and nourish it, it will, in time, grow as large as a man, or an elephant. You will observe, that, of the number of germs contained in the liquor, only one or a few take root; all the rest perish. Carry on the whole analogy, (concluded he) and I leave the inference to the decision of this learned society, and especially to the ladies.”—He received a general plaudit from the company; and the two ladies who sat next him, turned and kissed him; in which they were encored by their husbands.—Thus, those happy and social people have the talent, in the midst of their merriment, to give a turn to the most trivial subjects, which tends to improve their rational powers, and support the dignity of the human character. Would to Heaven, our convivial assemblies, our tea-table gossips, would reflect, lay aside their idle tittle-tattle, and learn to imitate so laudable an example!

I must give you one little anecdote more.—I meant to bestow all the benefit which may arise from the sale of this publication, to the Orphan Hospital, paying all the expence out of my own pocket: And I commissioned a gentleman to inform the managers of the interests of this charitable foundation, of my intention, and leave it to them to choose what bookseller they would confide most in, to account to them for all the profits of the sale.

He,

He, unknowingly, applied to one of the people concerned in the affairs of the hospital, who, from particular connexions taking alarm, wished, if possible, to throw cold water upon the publication: but who, concealing this, cordially enough told, that he should communicate the proposal to the managers, and give him an answer:—And soon after, he sent him the following card, in the name of the managers.

“ Mr. S— M—f’s compliments to Mr. ———.
 “ On further consideration of Mr. ———’s proposal, he is pretty confident, the managers of the Orphan Hospital would decline any concern in the sale of the book, especially if it contained any reflections upon private characters or transactions; as it is the business of the managers to make as many friends, but to avoid every measure that might create enemies to the institution under their care. At same time, Mr. ——— will be so good as assure Mr. ———, that the managers are grateful for the favours they have received from him; and would be happy to oblige him in any other way.”

Surely I was asking no favour of the managers!—Upon receiving this strange mixture of a card, my first idea was, that it was not my business to force my charity upon any particular institution; and I thought of bestowing it another way.—Upon recollection, however, I considered, that it would be cruel to deprive this useful foundation of a benefit, to gratify the caprice or prejudice of any one man, or set of men; for I had been told, that their supplies are so small, that they are not able to maintain 100 orphans at any time; whereas, were their funds equal to it, it is not to be doubted, that they might find 10,000 such objects.—This would

be 10,000 subjects gained to the King, and 10,000 useful members preserved to the public.—I sent for a bookseller, and engaged him to sell the book for the Hospital.

Is it thus, my friend, that almost every man is ready to sacrifice truth, justice, charity, or any principle, to serve the private interest of himself, or his friend, or even to screen a villain? * * * * *

* * * * *

* * * * *

How wilfully do men err in their pursuits!

A dozen of years ago, we could reckon forty-nine different systems, to account for the vicissitudes which this globe has undergone; and one gentleman in France, and another in Ireland, have each of them added one to the number since; which was submitted to my examination when in manuscript; and, I doubt not there are others within that period, which I have not met with.

Newton's theory of gravitation and attraction has prevailed much; and it carries in itself a defect, which will infallibly overturn it.

What endless systems have we, to account for the phenomena of the animal œconomy?—Every Will wif the wisp, that rises twinkling in the dark, gives us a new direction.—Long pretty much agreed about a nervous fluid, which actually can account for every phenomenon that occurs in that line,—the new phenomenon of electricity has set us agog; and now all is to be explained into this;—and a learned French physician has actually wrote an elaborate treatise with this view.

What serious accounts from historians, what learned discussions from philosophers, to overturn the system of Moses, upon the discovery of a nation of Patagonian giants, which never existed; and upon whole nations of white dwarfs which have been discovered in the heart of

of the torrid zone, in Asia, in Africa, and in America?— I have seen one of these people, and examined him often, and at leisure.—He carried distinctly the stamp of his nation in every thing but colour; and that owing to a peculiar vice in his constitution.—In fact, not one of these people ever was produced, but from parents of a different complexion, or ever lived to the age of thirty; and rarely one of them is capable of procreation. If, sometimes, this happens, it is where nature has not been totally vitiated; and the offspring takes after its ancestors, black, tawny, or copper-coloured.—The parent, the single diseased branch, when it drops, leaves not a memorial behind.—Nature, constant and uniform, when attended to, easily accounts for all.—The difference of latitude and climate, is the sole cause of the difference of colour in nations which are perfect in construction, and capable of propagation:—So that, when you see a man, black, tawny, or copper-coloured, according to the degree of shade in his complexion, you may tell, with certainty, the degree of latitude and climate which produced him.

Examine the various systems of religion. — — — — —
But these are truly the works of the devil. — — — — —
The scene is too big with horror:—Let us therefore draw a veil here.

Is such, my friend, the business of man?—a creature whose existence is momentary, and upon probation?— Are such the vain disquisitions in which he is to employ this important moment? It is as if a man, on the day in which he is to be tried for his life, should pass the whole morning, like the Roman Emperor, in catching flies, when he should have been preparing and digesting his defences against the hour of trial.—Believe me, my friend, our true business is to preserve our integrity, and to support the dignity and purity of the human character as rational and moral agents, in all that we say or do. This, alone, must procure our dismissal from the bar.

After all, suppose such problems as those could be justly solved, I ask, *Cui bono?*—Would such discoveries be of eminent benefit to society? would they mend the morals of mankind? feed the poor? protect the innocent from violence, oppression and injustice? Would they effectually establish virtues, or destroy vices of any kind?—It is not so much as pretended that such is the aim.

On the other hand, in consulting the experience of life, problems occur, which are entirely within our reach; and the discussion of which, under authority, could not fail to produce many salutary effects to the community: Such as,—*Whether, when a man commences attorney at law, he does not, ipso facto, cease to be a man of strict honesty and integrity?—Whether, when a man commences politician, he does not, ipso facto, cease to be a man of strict honour and probity?*—I know you will answer, That these are long since fully understood, by the universal consent of mankind, to be solved in the affirmative. I reply, That, supposing it to be as you say, yet this solution can afford no relief to society, till the legislature enquire into the cause, and ordain a remedy. * * * * *

You know, my friend, that I have lived, hitherto, a sort of book-worm, seeking to give offence to no body; but always ready to do any little good offices in my power; taking small or no share in the ordinary pursuits of mankind which I could not approve of, and unsuspecting, and therefore unguarded to the designs of malevolence:—till, lo! I have found myself r—b—d, and almost m—d—r—d, as I slept. I have lost my estate, with 2000 l. of stock upon it;—I have lost my w—fe, my d—t—r, my house, my furniture.—I have escaped with
life,

life, and with life only, to enquire how all this has happened, and upon what principles it has proceeded: for I defy the universe to show a shadow of reason or justice for any part of it. And now that I am awake, and *in utrumque paratus*, perhaps some people may, at last, become sensible, that they have roused a sleeping lion, which it deeply concerned their prudence, as well as their interest, not to have meddled with. * * *

* * * * *

(57)

...and it is the only one which has been
...and upon which it has been found
...it is not possible to have a notion of it
...it is not possible to have a notion of it
...it is not possible to have a notion of it
...it is not possible to have a notion of it
...it is not possible to have a notion of it
...it is not possible to have a notion of it
...it is not possible to have a notion of it



2.

CONSIDERATIONS ON MAN,
IN HIS
NATURAL, AS WELL AS MORAL STATE.

BEING

A humble Attempt towards a plain, simple, and ORTHODOX explanation of the Nature and Manner of ANIMAL and VEGETABLE MOTION; or, A demonstrative account of the Nature and Manner of that sympathy, connection, and intercourse, which subsists between the SOUL and BODY in an ANIMAL, solving all the phænomena of the ANIMAL WORLD, of our moral and physical intelligence, &c. hitherto so much the subjects of dispute.

Once intended for the Press, in three Volumes.

By a COUNTRY GENTLEMAN.

The THIRD EDITION.

MAN! *Nature's agent and interpreter, distinguishes and determines in proportion to the degrees of knowledge which he has acquired by study or experience in Nature's laws:—nor can he know or do more.*

BACON.

First printed at EDINBURGH in the Year M,DCC,LXIV.

CONSIDERATIONS ON MAN

NATURAL AND MORAL STATE

By J. G. BURTON, Esq. of the Middle Temple, Barrister at Law.

LONDON: Printed by J. JOHNSON, in Pall-mall.



TO THE PRINTER.

S I R,

THIS Abstract was published some time ago by a bookfeller in Edinburgh, to whom, at the instance of a late worthy partner of his, the manuscript was delivered, on exprefs conditions, That he should show it to nobody; That he should conceal the author; and, That he should instantly put it to the press.

NEVERTHELESS, many weeks after it ought to have been published, I received a letter from him, declining the publication; because, he said, he had shown it to two physicians who did not approve of it; one of whom he named, and thereby gave me an opportunity soon to disprove this part of his allegation. The other he positively refused to inform me of; and when I put the question to him, denied with asseverations, that it was a friend of his own, who had wrote some time before on the same subject. However, certain it is, that he (from what influence is best known to himself) still continued his eager endeavours to have it suppressed, till forced to the contrary, by the gentleman above-mentioned, who first procured the manuscript to be put into his hand; and then he published it so *mal à propos* and incorrect; as was, in effect, equal to, if not worse than the suppressing of it, whilst, at the same time, the author is named every where.

Now, Sir, though I meant not to take upon myself the character of an author, yet as there is nothing in my opinions, however *nouvelle*, which I am ashamed to avow; as I borrowed nothing from any man which I have set forth as my own; as my humble endeavours to

throw light on a subject hitherto not well understood*, and leading to dangerous errors when misapprehended, had for their object no private view of derogating from the merit of any author, or any person whatever, and were only divulged at the particular entreaty of those whose regard for the public welfare is too well known to be questioned; my claim to the candour of the public, and especially of every physician, is here freely submitted. I therefore desire you will publish this corrected copy at my expence, on the best paper, and in the best type; and sell it at such a price as will barely defray the expence of publication, after reserving one hundred copies for my use.

As to the Abstract itself, I am told it has been objected, that it is too short.—I confess I do not understand how it is possible for an abstract to be too short, if intelligible; which, I persuade myself, this is to every person conversant in the subject. Sure I am, it cost me no small pains to make it short enough, agreeable to the regulations of the Royal Society, so as, at the same time, to exhibit the full scope of the system, which is the thing to be studied in an abstract. I have failed, indeed, if the plan is not conspicuous to every thinking person, the axioms, at least so many as are necessary, narrated, and the experiments pointed out upon which these axioms are established.

I am, &c.

To

* Witness the doctrine publicly taught just now in the schools, That the soul is equally diffused over all the body, consequently must be divisible, &c. &c. that is, in other words, material.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

The Earl of MORTOUN, President,

AND THE OTHER MEMBERS OF

THE ROYAL SOCIETY,

THIS ABSTRACT

IS MOST HUMBLY DEDICATED,

BY

THEIR MUCH OBLIGED,

AND MOST OBEDIENT

HUMBLE SERVANT,

THE AUTHOR.

THE LANCET

THE LANCET

AND THE OTHER

THE LANCET

THE LANCET

THE LANCET

THE

THE LANCET

THE LANCET

THE LANCET

THE LANCET

A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

THE author (who was not educated with a view to practise any art or science) set out upon this enquiry about a dozen years ago, merely for the purpose of self-information ; persuaded, that our beneficent Creator never intended, that the solution of a question so interesting to mankind, and with the right understanding of which our happiness here and hereafter is so intimately connected, should be enveloped in impenetrable obscurity, and put entirely beyond the reach of our disquisitions. But after perusing the works of such of the learned as have touched upon this subject, he found it so darkened, perplexed, and confounded by metaphysical sophistry, in which they perpetually lost themselves, as almost totally discouraged him from meddling with it any more.

HOWEVER, recollecting himself, he began to think inward ; to consider attentively the nature and structure of the machine, the operations of the animating principle to which he and every man is conscious, and the actions and reactions of both principles between themselves. Here, the whole system soon opened to him, in a way perfectly agreeable to all the known works of nature, that is, with wonderful beauty and simplicity, and easily within the reach of our capacity, so far as can be necessary or useful to us, for the regulation of both in this world.

HAVING thus satisfied himself, (in the prosecution of which, however, he had scribbled a good deal of paper), he thought no more of it, and turned his thoughts another way ; till, of late, that some have endeavoured to persuade him, that the publication of his system might be useful ; “ *imo*, To subvert the principles of the Materialists and Idealists, in demonstrating the existence
“ of

“ of the two principles in the human nature, by delineating their characteristics, and distinguishing their operations. 2^{do}, To justify the ways of God to man, in proving, that the human soul issues from the hands of its Author, pure, that is, void of innate principles, or tendencies to vice; receiving, indeed, all her intelligence in a mechanical way, through a medium *, which is too often obscured by our own mismanagement, and under no small disadvantages, especially since the fall of *Adam*: but still endowed with a capacity of examining that intelligence; and, therefore, most justly accountable for her decisions on the right or wrong side, and for all her subsequent actions, in consequence of these determinations, preconceptions, prejudices, passions, or whatever we please to call them †.”

FROM this influence, the Author was prevailed upon to attempt the digesting of his papers within the proposed

* Might not this have been the nature of that corruption which was induced by the transgression of our first parents; the eating of the forbidden fruit, contaminating the fluids, and thereby rendering the communication betwixt the two principles in the human nature less regular, gave birth to irregular passions, and threw the mind, for the first time, out of that state of serenity and complacence, which, till then, she had only known. The punishment which followed this transgression, being their banishment from paradise, their exposure to the vicissitude of seasons, and all the subsequent inconveniencies which we daily feel, could not fail to increase the evil, and soon reduce the human race to that state of corruption in which we see them. I would ask any man, where he finds his warrant to believe, that ever spirits of any kind have the power of propagating spirits? much less have we to believe, that bodies have the power of propagating spirits; still less shall we dare to say, that, since Adam's transgression, God has created the souls of all his posterity vicious. But we shall see, in the investigation of the following system, that there is no occasion to have recourse either to absurdities on the one hand, or blasphemy on the other, for a solution of this question.

† *Yea, and why, even of yourselves, judge you not what is right?* are the words of our Saviour.

ed compass of three octavo volumes ; a task which he soon found too disagreeable and laborious to be executed upon an uncertainty, and the more so, as he had, some time since, turned his attention another way. He, therefore, now entered into a correspondence with a gentleman eminent in the republic of letters ; to whom, having communicated and explained this system, he was encouraged, by him, to present an abstract of it to the Royal Society, and for which he has since received the thanks of that society, in most obliging terms.

It is of little consequence to the Public, to know how the booksellers declined publishing at large, a work, which, to use their own words, “ being calculated only “ for the *learned few*, would not sell to such an extent “ as would defray the expence of the press ; and that “ they could not venture on an expensive publication of “ any thing, in the present age, but such as is adapted “ to the taste of what they call the *mobmany*.” Suffice it, that an intelligible view of it is here exhibited, within a very small compass, but which is sufficient to answer every purpose proposed from its utility.

of course of these observations, which is
then found too disagreeable and laborious to be
of upon an occasion, and the more so, as he
some time since, turned his attention to the
theory, now received and is satisfied with
gentle, but in the region of
laine, ornamented and simple, and
encouraged by him, as I hope, to
Royal Society, and for which he
of the society, and for which he
It is a great pleasure to me to
how the I believe that the
which is the most
for the same reason, and for the same
as would be the case of the
the, and not without an explanation
and that, in the same way, the
to the end of what has been said
is that the machine is not
a very small compass, and which is
every part of the machine.

A

S H O R T V I E W, &c.

ARGUMENT to the *first* VOLUME,
entitled, *Reflections on Man in his moral state.*

SINCE it is certain, that the distinguishing characteristic of each individual person depends upon, and is only to be drawn from, a knowledge of the passions which predominate in that person; it must be of the highest importance to us, in our choice of society in general, and especially of our friendships in particular, to be able to determine exactly between the passions, and to know their influence on the mind.

That mankind is highly picturesque and diversified almost without end, Theophrastus, La Bruyere, Belle Garde, D'Argens, the dramatic writers, &c. &c. daily paint; and, upon the same plan, every man who lives and thinks, may easily, if he pleases, contribute his volume, like a medley piece, exhibiting the variegated scene, as it rises in endless succession.

The author proposes something more; to explore the latent causes which give rise to this diversification; to point out the hidden springs, which often, unperceived, and in the early stages of life, give birth to those passions, which afterwards grow up, and stamp the characteristic through the remainder of it:—a lesson worthy

of the attention of all parents and others, who are charged with the superintendence of infancy and puberty; since half an hour, nay, much less, of an improper book or companion, is sufficient to throw in something, which shall seize upon and give bent to the tender mind, hitherto a *carte blanche**, and which shall determine its characteristic from that moment forward.

Illustrates this by a variety of examples, &c. &c. &c.

In

* There can be no innate principles admitted in humanity, unless the incarnation of our Saviour be taken as the only one. Perfection in goodness being essential with the Deity, he, perhaps, even though in an incarnate state, might be exempted from a possibility of ever making a choice but on the right side: but a being who is to be tried, rewarded or punished according to its actions, must, consistent with justice, be allowed free agency.

It is *à propos*, however, to remark here, the example of him who could not fail to be the best physician, in the care which he took to secure the regular communication of the two principles, by a constant observance of sobriety and temperance in the use of the *non-naturals*; as was foretold of him by the prophet, in these words: "Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son: butter and honey shall he eat, *that he may know* to refuse the evil, and "choose the good." That is, He shall live temperately, *thereby* to preserve a regular communication between the two principles in his incarnate state.

See axioms from the third volume of this work.

An essence in matter is any thing resolved into its first principles, or divested of heterogeneous parts, beyond which it is capable of no farther analyzation, but remains a simple substance of its own peculiar kind. In like manner, the soul is an essence or principle, pure, simple, having no heterogeneous mixture in the composition, *i. e.* no innate *nisus* to actions of this or the other kind; but a *carte blanche*, capable of being influenced, misled, or properly conducted in all its enquiries and decisions, according to the information which it receives from our external senses, and the pains which it bestows in examining these informations, before it proceeds to action in consequence of them. Thus we daily see, both in ourselves and others, even self-love, self-interest, self-preservation, &c. give way to the example of our companions, and the influence of our passions.—So just is this axiom of an eminent writer, "Our actions proceed from our passions, our passions from our ideas, and our ideas from the objects which strike and surround us."

Marquis d'Argens.

T.

In his *second* and *third* Volumes, which may be
titled *Ars Medica illustrata*,

HE considers man in his natural state, as a being composed of two distinct heterogeneous principles, spirit and matter; which, nevertheless, communicate so easily, and seem to be so much blended into one, that their actions and re-actions on one another are so little distinguishable, as to have puzzled many able philosophers; some contending, that all is matter; others, * that all is spirit. Examines and confutes both opinions, and proves the existence of both principles. Having done this, he enters upon a scrutiny into the nature of that connection, sympathy, and intercourse which subsists between the animating principle, and the material organization, and the means by which that intercourse is kept up; and, by a series of argumentation and experiments, establishes the following axioms:

That man is composed of two distinct principles, spirit
and matter, or soul and body.

That these communicate reciprocally together.

3 G 2

That

To the same purpose, the English Spectator.—“The soul, considered in itself, abstractly from the passions, is of a remiss and sedentary nature,” &c.

* Delusive operations of the mind, modifications of ideas; but no reality, no entity of that substance which we call matter. If we should put the leg of an Idealist in the boots, and ask him what it is which is then affected with pain? he must be forced to acknowledge, that it is either his soul, or his body. If he says, the soul, (for he denies the existence of matter), then cut the nerves which go to the leg, as they pass through the thigh, and deprive him of the painful sensation, but still leave him fixed in the boot, and ask him what now detains him there? He must be forced again to acknowledge, that he is held by something which is no part of his soul; a substance endowed with none of the properties of spirit; a substance now no longer a part of himself (*qua* spirit), but a substance, which, nevertheless, shall continue to be a troublesome burden to him through the remainder of his life, and of which he shall not be able to divest himself by any modification of ideas,

That they cannot communicate by immediate contact in their extreme degrees of distinction.

That there must be an intermediate agent between them, capable of communicating with both.

What that agent is, &c. &c. &c.

—Animadverts how necessary it is for a physician to have a thorough knowledge of the animal œconomy, and particularly of the nature and structure of the machine. That it is as absurd to put a disordered animal into the hands of a physician who is ignorant of these, or who has mistaken notions of them, as it would be to put a disordered watch into the hands of a house-carpenter, instead of a watchmaker. * Shews how the mechanism of the body is already well known and described by anatomists; and all its motions pretty well accounted for on mechanic principles. How the muscles and bones act in exact proportion, as so many levers on their fulcra. How the whole machine is a complete hydraulic engine, of wonderful contrivance and delicacy. How nourishment or subsistence is conveyed to all its parts, by means of a circulating fluid, which is distributed in numberless canals of different figures and dimensions, &c. &c. &c.

* * * Solves the problem of the heart's motion.

Having hitherto considered the animal machine merely as a vegetable, and accounted for its nutrition and support, by means of a circulating fluid, in common with other vegetables; he comes next to consider it as an animal, (that is), as united with an animating principle, and by that means endowed with the powers of sensation, locomotion, perception, &c. That this animating principle being immaterial, cannot be directly blended with a material organization. That this union, sympathy and connection, must be effected by some intermediate agent.

Proves,

* According to Monro, Winslow, and other anatomical writers,

Proves, by very convincing experiments, that the nerves are the material organs employed in this. Denies, however, that the nerves themselves are the immediate agents on the animating principle, as gross matter cannot immediately act upon an immaterial existence. Argues a little from analogy, that as it is found, that, between the highest class of the vegetable, and the lowest of the animal world, there is scarcely any perceptible difference, as the same analogy takes place between the vegetable and mineral kingdoms; and is indeed observable through all the known works of nature; may not the same gradation prevail between the purest refinements of the spirituous (ethereal or volatile, the author contends not about terms) parts of matter and mere immateriality? Why * may not these organs contain a substance (essence, or what you please) so very subtle and refined, as to be capable of communicating with that immaterial principle, which is so emphatically termed the *breath of life*? That as we find from chemical experience, that we can subtilize matter indefinitely; hence he argues from analogy, that it may be subtilized to a degree capable of communicating with immateriality; enters into a disquisition of the more than chemical analysis which is made of the blood, by the different glands which are distributed through the organization; some separating fluids which are bitter; others sweet; some gelatinous, viscid, dense, &c.; others pure, limpid, fuliginous, &c. &c. Considers that peculiar gland the brain, whose analysis is so delicate, that it cannot be traced; that by this gland are separated the spirituous parts from the blood,† (that name hitherto with a vague idea, *the animal spirits*); a preparation so highly refined, as to be capable of entering the infinitesimal *fibrillæ* of the nerves, and likewise of communicating with the animating

* A conjecture as old as the days of the Arabian physicians.

† This term is here used in compliance with custom; though, perhaps, it is difficult to show the propriety of calling this elastic fluid by the name of *spirits*.

animating principle in the *sensorium* placed in this gland, of which the nerves are processes.

Proceeds, upon this hypothesis, to account for all the phenomena of the animal world. For the languishing state in which we find ourselves, after an immoderate dissipation of those spirits, by fatigue, abstinence, contemplation, and the like. How, by a natural deficiency, through mal-construction of the organs, idiocy is produced. How by a sudden, violent, or extreme shock, stupor, paralysis, &c. result. How, when the blood is inflamed by mal-regimen, or spoiled by ill concoction, madness, vapours, and other affections of the mind, ensue, &c. &c.; and *è contra*, when the mind is disturbed by the passions, how the body sympathises with it, (Finally)

* * * Demonstrates this system.

He conceives the soul *, in contradistinction to matter, to be a principle, simple, immutable in its substance, immaterial,

* All that we can know of the soul is *à posteriori*, (for of its shape, size, substance, we know nothing); that it is active and intelligent; that when united to a material organization, (as in the animal composition), by its active capacity, it can, whenever it pleases, excite that organization to locomotion, the only motion in which it is concerned, (as shall be proved below); that by its intelligent faculty it apprehends, examines, distinguishes and determines, upon all the evidences submitted to its cognizance by the organs of sensation, to which the exertion of its intelligent faculties seems to be limited in its incarnate state, and by which, it is not to be doubted, that its natural powers are greatly cramped. Thus, I have known a gentleman read an elegant Latin poem (a hymn to the Trinity) in his sleep, which, when awake, he was no more capable of composing, than I am able to tell what is the shape, size, and substance of a spirit; and yet, when he awaked, he remembered the poem distinctly, and could repeat many lines of it. In fine, that it is the opposite of matter, endowed with powers which are not in matter; that, when united to matter, it can be separated from the whole or a part of the organization which it animates, leaving that part from which it is separated mere inert matter, whilst, at the same time, the soul remains entire as to its powers: "That it communicates with matter, not by immediate contact with the organs of sensation, or by pictures drawn
" upon

immaterial, indivisible, &c. placed in the *sensorium* by almighty God, for the wonderful purposes of animation, so long as our vegetable organs are capable of properly performing their functions of concocting, separating, and refining the agent of communication : through defect of which agent, gradually, sooner or later, as the organs decay, animation ceases, or (as we say) life terminates.

Concludes with an exhortation to all physicians, to pay the highest attention to the nervous system ; and (being no physician himself) adds an humble apology to the gentlemen of the faculty, and hopes that they will not regard him as an arrogant intruder into their province, or disregard this essay, because it comes from him ; but accept it, as it really is, no other than the suggestions of a benevolent heart, for the good of mankind, furnishing a few hints (to be prosecuted by a superior genius amongst them) towards the investigation of a system which has been sometimes guessed at ; but in which mankind have ever strayed, and are daily straying, lost and bewildered in the labyrinthic maze.

A compendious View of the Proof in the Subject of the *third* Volume.

IN the *exordium*, the author regrets, with humble deference to the gentlemen of the faculty, that they do not bend their attention more towards the investigation

“ upon the retina, &c. thence to be reflected upon the substance of
 “ the soul, which would be the same with contact ; but, by
 “ direct perception of objects, by the help of a medium contrived
 “ by the Author of nature for that purpose ; the existence of which
 “ medium is as clearly demonstrable *à posteriori*, as that of soul or
 “ body ; and which solves all the phenomena of our moral and
 “ physical intelligence, the nature and manner of human corruption, &c.” For this see below.

tion of a phænomenon, which daily and hourly crosses them in practice ; a phænomenon on which a very material part of what yet remains undiscovered in their extensive and useful science depends ; a phænomenon, too, which seems to lead now, more than ever, in the disorders of the animal world, &c. &c.

Goes on to examine, with charity, the erroneous doctrine of Epicurus, and his followers amongst the ancients ; some of our own countrymen, and many, perhaps now alive in Europe amongst the moderns, in favour of materialism ; Dr. Berkeley, and others, who go as much astray on the other side, &c. &c.

Introduces his own system, with pointing out the rocks on which his predecessors in this enquiry have split ; as (partly) by not keeping up the proper ideas of distinction between the two principles, but confounding the animal and vegetable operations together ; and (partly) their searching after a proof *à priori* ; which is impossible, (1^{mo}), Because we can obtain no knowledge of spirit, but such as we acquire *à posteriori*, from its known operations*. (2^{do}), That the brain is not to be anatomized ; consequently, arguments cannot be had from it *à priori*. Thus, both principles being beyond our reach in this method of enquiry, we must rest satisfied with such proof as can be obtained *à posteriori* : and here we shall find evidence sufficient for every useful purpose, &c. &c. &c.

Proceeds (besides the authority of sacred scripture) to prove the existence of both principles, by such arguments as this, (arguing against himself, in the way of metaphysical sophistry, which is capable of rendering any thing dubious) : † Here, (says he), take hold of my hand : Now you have it ; tell me, what is it? You answer,

* Unless its given attributes are admitted as *data* ; but sceptics must have demonstration.

† Some of the axioms and experiments mentioned here, are such as are most obvious, and purposely narrated in a gross way, so as to be intelligible to any person almost, though ever so little acquainted with the subject.

answer, A substance. What sort of a substance? define it. You answer, A substance capable of locomotion, sensation, &c. but these qualities pertain not to matter; therefore your hand is a spirit. No; (say I) my hand is a substance extended, divisible, hard, soft, &c. and these are the true properties of matter; therefore, my hand is mere matter. But (return you) locomotion, sensation, &c. are qualities not inherent in matter: Your hand is endowed with these qualities; and therefore your hand is not matter, &c. &c. To put an end to this metaphysical jargon, I answer, Extension, divisibility, &c. are the true properties of my hand, and of matter; locomotion, sensation, &c. are the properties of an immaterial existence, and only communicated to my hand by an animating principle in me, which is immaterial. And I prove it thus: By cutting through the nerves which run between the *sensorium* and the hand, and that instant the hand becomes deprived of the powers of locomotion, sensation, &c. but still retains all the properties of matter; and exists a mere vegetable ever after, &c. &c. &c.

That the soul of an idiot is, in itself, as perfect, as capable of clear perception and sound judgment, as that of Locke or Newton was; but, from some mal-construction, or other disorder in the organization which it animates, it is obfuscated and impeded from exerting these faculties. *E. g.* Let it be supposed, that I see just now with my eyes; you will easily grant me, then, that my soul is capable of the perception of vision. Suppose again, that I came to lose my sight, through some defect in my eyes, which are the organs of vision; yet (I say) the soul remains entire, and equally capable of that perception as ever, though now, (from that defect in my organization) not exerting that faculty. To prove this, let a surgeon rectify the disorder in the organ, (suppose by couching) and immediately I shall again perceive the light, &c. The same reasoning made good in regard to the other faculties of man.

For the actions and re-actions of the two principles on one another, he appeals to every individual to consider attentively what passes within himself! where he cannot but observe, that, in whatever manner the bodily organs are affected, the soul immediately takes part; *et è contra*.

Thus, when the eyes are struck with the figure of an object of exact symmetry and proportion, the soul immediately conceives some degree of pleasure, approbation, and prejudice in favour of that object.

When the ears are struck with the cries of a person in pain or in want, the soul is instantly moved with pity, compassion, &c.

On the other hand, when the soul is agitated by the passions, the body sympathizes with it. Thus, if (even when the body is asleep*, and all its members at rest) the imagination represents to a man the idea of his friend, his tongue immediately begins to talk to him, his arms to caress and embrace him, and all the organs of his body receive an augmentation of heat and motion, which is communicated to them by this conception of the soul. When the † mind is oppressed with grief and anguish, the body languishes; sleep often departs from the eyes; we become dead to all brisk and lively exercises; a sort of lethargy creeps on, and benumbs all

* As we very improperly say; for, in fact, rest from motion, and death, are synonymous in the organization, whose motion admits of no interruption. Thus, the animating principle does repose, which is necessary for recruiting the animal spirits wasted by its action. Whilst organized matter cannot cease to move without going into dissolution; the pulses beat, the chylopoetic organs, &c. labour incessantly, whether we are asleep or awake: nor is the animating principle concerned in those operations; as shall be proved in the sequel.

† All the actions of the soul waste or dissipate the animal spirits, in proportion to the force of its application; such are locomotion, intense thinking, study, dwelling too much on a predominant passion, &c. while, on the other hand, the motion of the organization actually restores those spirits, when the animating principle reposes, or, which is the same thing, desists from those actions.

all the members; the chylopoetic organs especially, (which are most plentifully furnished with nerves) are rendered incapable of performing their functions with proper vigour; whence the blood being supplied with chyle not properly assimilated, becomes corrupt, and produces diseases, which often baffle all the skill of Galen and Hippocrates to remedy, &c. &c.

But to give the axioms and experiments upon which they are established.

That two such principles as spirit and matter do exist.

That these two principles do communicate reciprocally.

That they do not communicate in their extreme degrees of distinction.

That there is an intermediate agent, a substance of such a nature as is capable of communicating easily with both.

* That this substance is prepared and separated by the vegetable or mechanical operations of our organs on the common aliments for nutrition.

† That this substance is a fluid, contained in the nerves; (e.g.) compression or discision of any nerve.

3 H 2

That

* However this axiom may seem to clash with metaphysical definitions, or sophistical argumentations on these definitions, the author regards not much: he stands by facts, and leaves it to every man to determine for himself, in favour of the one or the other. Whether this fluid, thus extracted from the blood (as the blood is from the aliment) be matter or spirit, let metaphysicians dispute, if they please; it is sufficient for every useful purpose, that its origin, its use, and existence be proved; and this is all he contends for.

† It is equally impossible to account for animal and vegetable motion, by vibration of the nerves, as it is absurd to imagine, that a cord can vibrate distinctly, which is convolved, contorted, and enveloped from end to end in muscular flesh; or that an impelling force applied to the smallest detached fibre, in the extremity of a bundle of nerves, can communicate that impulse, by a blow with the club-end of the bunch, upon the immaterial principle in the *sensorium*. Observe what happens in making experiments on the nerves. The motion of a muscle does not cease immediately upon compressing

That vegetable life, or motion, depends not upon the animating principle. *E.g.* Let any man try, whether he can, by an effort of volition, suspend the heart's motion (the principal spring in vegetable life †) whether he can interrupt (the *primum mobile* of all in vegetable life) the operation of the § chylopoetic organs on the aliment, after it is taken in.

That vegetable life or motion can be rectified, disordered, weakened, strengthened, &c. &c. without the animating principle willing any thing in the matter of those changes *; *e.g.* in drunkenness, gluttony, poisons, drugs, &c. their immediate effects and after consequences.

That the animating principle directs in nothing of vegetable life, but is only concerned in what relates to ratiocination, perception, volition, locomotion, sensation, &c. so long as vegetable life performs its office of preparing, separating, and refining the agent of communication: by means of which agent only the animating principle

sing the nerve; but gradually, (a very little after) in proportion as the subtile fluid evaporates from that part of the nerve which lies between the place of compression and the extremity: but the compression being afterwards taken off, and a fresh supply of fluid allowed to pass to the extremity of the nerve, the natural motion of the muscle is again renewed.

‡ See below the case of Colonel *Townshend*, and others, to be no act of volition, but a mere mechanic trick.

§ Yet, when the mind is disturbed by the passions, this operation is often involuntarily affected: equally a proof of the sympathy and independence of the two principles.

* Yet the animating principle feels the effects of such changes by means of the agent of communication, which always partakes of them. Consider the state of an healthful animal asleep. Is it not the soul only which then repotes? do not all the vegetable operations go on? but there is no locomotion, sensation, perception, ratiocination; no comparison of ideas; in short, no exertion of any of the faculties of the soul. But if there is any disorder in the vegetable fluids; if they are tainted with acrimony, surcharged with repletion, &c. the communicating agent, being one of the vegetable fluids, and partaking in this disorder, stimulates and disturbs the repose of the animating principle; and the animal dreams, tosses, and awakes unrefreshed.

principle communicates animal motion to the vegetable organization.

That, when vegetable motion (which is the author of the communicating agent) ceases, the animating principle departs from the organization, where it can no longer exert its faculties.

That vegetable life or motion is independent of the animating principle, and subsists without it: *e. g.* any paralytic member, where, through defect of the organs for conveying the agent of communication, animation is secluded, but vegetation still goes on, and the member still exists as a vegetable.

That every thing relative to the organization is merely vegetable; that the *fœtus* exists at first only as a vegetable; that it is not till after all the organs are explicated, and put in vegetable motion, so as to prepare and separate the agent of communication, that the soul (that emblem of the Deity) is placed by almighty power in its seat of government*, (when the vegetable becomes likewise animal), where it reigns despotically till it pleases its author to recal it, to give an account to him of that administration with which he had entrusted it.

That the same agent is necessary for vegetable motion, as well as for communicating animation. *E. g.* Destroying any of the principal organs of its conveyance, will put a stop to vegetable motion; compression on the phrenic nerves stops the motion of the diaphragm; the same compression taken off, puts it in motion again.

Again,

* “ And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, “ and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and man became “ a living soul.” *Genesis*. Thus the organization was first formed, and then animated. See Malpighius, Lewenhoeck, &c. on the formation of the *fœtus*. Their experiments demonstrate this so plainly, that it is surprising they did not advert to the distinction betwixt the animal and the vegetable.

Again, * by hindering the influx of the nervous fluid to the organs of deglutition, vegetable life or motion languishes gradually, through want of nutrition, being deprived of aliment, which cannot now be taken in; and by this deprivation of materials from which to extract the agent of communication, this agent now wastes without supply, till it is altogether exhausted; the consequence of which is, that both animal and vegetable motion cease in the organization. By hindering the influx of the † animal spirits or nervous fluid to it, the heart's motion will cease. Accounts for the motion of this muscle from the mechanism of its parts, and the operation of its contained nervous fluids in consequence of that mechanism, according to the known laws of mechanics.

That the same efficient is the true cause of athletic vigour, &c. &c. &c.

In fine, it is demonstrable from plain and very obvious experiments, that the two principles are of very different natures; that they have each peculiar functions in which they act independent of one another; that their distinct operations are abundantly perceptible to enable us to delineate the characteristic of each, as far as may be useful in this life, viz. 1mo, " That the organization is a mere vegetable mechanic engine, " whole

* I knew a gentleman who died in this way. By overstraining his throat in singing, he brought on a paralyfis on the parts, and, in sound health of mind and body, languished gradually for eight or ten days, till at last motion ceased altogether. So in famine.

† By compression on the *plexus* of the *nervi sympathetici medii* or *par vagum*, where it is formed above the lungs, or as it passes on the fore-side of the *bronchia*. I have known instances of people, who distending the lungs in a preternatural manner, by taking in and retaining for a time a great quantity of air, would stop the pulsation of the heart and arteries; the lungs at that time compressing this nerve; and the nervous fluid which is conveyed to this muscle (the heart) by the small branch of the *nervi sympathetici maximi* or *intercostals*, not being sufficient to keep up the pulsation alone. So in drowning.

See the case of Col. *Townshend* by Dr. *Cheyne*, Phil. Trans.

“ whose life or motion (as in other vegetables) depends
 “ entirely upon its circulating fluids, one of the princi-
 “ pal springs of which engine is so contrived as to per-
 “ petuate that motion by plain mechanic power*, so
 “ long as the little canals of that spring are filled with
 “ an elastic fluid. 2do, That the regular or irregular
 “ communication of this engine with the active ratioci-
 “ nating

* As it is incontestible that the nerves are the instruments of communication betwixt the two principles, so it is also plain, that the duties of this function can only be discharged by them, in one of two ways; viz. either by vibration, supposing them to be elastic cords; or by undulation, supposing them to contain an elastic fluid. What has been said above, and what follows here, may serve to point out which of these hypotheses is most agreeable to the analogy of nature, the laws of motion, and the phænomena which occur in making experiments on those organs.

To say that the motion of the heart depends upon vibration of the nerves, (besides the absurdities pointed out in a former note), is plainly against the known laws of motion. Not to enter here upon the description of this muscle, its complex structure, the forcible motion of its systole and diastole, &c. &c. suffice it to say, that the blood is thrown with a jerk out of the heart into the arteries, and by them conveyed to all the parts of the body, from whence it returns again to the heart by the veins; but not with the same velocity. May it not be asked, What gave the first vibration? and if the second depends upon the influx of the blood as it returns from the extremities, it will be less forcible, for obvious reasons. Every mechanic knows, that it is the nature of vibration to cease, unless its cause is repeated always with the same degree of *impetus*, without which the vibrating power diminishes gradually, and soon terminates in rest; thus, then, at each vibration there is a certain waste of the vibrating power communicated by the first *nisus*, which must be supplied somehow, otherwise motion must cease. May it not be asked again, From whence comes this necessary supply? I confess, I cannot answer. But if the nerves are filled with an elastic fluid, the phænomenon becomes simple. The smallest agitation will give the first motion to the fluids; hence the *punctum saliens* in the first radiculæ of the vegetable embryo (see the experiments of Malpighius and Lewenhoeck); thus the heart will begin to beat. Each motion of this muscle, then, causes a considerable waste of the subtle elastic fluid contained in its nerves; but which is instantly supplied again by the organs which are perpetually preparing it for that purpose, so long as the blood is supplied with new chyle, that is, so long as we eat or drink. — The conclusion is obvious.

"nating principle, depends upon the temperature of
" those fluids, and the disposition of their containing
" organs; and those (in well-formed organizations)
" upon the proper use of non-naturals entirely."

Q. E. D.

THE following Letter is most humbly and most earnestly presented to the notice of the ROYAL SOCIETY, in whose eyes particularly is most anxious to be justified,

Their most obedient,

And much obliged

Humble Servant,

The AUTHOR of CONSIDERATIONS
on MAN.

TO F. NEWBERRY Bookseller, No. 20. Corner
of Ludgate-street, London *.

S I R,

I WROTE you on the 26th of July, to know the name of your Author; I gave you ten days; you have vouchsafed me no answer; you will please take notice that I write this on the 6th of August, and, without further ceremony, I proceed to convince you how much I am a man of my word. I told you I had read a book printed for you, in the beginning of the year 1773, entitled, "A Philosophical Essay on Man, being an attempt to investigate the principles and laws of the reciprocal influence of the soul and body:" In which your Author has, with unparalleled effrontery, arrogated to himself (what he calls) the invention of a system published nine years ago. After enumerating a very few, and those not the best of those writers who

3 I

have

* This letter was inserted in the news-papers and magazines in August 1773; and also printed copies of it sent to the Royal Society; which silenced the catch-penny book.

have formerly treated on the same subject, amongst whom, by the by, he takes care not at all to mention that one from whom he has borrowed his whole system,

He says, page 18th of his preface, " There are others who have engaged in the same pursuit; but, except the small number already mentioned, none are worthy of notice, &c. &c." down to the 21st, where he pompously sounds his own panegyric in these words: " But, when the greatest geniuses have been diffident of succeeding in handling this subject; when so many great men have failed, and others have not dared to engage, shall I hazard the undertaking, presume to penetrate this palpable obscurity, and fathom this profound abyss? What talents, what study does such a task require! What a fund of observation! What address, to reconcile so many seemingly inconsistent appearances, discover their connection, and, amidst such a complication of facts, discern that light which explains those principles, which unveil and account for them! In a word, by the help of a glimmering taper, to discover such a multiplicity of undiscovered truths, how bold the enterprise! how difficult the execution! &c."

The rest of his preface and introduction are copied almost literally from his original.

Bold and penetrating man, indeed, who has, with such immense labour, discovered in the year 1773, what has been in print since the year 1764!

Had this author so much as comprehended the system which he pretends to have invented, so little ambitious am I of literary fame, that I should certainly have let him slip with his plagiarism.

Please to know, Sir, that in the course of a correspondence with Dr. Birch, late Secretary to the Royal Society, during the years 1761, 1762, and 1763, I communicated this system to him, under secrecy, confiding my name also to him; and, in the year 1764, at his request, I published a comprehensive abstract of it, dedicated to the Royal Society, under the title of " Considerations

“ derations on Man, in his natural as well as moral
“ State ; being a humble attempt towards a plain, sim-
“ ple, and orthodox explanation of the nature and
“ manner of animal and vegetable motion : * Or a de-
“ monstrative account of the nature and manner of that
“ sympathy, connection and intercourse, which subsists
“ betwixt the soul and body in an animal, solving all
“ the phænomena of the animal world of our moral and
“ physical intelligence, &c. hitherto so much the subject
“ of dispute.”

For this I was honoured with the following letter of
thanks from the Royal Society.

“ S I R,

London, June 1. 1765.

“ I AM to acknowledge the favour of your letter of
“ the 4th of April, accompanying some copies of your
“ *Considerations on Man*, which I presented to the Royal
“ Society upon Thursday May 23d, who have now di-
“ rected me to return you their thanks on that account,
“ Lord Morton, our President, desires me to add his
“ particular acknowledgments, and to express the very
“ great satisfaction which he received, in reading the
“ abstract of your excellent work. I must beg leave to
“ join my own thanks to you, and to assure, that I am,
“ with great truth and regard,

“ S I R,

“ Your most obedient,

“ And most humble Servant,

“ (Signed) THO. BIRCH.”

* Printed by A. Donaldson at Edinburgh, *anno* 1764, and sold
at his shops in Edinburgh and at London, No. 48. St. Paul's
Church-yard.

I had explained this system to Dr. Birch, and established, amongst others, the following axioms, which make the ground-work of your Author's deformed superstructure.

I. That two such principles as spirit and matter do both exist.

II. That in the animal world they are united together, having much reciprocal influence from their communication.

III. That, nevertheless, each has peculiar functions, in which they act separately and independently.

IV. That in no case do they directly communicate with one another, there being an intermediate agent between them, a substance of such a nature as communicates readily with both.

V. That this substance is a fluid of great elasticity contained in the nerves.

VI. That this substance is prepared and separated by the vegetable or mechanical operations of the organization, in which the soul has no concern, and extracted from the common aliments of nutrition.

VII. That upon this fluid, notwithstanding, depend both animal and vegetable motion: In fine, that the organization is a mere hydraulic engine, whose life or motion, as in all vegetables, depends entirely upon its circulating fluids, one of the principal springs (the heart) of which engine is so contrived as to perpetuate that motion, independent of the soul, by mere mechanic power, so long as the little canals of that spring are supplied with the elastic fluid.

VIII. That the regular or irregular communication of this engine with the active ratiocinating principle (the soul) whose influence directs intirely in locomotion, although

although mechanically performed, depends upon the temperature of these fluids, and the disposition of their containing organs, &c. &c. (See abstract sold by A. Donaldson, as above).

This much I have found indispensable for me to declare, lest these two works, being both anonymous, should be ascribed, by mistake, to one author.

Having, however, said so much of the plagiarism of this author, I must likewise do him the justice to declare, that he has borrowed no part of his declamation from me, neither did I set him the example of treating with contemptuous neglect almost all the best authors who treated on the subject before me, and to whom I was greatly indebted, particularly the moral philosophers.

One word more, and I have done: Could your author have prevailed upon himself to have paid half the attention to the moral agency of the soul, that he has done to the physical influence, to which it is subjected in its incarnate state; or rather, let me say, had he done justice to those papers from which he has borrowed his whole system, he would have showed, by examples there pointed out, (which are experiments in the case), the far superior influence which education has over the soul to this physical influence, which I likewise demonstrated to be experimentally just, though many of his deductions from these experiments are far from being so. The first of these is certainly the principal key to the diversity of the human character.

Let him select two animated organizations, the most similar that is possible in constitution: Let him train one in the paths of science, inspiring him with the principles of rectitude: Let him educate the other in a brothel; amongst banditti; or even commit him to chance, in the common way of education; he will see how differently they will turn out, and how effectually his favourite doctrine of mere materialism will be overturned in that contrast.

Can it be supposed, that the famed example in the ancient philosopher, as well as in numberless others in
all

all ages, has escaped the so much boasted penetration of this first, and only true investigator of Nature's laws in the animal department? Nay, did he not show himself so much disposed to suppress the evidence on this side, I would ask himself, Does he not know in life, many instances of moral influence gaining the ascendancy over organization every day? How deplorable were the state of man, and to what purpose endued with the attribute of reason, if this was not the case!



P O S T S C R I P T.

LETTER Mr. ——— to his D—t—r.

February 18. 1778.

YOUR confederate, E—w—d B——e, sent to me some days ago, demanding payment of your annuity, which became due some days before that.—Your annuity is, and always shall be paid, when mine is paid;—it cannot sooner. Since (as you know well) your machinations have reduced us both to annuities, the one must, of course, always depend upon the other.—What I give, I give freely; but cannot so easily submit to be r—b—d of any thing.—I desire, therefore, once more, that you will send me my mother's picture, and that of John Duke of Argyle, which you carried off when you pl—d—r—d me of every thing else, at a time when I lay confined to a sick-bed.—I desire also, that you will send me a receipt for my guitar and its case,—my harpsicord and its case, locks, keys, &c. and all my music-books for the one and the other of these instruments, acknowledging that they belong to me.—This, justice and honesty should have pointed out to you long ago; but if you find yourself disposed to dispute a matter so just and reasonable, I am ready to enter the lists.—You know I never had any value for money, or for trash.—But to maintain justice, in any case, I am always ready to stand forth, with that life which Heaven rescued, and every shilling which remains to me escaped from the b—d—y and rapacious hands of one who owes

every thing to me, as a friend and benefactor, as well as, in the eye of the law, the duty of a child towards a parent. For, though you and I have often had the authority of your m-t-r for it, that I am not your natural f-t-r; yet, I fear you will find at last, that that will not even extenuate p-r-c-de down to simple m-d-r in the case, since it was on the footing of a p-r-t that the attempts were made, and only upon the footing of a c-d, that the advantages proposed would have been reaped.

Neither, on the other hand, supposing your m-t-r's prevarication on the head, to have influenced you to believe, or to wish to pass yourself for my real d-t-r, will the one or the other alter the nature of truth.—I never had the *smallest* reason to entertain a doubt on that head, (notwithstanding your m-t-r's assertions, sometimes upon the one, sometimes upon the other side, which are equally to be rejected in the case) of which I could have convinced you at any time, and which, some time in your life, may be of importance for you to know, though no circumstance which I know of hitherto, has occurred to render it necessary for you to be told the particulars.

All that hitherto has been necessary to be attended to, was, that Providence and the law of this country imposed the relative duties of parent and child upon you and me; and I assiduously discharged that duty upon my side, as all society did me the justice to remark: And having done so, notwithstanding my knowledge of truths, which lay concealed from you and from the world, and though at same time, it was a fixed point with me, not to suffer the estate of my ancestors to fall into such a channel, yet it was also a fixed point with me, to provide for that child.—I thought myself at liberty to give her any thing else but my paternal estate; and I destined every thing else for her, till she forced me to do otherwise.—Let Heaven and earth, judge of my conduct, and of my principles.—In point of duty, I defy all impeachment.—In point of that sympathetic affection,

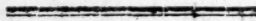
fection, indeed, which is so much insisted upon, as inseparable from nature, it is certain, that nothing like that ever had place betwixt us on either side.—For my share, I must acknowledge, that though I am naturally fond of all children, and could hardly ever see a child without taking it into my arms, and kissing and fondling it, the child I am talking of is the only exception; and many a fore heart her taking notice, and complaining of this in her infancy, cost me, when her m—t—r often incited her to do so, especially before company; and I constrained myself also, to save appearances; for *there* my heart recoiled at all times, I shuddered inwardly at the idea, almost as much as if it had been the monster of a m—t—r herself, who had thus placed a parent and a child in so shocking a state, and who for that reason was detestable to me.—Her consciousness made her at all times see this with open eyes.—I was silent, and you was ignorant; and, as I doubt not, you know, the same consciousness obliged her to be mute, upon a late occasion, when I asked an explanation from her, and laid circumstances before her, which, till then, she believed I was ignorant of.—And, good Heaven! what a proof did you exhibit on your side, when you engaged in the various projects for m—d—r—g me?

Our shocking history will be edifying to posterity.—Let them have it.—It is right that it should be so.—Perhaps Heaven infatuated you all in the end, for that purpose.—I had concealed things twenty-eight years, and would have done so to the last.—Heaven seems to have disapproved of my conduct.—Your wife and hopeful b—t—r conceived it to be for his interest, upon a late occasion, to propal his m—t—r's i—f—my, and he scrupled not to do it.—The same Providence which preserved me from his and your a—f—f—n—t—n, permitted him to do this.

. I have now told you more of the truth, than perhaps ever would have been necessary for me to shock you with, had you continued to live under my eye. I shall also discharge the last act of

duty, which my conscience tells me Heaven still requires at my hand, towards you, by pointing out your connexions to you, to prevent your falling perhaps into new errors, from ignorance.

P. S. I expected my annuity to be paid this day, but am informed, that by a little dirty trick of your confederate C—n—h—me, for a very paltry advantage to himself, there is likely to be a still further delay, which has obliged me to write you this.



Copy L E T T E R, Mr. ——— to his D—t—r.

February 28th, 1778.

I WROTE you ten days ago on the subject of your annuity. Since that, the v—n C—n—h—me has been constrained to pay my annuity, and in honest terms. I was then laid up in a severe fever, occasioned by a sudden cold. It is now abated; and I have taken this first moment to inform you, that your annuity waits whoever pleases to call at my house for it, with a proper discharge from you.

Your annuity shall always be paid when mine is paid. It cannot sooner; and never shall be later. Mine never was paid at Candlemas, nor for a considerable time after; and you know by what v—l—n—s manœuvre your term was antedated, to become a bone of future contention betwixt you and me, as if some people were of opinion, that they had not already made enough of that kind before: Those things I despise, as much as every good man must detest them. You are to do in them as you think proper.

Prompted by that love of justice and truth which alone directs me, without regard to any other person or thing,

thing, I wrote you also on some other heads.—I trust you will come to a proper resolution in respect to those things.—All else betwixt us are long since, by appeal, before the tribunal of Heaven.—*That* with me is sacred, and must, till that day, remain inviolate.

Be assured, we are at all times under the eye of a watchful Providence. He who sits at the helm of universal government, is not to be imposed upon by lying, dissimulation, or hypocrisy; is not to be misled by false whispers, or malicious insinuations. He sees the heart, and ultimately decides with unerring judgment. He has set our duty before us, and made it simple and easy to us, under the influence of two assistants, Reason and Conscience, with which he has provided us for that purpose. What he exacts of us, is a faithful discharge of our trust, in the regulation of our lives, physical and moral. The first of these, as I early taught you, being of incomparably smallest value, is never to be balanced in an equal scale, much less to be suffered to preponderate in a competition with the other. The trial is great, 'tis true, when that comes to be the case; but we are nevertheless not to hesitate: we are to do our duty, and leave the issue to Heaven. This was my rule, and the only one which I opposed to all the schemes which were projected against my l—e, during a succession of years. Appearances were, in all that time, against me, so far as human judgment could penetrate. Sequestered, distressed, absorbed in study, I dreamed of no danger, provided no guard; and, in the end, I saw no escape, when the conspirators found time and opportunity to their wish. Your confidence at last was great, indeed, when, with the d—g—r at my breast, you bravely accosted me thus:—*Die, now, or purchase life at the expense of your boasted integrity!*—I calmly resigned myself to the m—d—r—g stroke. Who then expected that I could survive it? Surely, not you, nor I, nor any of the three physicians who attended me on that occasion. I was pronounced past all human aid. But, mark the issue!—O Providence! let it for ever be recorded—by
Thee,

Thee, by Thy miraculous interposition alone, I am alive, happy in the retrospect, and confident in the future, praying that Thou wilt also spare the conspirators, or at least limit their punishment to this life only.

Adieu once more, and till we meet at that solemn day of trial and unprejudiced judgment, where conscience will be evidence, and the God of truth will discern.

Copy LETTER Mr. H—k—f—n to Mrs. S—te.

M A D A M,

March 1st, 1778.

IT is long since you have had the malicious pleasure to ruin my fortune and my family; and as Providence has been pleased to order it, nevertheless, without enriching your own much by it.—I have lost an estate which this day would have been worth 1000l. a year, (perhaps 1200l. at which your friend Captain H—f—n valued it), but for that unhappy transaction, by which it became in your power to overturn all the improvements and ruin it. But mark, Madam, the dispensation of a watchful Providence, and say what it is worth to you now, and since you got it.

You have also had so many opportunities, since you dissolved that connection, that I cannot but be surpris'd that you have not returned me that box which I gave you to keep for my adopted son. That box, Madam, an old family thing, is not worth the r—b—g me of.—It is of no intrinsic value to any body but me; and, if it is not returned, I shall certainly take order for recovering it.

—It is true, both you and she owe it to me that you are

are now in the land of the living : But that has long since been forgotten on one side ; and I have only the consolation to know, that, in return, you stretched every nerve to deprive me of l—e, and to r--n me and mine.—Heaven, no doubt, will bless you for it ; and there I leave it. This check Heaven has been pleased to apply against a habit in me, commendable, indeed, in itself, but which, I have at last been convinced, may be carried too far, and may be at same time so misplaced as to produce very bad consequences : I mean, that compassion towards every object in distress which presented themselves to me, and which I shall certainly profit by correcting with caution, for the future.

And now, Madam, give me leave calmly to ask you, Where is your profit in p---d---g me of the estate of my ancestors ? The improvements which I had made upon it, at the expence of 4000 l. are all destroyed ; and, consequently, it is sunk in value all that sum, since you have had it. By the change of times, the value of land is also sunk ; another loss of perhaps 2000 l. were it now to be sold ; and, if I am not misinformed, the man to whom you have entrusted the management of it knows nothing at all of that business. I hear, indeed, that he lives in great affluence, with a numerous family of his own upon it ; but it is also generally believed, that he makes small returns to you. You know best what truth is in this ; but, these facts admitted, it is pretty clear, that in r—b—g me, you have not enriched yourself a great deal. It is true, indeed, you have the blessing which Providence bestows on such works in expectation ; and that, I think, is like to be your chief advantage. You know that I could have let it at more than 600 l. a few months before you got it. The farmers are now living in the country who made the offers ; and, if I am well informed, you cannot now get 400 l. for it.—Few, I imagine, would choose to deal with the men concerned with it now, unless they are tempted with a prospect of very great advantages. If I can guess well into futurity, your agent, who knows the real value of it well,
will

will soon be master of it himself ; and he knows well how to make it worth 1000 l. a year, which he may do at a small expence, by only following the plan which I laid down for that, of which he will very soon have a copy, if he has not already the one which Mr. T—f—l—n secreted or destroyed. If he has any such view, however, it is plain, that it must now be his interest, as it was on a late occasion yours, to keep it down, in every shape, of which you set him the example. One thing is demonstrable, it would not have cost half the sum to have finished the improvement, and brought it to be worth 1000 l. a year, according to the obligations on your side, relying upon which I suffered myself to be t—k—d out of it, as you have already lost by destroying it. Time will show whether your future advantages will indemnify you.—This, you will find, is in the hand of Providence ; and I cannot think you dare to look for favour that way.

The last letter, Madam, which you wrote to me, was certainly not penned under a benign influence, and the effects of it were proportional, contributing greatly to one of the most horrid scenes that ever has been recorded in the history of mankind. That letter, you know, you sent open to S—l—d, after you knew I had left that country, with a design that it should be read by those to whom you sent it, before they forwarded it, also open, to me ; and it produced, in one sense, indeed, the effect proposed by it ; they readily adopted the plan of the projected m—d—r and r—b—y, not, however, to throw the spoils into your scale, but to transfer them to their own ; and it seems as if the hints which you gave them served them in such stead, in every subsequent step, as, by that means, to enable them to gain over every person in whom you confided, as well as those employed by me, to espouse their interest, in opposition to both. It does not, I think, appear ever once to have been a question amongst them, how to do justice betwixt Mr. S—te and me, but how to conduct matters into such a channel as to strip us both,

in

in favour of a third person.—You know the issue of that at last ; and therefore I leave it, to go to another point.

Chastity, you know, Madam, is universally considered as the true test of a female character. It is believed, that when a woman, from a depravity of heart, gives a general scope to the opposite vice, such a woman is capable of any other crime ; and I own I am one who thinks the conclusion just :—such a woman must be so habituated to lying, dissimulation and hypocrisy, in the course of her various prostitutions, that it can be no breach of charity to think, that such a woman has a conscience totally seared. Instances of this kind are too frequent in the female world, not to strike the most careless observer.—Add to the account, if you please, Madam, that I am not a young man, that I have seen much of this world, that I have long made it my chief business to cultivate an acquaintance with human nature ; that I speak from experience, that is, from attentive observation, and could, if necessary, cite a thousand living examples.—As the richest fruit, when once tainted, produces the quickest and greatest degree of putrefaction ; so, the finest spirits, when corrupted, run easily to the highest degrees of depravity.

Your letter to me, and some of Mr. S—te's to Mr. G—t and Mr. R—b—f—n, suggested such things, as furnished a handle for some people to insinuate, that a bad woman and her friend, had concerted together to impose upon a poor, simple, weak man (in this light they were pleased to exhibit your husband) and, in this light, things were entirely placed to the world, and to the judges ; and the whole torrent of this malice I was left alone to oppose, in such shape as I could. But what weight could any thing from me have carried against a suggestion so apt to be believed, as the world goes ? and, besides, this thing came not to my knowledge, till all was over ; and then I left it with Heaven, which knows the integrity of my heart. And

now, four years being elapsed, the world began, I believe, to be weary of talking of a story, which every body knew and believed ; when, lo ! you prudently sent your son to this part of the world, to refresh their memory. He, spending his whole time in pursuit of amusement between his country house and E—b—h, presents himself equally an object of ridicule and compassion, from this circumstance ; pointed at by every body who sees him, and the old story repeated. In the name of wonder, Madam, suffer me to ask, What advantage is now proposed from a step so extraordinary, and so superlatively foolish ? As to my own share, I am perfectly indifferent. Honesty betwixt man and man, is the true test of a man's character. Heaven, which knows my integrity, has put it easily in my power to satisfy the whole universe, as to my honesty in the transaction which I was unhappily engaged in with the greatest v—l—n, and the greatest m—dm—n that ever, I think, has been recorded to posterity. The world shall now judge, from the circumstances of that transaction, on which side simplicity and candour, and on which side c--n--g and v--l--ny appears most. I always offered to disprove every one of his allegations on this head, by letters under his hand, and by the testimony of all the gentlemen and ladies in this country, to whom he told the story himself, and by his own oath upon the facts ; and this I certainly would have done, had not the interest of the third party been so prevalent as to get my own lawyers to force me into the arbitration, when I was confined to bed in a fever, so much reduced, that no life was expected for me ; and, besides, the conspirators had me secure in their hands, and my doom was fixed in all events ; so that the question, at this period, was not at all about obtaining justice to Mr. S—te, or to me, but to conduct matters so as that the estate might revert to my d—t-r. The lawyers had declared, that no judicatory could break the entail, especially if any of the parties should die before the arbitration was signed ; for this reason, I was hurried into the arbitration,

arbitration, when they thought I had not another day to live; after which, I was to have been dispatched, in all events; for the meaning and intention of the arbitration was, that the arbiters might break the entail, which no judicatory could do, according to law; in which case, if they should break the entail, and, at same time, be so disposed as to do justice to my d—t-r, they would have given her back my estate with damages, for what Mr. S—te had done to it; or even if they should have been so disposed as to do the same injustice to her as was afterwards done to me, which, had not my escape been made, and my life been saved in a miraculous manner, I believe, would have been a matter of less dubiety, she would at least have entered into the immediate possession of all the arrears due to me, and all that I was worth, as well as her own annuity of 200l. a year. This was not the scheme you had in view in the arbitration; but it was, nevertheless, the scheme of every body else, I firmly believe.—So much for this story.

As to the other story, I leave it to yourself and Mr. S—te, who have been the authors of it, and who still choose, it seems, to keep it awake by reviving it. The same good Providence which preserved me from aff—ff—ns, projected and attempted, times without number, as well from your side, as from the side that was against you, has likewise been pleased to restore me to such a degree of health, that I am now going to set myself down, at last, in the country of my nativity, where I have every human probability, at present, that I may yet have some years to pass amongst my friends, and where I doubt not of living happy as ever in the esteem of those who know me best, and whom I esteem most, contemplating and adoring that Providence which plunged those into the pit which they dug for me,—that Providence, too, which so ordered it, that you confided the execution of your diabolical plans, at last, to a man* who had formerly attacked his own wife in the same style, in the face of the whole world, and before the

3 L 2

judicatories,

* A—x—d-r C—n—h—e w—t-r to the f-g—t.

judicatories, in which he was shamefully baffled and affronted, and who, doubtless, was fond of an opportunity to mark a bird of his own kidney, and who was, at the same time, inseparably attached to your acquaintance R— B—, to whom chiefly, I believe, you are indebted for all that I have now told you, and who would have got the pl—d—r—g of my d—t—r, had their scheme succeeded. His brother behaved like an honest man through the whole, refusing his countenance, and openly declaring his disapprobation.—What a curious intrigue they made out, betwixt an old man, at that time not able to stand upon his legs, and an old woman swelled like a hog'shead with the dropsy!—but it served their purpose, and went down with a world, ignorant, and rarely inquisitive about truth. Such you and they have made it; so you may also hold it amongst you; it never shall be a matter of further consequence than contempt, to your, &c.

P. S. I am told, that your prudent and hopeful son makes a public boast, that he wishes for an opportunity to show, not his gratitude, but his resentment to me; if so, he will soon be gratified, for I am now preparing to go over and pass a few months in that part of the country.—Don't let this alarm you too much, Madam: A generous dog never was known to worry an insignificant puppy, though, when it carries its insolence and folly too far, he may be provoked to chastise and p—s upon it. Alas! he has not the sense to reflect, that the two servants who waited on him in F—ce, are now living in the country where he is, and are able and ready to give the lie to all the falsehood or nonsense he can invent. Was the question seriously about producing evidences from F—ce, I have, in my custody, such evidence as would load him with shame, indeed; but I am not easily provoked to extremes, and that is a lucky thing for some people.—He was there, Madam, not as your son, but as my son, and carrying my name, which was then also his name. Let it be enquired, how I discharged

charged the duty of a parent. I allowed him, in F—ce, one guinea as another was done, for pocket money; his governor, however, as was his duty, had an eye into the way in which he spent his money; he was told, the purpose for which he got it, was to supply the needy, and support his own honour as a gentleman. He, it seems, wished to have money which his governor should not know of, and he sold his watch for the valuable sum of eight livres (seven shillings Sterling). I would have recovered the watch afterwards, but dropped it, upon finding, that it had been purchased by a pretty boy, a companion in the academy, who only bought it when he saw that it would go a worse way, and I could not find in my heart to affront the worthy boy for the sake of such a one as he. Let the fathers of the Popish college, where he was lodged after he was taken from his governor, be asked, what judgment they formed of him while he staid with them? These are men of penetration in matters of this kind. I can shew, in black and white, their verdict. Alas! Madam, what makes him in such hurry to have his own i—f—y exposed?—Father's son, indeed!—What a pity it is, that parents should have children, who do not know how to direct them!

